

Volume III

A Clean Place

"Touch not the unclean thing!" - 2 Corinthians 6:17



CHAPTER #15

The Church is “A Clean Place”

Section #1: Introducing The Church as “A Clean Place”

Section #2: The Assembly

Section #3: The Congregation

What is a Church & Who are its Attendees?

Does God command the holiness of Church ministries only, or does He command the holiness of the Church in its entirety: its ministries, congregations, and assemblies? Are the persons of those ministerial branches required to remain clean, or are all the persons of the Church (the ministerial branches, congregation, and assembly) required to remain clean? The answers to these questions are guided by a more specific ideology which can be introduced by these questions: Are the ministerial branches of a Church a God-gifted and God-empowered service to sinners or saints? In other words, are the local Church congregations and assemblies for saints or sinners? What is the goal and overarching purpose for which a Church exists? To what end do we come together for a local gathering? Is the Church's existence significant in that it is inviting to the presence of once-born men, or does it exist to be inviting to the Presence of God? Is there a certain criteria, code, or Law whereby New Testament assemblies become inviting or repelling to the presence of God? If so, what are the consequences if we are ignorant of this criteria, code, or Law, and so, unknowingly, repel the presence of God from the midst of the people who are gathered together in the Church?

Introducing The Church as “A Clean Place”

Biblical cleanness-- is it a doctrine worthy of our study? My reader, consider the commanding phrase: “touch not the unclean thing” (2 Cor. 6:17). What does it mean to “touch”? What are those “things” which are “unclean”? If there is an entire people, “God’s people”, who are commanded to “touch not the unclean thing” (2 Cor. 6:17), then the gathering in which they come together into must be **a clean place**. My reader...what is **a clean place**?

A clean place, biblically speaking, has and always will be: *The Temple, Tabernacle, House, or Sanctuary of God, The Kingdom of God, Mount Zion, The City of God (Jerusalem)*, and those persons gathered therein, *the assembly or congregation of God*. These places and persons, biblical speaking, have always been under the holy obligation to remain clean according to the specifications of their Covenant agreement, whether the Old or New Covenant. To be unclean in one of these places - in a touch-able radius to others – was an urgent situation of grave potential. My reader, it was a frightening emergency which could turn deadly! Uncleaness *threatened* the very existence of these nine places and persons! Uncleaness unlawfully permitted to abide among them was a flirtation with the fires of annihilation!

Thus, the Israelites became a community of people with one all-pervasive conviction. God taught the Israelites a way of living and thinking by code of Law, and this, giving them a continual awareness of all things clean and unclean, made them be constant to put a **difference** between the two. They were taught great and terrible things in proportion to how well they were conscious to this rule, and as a consequence, the love or hatred of God would be poured out upon them. The Lord of Heaven, Israel’s true KING, dwelt among these *nine places* under strict rules. These rules, given with exhaustive instruction (Lev. 10:10), were enforced with warnings of the utmost magnitude. By forewarning punishments reaching capital severity, it is revealed that cleanness, purity, and holiness are of capital concern to God. God was emotionally affectionate to holiness, purity, and cleanness, and emotionally repulsed by anything besides. Defilement of

a Person's most valuable and precious object betrays and insults His most devoted affections, and this, in turn, results in infuriated consequences which are second to none. At any negligence or disobedience of the body of commandments which pertain to cleanness (Lev. 20:25), God's potential responses included: Priestly disqualification (Ezek. 22:26), physical death (Lev. 7:21, Num. 19:20), and spiritual damnation (Ps. 51:10, 119:1, Matt. 15:18-20)!

"And that ye may put **difference** between holy and unholy, and between unclean and clean" – Lev. 10:10

"Ye shall therefore put **difference** between clean beasts and unclean, and between unclean fowls and clean: and ye shall not make your souls abominable by beast, or by fowl, or by any manner of living thing that creepeth on the ground, which I have **separated** from you as unclean." – Lev. 20:25

"Her Priests have violated my Law, and have profaned mine holy things: they have put no **difference** between the holy and profane, neither have they shewed **difference** between the unclean and the clean, and have hid their eyes from my sabbaths, and I am profaned among them." – Ezek. 22:26

"Moreover the soul that shall **touch any unclean thing**, as the uncleanness of man, or any unclean beast, or any abominable unclean thing, and eat of the flesh of the sacrifice of peace offerings, which pertain unto the LORD, even **that soul shall be cut off from his people.**" – Lev. 7:21

"But the man that shall be unclean, and shall not purify himself, **that soul shall be cut off from among the congregation**, because he hath **defiled the Sanctuary** of the LORD: the water of separation hath not been sprinkled upon him; he is unclean." – Num. 19:20

Israel learned to heed God's commands which were bound with the threat, "**that soul shall be cut off**". They learned that unclean things were **AMBOMINABLE** to God, which means: hateful, unbearable, disgusting, and infuriating! They learned that when they "**TOUCH**" these things, alas! Their very own "souls" can become "abominable" to God! You see, God abhors that which is unclean about a "thing", but if the "thing" is touched, the God-forsaken qualities of the "thing" can become our identity before God! – Thus we become "unclean" like the "unclean thing"! Unforgettable experiences and sudden calamities would fall upon Israel when, God said, "**I am profaned**". This is as if God is saying, "I am personally offended" ...and sometimes the offence was of deadly-infuriation.

My reader, do you know the difference between that which is *clean* and *unclean*? Before reading this book you may have excused yourself, thinking, "This Old Testament dilemma is passed away." You may admit that it was relevant for the inhabitants and persons of those nine places as they existed in the Old Testament, but will you be brought to the sober acknowledgment that, furthermore, "**touch not the unclean thing**" is a New Testament command! This commandment is delivered to us as a citation and reference to God's relationship which He had in the nine places and persons of the Old Testament, formerly listed, that they were shadowing relationships which are identifiable in NT realities, and, thus, they are our **EXAMPLES**. All of them are directly identified by the inspired writers as a defining lens, without which we cannot understand what a New Testament Church is - namely, that it is "**a clean place**". This means that, by Divine interpretation, they understood "the New Testament Church" to be like these Old Testament shadows, specifically speaking, in how they were **CLEAN**. Through understanding these biblical and historical arenas, *The Land of Israel & Judah, The Kingdom of God, Mount Zion, The City of Jerusalem, The Temple, Tabernacle, House, or Sanctuary of God*, and those persons gathered therein, *the assembly or congregation of God*, they understood what a New Testament Church is. In other words, they understand the New Testament Church through understanding the Old Testament Church. My reader, necessity is laid upon us! In these terms **WE** must understand what a Church is! Finally, we must understand the terms by which the inspired writers identified New Testament **uncleanness** in all its forms: namely, the "filthiness of the **flesh** and **spirit**" (2 Cor. 7:1). Afterwards, God willing, we will understand how we **MUST** respond to the holy calling of God whereby we might, in a New Testament sense, be **savingly separated**!

In an effort to understand the holiness and separateness into which saints are called, one must understand the grounds by which a man can become **UNCLEAN**. When we have a biblical understanding of those *actual places* which were

commanded to be kept clean in the Old Testament – the places where God’s *immediate presence* **walked** – then we can understand the significance of this biblical phraseology and terminology, how it is quoted and applied in the New Testament. My reader, this rich heritage is a guide to understand the Church right now, but not in this age only. Through these same terms we will be enabled to appreciate the Church on her final boulevard: “The Consummation of All Things”. The following is an effort to understand what a Church is in three stages: we must look at her ***how she was***, ***how she is***, and ***how she will be***. Since the word “Church” is first used in reference to the Exodus Generation (Acts 7:38), and because the Mosaic Law was the foundational grounds from which all *nine places or persons* were formed, and seeing that these *nine places* and *persons* are interpreted to be biblical parallels of what a New Testament Church is, let us discover the essence of “the Church” in these *nine categories* as seen in *three different ages* of Covenant agreement: (1) The Old Testament, how “the Church” *was*, (2) the New Testament, how “the Church” *is*, (3) and The Resurrection, how “the Church” *will be*. How the Church *was*, **in gospel shadow**, is the phraseology and terminology by which the inspired writers understood what a New Testament Church *is*, **in gospel reality**, and by the same phraseology and terminology, furthermore, the inspired writers prophesied how the Church *will be*, **in gospel consummation**. Through these three categories we will see, not just forms of cleanness and uncleanness in relationship to these specific places or gatherings, but the scriptures reference – exact persons – themselves: named and titled that they might be expelled and excluded from the *immediate presence* of God. God be praised for His holiness!

- 1) The Clean Places and Persons in Three Stages
- 2) The Exact Persons Named & Expelled

Even though the New Testament is a “Better Covenant” with “Better Promises”, and even though the NT is inexplicably, the long awaited dawn of “reformation” (Heb. 8:6), the dawn of salvation is still described in the ceremonial term - “cleansing” (Acts 10:15, Titus 2:5-7, 1 Pet. 1:18-19, Heb. 7:26-27)! Yes, because the Old Testament existed so that we might *understand* the New Testament. God invested in centuries of work to explain and exemplify what He *thinks, feels*, and *does* in relationship to **unclean things**, especially in one of these nine places or persons. These relationships, being long established, explain and exemplify how we are to understand their New Testament parallel – how God, likewise, as the OT example, *thinks, feels*, and *acts* in the New Testament situations! The Old Testament passed away because it lacked eternity and sufficiency, specifically because its ceremonies were earthly instead of heavenly (for the earthliness and carnality of the OT see Heb. 9:9, 10:1-4, 22, Gal. 4:3, 9, Col. 2:20), but these shadows do declare and explain the attributes of NT realities (which are heavenly and eternal), realities which are unfathomable without their shadows (see Col. 2:9-17, Heb. 8:1-6, 9:23-24). Firstly, beginning with *the assembly* and *the congregation* of God, let us look at the persons of these places in their three stages.

By way of introduction it must be noted: even though the scriptures use “the assembly” and “the congregation” as interchangeable synonyms (Ps. 111:1), a separate study of each of their uses will reveal a meaningful consistency in the light of our subject of study. Before this categorical address, please remember: the *assembly* and *congregation* of God were ideally, according to God’s command in the Mosaic Law, made up of twice-born, regenerated individuals who were, because of their true conversion, empowered to meet the criteria of their holy calling so as to escape the shame of public execution (addressed at length in former chapters). This empowerment of grace enabled them to fulfill “the righteousness of the Law” (Rom. 2:26-27) by nature and deed, and because of this... they remained alive. Those who were guiltless from the great transgression – presumptuous and wilful sin (Numbers 15:22-31, Heb. 10:26-29) – escaped the threats of public execution. All others found blamable, as we have studied, were “cut off” from among God’s people (Num. 15:31). GOD, among whom they dwelt, disdained that such a man would live! This was the Law. Nevertheless, my reader, during times of apostasy this biblical ideal was left unfulfilled. In contradiction to it, the wicked prospered, the righteous were oppressed, and the prophets lifted up a lamenting cry, “the Law is slacked, and judgment doth never go forth: for the wicked doth compass about the righteous; therefore wrong judgment proceedeth” (Hab. 1:4)! As a consequence the ever-increasing **mixture** between *sinners* and *saints* incapacitated the very ability to **discern** salvific knowledge! God, the Father of mercies, consistently rose up prophets throughout the centuries to decry unholy mixtures – disdaining them – arguing that they were sin-advancing and truth-destroying unions, and because these prophets were decrying the ungodly **union** of their generation, their ministries appeared to be a divisive curse, and their person: “a man

of strife and a man of contention to the whole earth” (Jer. 15:10). They were calling for the re-establishment of **salvific separation!** They were magnifying, glorifying, and unveiling how the nature of God demands separation! How Divine-WOE pursues those who neglect it! And when or if God revives Israel, they will regain a definitive understanding of salvific holiness like as Malachi prophesied, “Then shall ye return, and **discern between** the righteous and the wicked, **between** him that serveth God and him that serveth Him not” (Mal. 3:18). Now let us look closely and discover, furthermore, who the persons of these *seven places* are, and, what are the gatherings of Israel known as “the assembly” and “the congregation”?

The Assembly

In the Old Testament – *how it was*

“And Mine hand shall be upon the prophets that see vanity, and that divine lies: they shall not be in **the assembly of my people**, neither shall they be **written in the writing** of the house of Israel, neither shall they **enter into the Land** of Israel; and ye shall know that I am the Lord GOD.” -Ezek. 13:9

“**The assembly**” of Israel exists by “**writing**” (as Ezek. 13:9 states, “written in the writing of the House of Israel”). By writing, the scriptures signify God’s election of individual persons for salvation (“my people” –Ezek. 13:9), every one of them – named in the Book of Life (Ex. 32:32-33, Ps. 69:28, 87:6, Isa. 4:3, Dan. 12:1, Hos. 9:3). This is, my reader, not the writing of man but God. This is God’s writing in heaven’s Book, and the earthly assembly follows suit. Election can be temporary or eternal, depending upon the elected people’s behavior, therefore in the case of promise-breaching sin, God said, “him will I blot out of **My Book**” (Ex. 32:32-33, Rev. 3:5). Take note of the scripture references, my reader. When God first spoke of The Book of names which specifically identified God’s heavenly selected people who were made up Israelite assemblies, the Lord was speaking in reference to *the whole assembly* of God’s people (Ex. 19:17) who came out of Egypt and passed through the Red Sea to assemble before GOD at Sinai (see Exodus 32:32-33). This whole assembly of people – ALL OF THEM (Deut. 32:7-14) – were saved by God to be brought into the Promised Land of Israel, according to the Covenant (see [Chapter 1](#), [Chapter 2](#), & [Chapter 3](#)). The Land of Israel was, in other words, their typological heaven, thus those who inherited it did so by the empowerment of saving faith (Heb. 3:19-4:2). Those who did not inherit it were those who were blotted out of The Book of God because of their sins (Ex. 32:32-33).

When God blotted men out of The Book, they were blotted out of the assembly of God’s people via death (Deut. 4:1-4). This is because in the Old Testament, the assembly of the whole congregation of Israel was The Church (Acts 7:38) – an assembly which began pure (Jer. 2:1-2) – and from thenceforth and forever GOD sought to keep it pure through every act of judgment that He brought upon Israel. Ezekiel 13:9 expresses a historical act of judgment in which God sought to fulfill the Divine prerogative that, “All Israel shall be saved” (Rom. 11:26). In Israel’s nativity, all Israel was saved (at least at the beginning; Isa. 63:7-11), thus it is written of Israel’s consummation, “all Israel shall be saved” (Rom. 11:26). In every age which leads into the consummation, God sought to fulfill the promises of the Covenant which stated that, shockingly, all of Israel would be saved! The ages of time which lead into the consummation convey to us the reasons for which God’s glorious promises were prolonged from their fulfillment (Ezek. 12:25, 28), but in the process of time the Divine prerogative to fulfill the promise was repeatedly expounded and pursued, yea, and temporary ages of inferior fulfillments transpired, but seeing that in the end all the promises shall be fulfilled, and, that, in the meantime, God spoke and pursued their full performance, the saints of the Last Days have been left with a vast reservoir of scriptures which declare to us this final and glorious END wherein all the promises of God will be fulfilled! Ezekiel 13:9 is one of those verses. This “**assembly**” is therefore God-called and God-gathered, and whosoever gathers on earth among what God calls, “My people”, “the house of Israel”, and “the Land of Israel” (Ezek. 13:9), were gathered together because of a **heavenly selection**, just as it SHALL BE PERFECTLY FULFILLED IN THE END (see Isa. 4:2-6). Historically, the Lord sought to fulfill this purpose in the Regathering of Israel in the days of Nehemiah, Ezra, Haggai, and Zechariah, in the 1st Advent of Christ, in the Gentile Church Age (Spiritual Israel), but most of all, at last, at the 2nd Advent of Christ!

We have thus far noted that, in the Old Testament, ALL OF ISRAEL was to be holy, clean, and truly converted, but what happened when Israelites fell into *non-damnable* uncleanness? In the case of *non-damnable* uncleanness: (1) there were more and less holy places, (2) and in the locations of lesser-holiness confinement areas of uncleanness were designated (like *wards*) into which the unclean might abide untouched by the clean until they were ceremonially clean again, and therefore depending on where you are in Israel the use of the word *assembly* changes in meaning. It was not always addressing **the collective whole** of God's people (all of whom were, by Law, *the regenerate*, except for their children who were not of age) but *various assemblies* of different sizes and persons who would gather (i.e. for religion, ceremony, judgment, or war, by city, tribe, nation, or office – see for example, Num. 10:1-10). Different locations in Israel were more or less hallowed, but at the location which was least holy there remained the criteria of separation that God's people were to be regenerate (and as for Israelite families which contained unconverted children, they were sanctified and made clean by their parents [1 Cor. 7:14] because, note: the Israelite children were under the covering of the Passover Blood, abiding within and partaking of the Passover Feast, walking through the baptism of the Red Sea waters, standing before the holy Mount of Consuming Fire, hearkening unto the commandments which were heralded from thence, participating in all the holistic ceremonies which were applicable, and so on... they were eating the manna and drinking the waters which gushed from the Rock, all because they were under the covering of their parents).

By title, the assembly was: “the assembly of the **upright**” (Ps. 111:1) or “the assembly of the **saints**” (Ps. 89:7). Therefore those without *uprightness* and *saintliness* were excluded, my reader. Also by title, there exists a contradicting and antithetical assembly called, “the assembly of the **mockers**”, with whom God's people were forbidden to join (Jer. 15:17)... an assembly which exists during **seasons of apostasy**. This assembly was God-forsaken because they were “vile”, and those unmixed and separated from them were “the precious” (thus Jeremiah was commanded to “take forth the **precious** from the **vile**” –Jer. 15:19). The precious persons who “sat not” in the assembly of the mockers, they were commanded to have no reunion with the mockers unless they stop mocking - replacing their vile and rebellious ways with precious and obedient ways (thus Jeremiah was commanded, “let them return unto thee but return not thou unto them” –Jer. 15:19). “In the fear of God” (2 Cor. 7:1), the God-accepted assembly obeyed these commands of **separation** and **holiness**. My reader, do you “understand the fear of the LORD” (Prov. 2:5)? It is hidden, you know... it must be searched for to be found (Prov. 2:5). How happy is the man who has found it! For God said, “wisdom and knowledge shall be the stability of thy times, and strength of salvation: the fear of the LORD is his treasure” (Isa. 33:6)! Then would our Sunday gatherings be full of saintliness, fear, and reverence, as it is written: “God is greatly to be feared in the assembly of the saints, and to be had in reverence of them that are about Him” (Ps. 89:7)! Oh, my reader! What are God's *rules* for His assemblies, as He called them – “all **Mine assemblies**” (Ezek. 44:24) – do you know? They are centered on *one theme*: the exclusion of those whom God forbids to be in His assemblies (Ezek. 44:7, 9). Church officers were appointed to establish this holy segregation in the assembly of God. God, speaking of them, said this: “they shall teach My people **the difference between the holy and profane**, and cause them to **discern between the unclean and the clean**. And in controversy they shall stand in **judgment**; and they shall **judge** it according to **My judgments**: and they shall keep My Laws and My statutes in **ALL MINE ASSEMBLIES**; and they shall hallow my Sabbaths” (Ezek. 44:23-24). How is it in your local assembly?

In the Consummation – *how it will be*

Speaking of the **1st Resurrection** and the Millennial Reign of Christ, it was written,

“In that day shall the branch of the LORD be beautiful and glorious, and the fruit of the earth shall be excellent and comely for **them that are escaped of Israel**. And it shall come to pass, that **he that is left in Zion**, and **he that remaineth in Jerusalem**, **SHALL BE CALLED HOLY**, even **EVERY ONE that is WRITTEN AMONG THE LIVING in Jerusalem**: **When** the Lord shall have **washed** away the filth of the daughters of **Zion**, and shall have **purged** the blood of **Jerusalem** from the midst thereof by the spirit of judgment, and by the spirit of burning. And the LORD will create upon **EVERY DWELLING PLACE of mount Zion, and upon her ASSEMBLIES**, a cloud and smoke by day, and the shining of a flaming fire by night: for upon all THE GLORY shall

be a defence. And there shall be a tabernacle for a shadow in the daytime from the heat, and for a place of refuge, and for a covert from storm and from rain.” – Isaiah 4:2-6

Here is the obvious fulfillment of Ezekiel 13:9-10 (with superiority over any former revivals of the Covenant existing throughout history), the “day” when all those who remain alive in Jerusalem are “**HOLY**” (Isa. 4:3). God spoke of them with specificity, saying, “even every one that is **written among the living** in Jerusalem” (Isa. 4:3). Hallelujah! This is because, “All Israel shall be saved” (Rom. 11:26). This is because, God said, “...they shall look upon Me whom they have pierced” (Zech. 12:10). “Behold, He cometh with clouds and every eye shall see Him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of Him” (Rev. 1:7), “And His feet shall stand in that day upon The Mount of Olives, which is before Jerusalem on the east” (Zech. 14:4).

Speaking of the population which exists on earth after the **Final Resurrection**, it was written,

“Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world. And **the world passeth away**, and the lust thereof: but **he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever**.” – 1 John 2:15-17

“Let **the sinners be consumed out of the earth**, and let **the wicked be no more**. Bless thou the LORD, O my soul. Praise ye the LORD.” – Psalm 104:35

The population of people who will **abide forever** will live to inherit a new earth, wherein dwelleth no unrighteousness of any kind (2 Pet. 3:10-13): either in *persons* or *personalities*. After all the dead are resurrected and judged (Rev. 20:11-15), and after all people who were “**unbelieving**” are cast into “the Lake which burneth with fire and brimstone” (Rev. 21:8), “the Holy City New Jerusalem” shall come out of Heaven itself (Rev. 21:2), descending upon a new heaven and a new earth (Rev. 21:1), to be inhabited by the population of persons (**the believers**) who survived The Judgment of God because, yet again, their names were “**found written in The Book of Life**” (Rev. 20:15)! Aye, this is the final and most glorious **assembly** of all time, consummated and fixed, thereto remaining without change forevermore! This is the day when, shockingly, all **sinners** are consumed out of the earth and **the wicked** are no more (Psalm 104:35, Prov. 2:22)! Indeed, “Blessed are **the meek: for they shall inherit the earth**” (Matt. 5:5, Ps. 37:11)... the new earth!

The Lord, by Himself, creates and sustains all creation (Ps. 104:1-33). In this thought the psalmist declared: “how manifold are [His] works!” (Ps. 104:24) Indeed, God does “send forth [His] Spirit” to create and renew the face of the earth (Ps. 104:30), but He does also, furthermore, endeavor to consume all **sinners** out from the earth. An elaborate declaration of how God creates and sustains all life on earth does, by necessity, conclude the final act of judgment whereby God fulfills the prayer: “**Let the sinners be consumed out of the earth, and let the wicked be NO MORE**. Bless thou the LORD, O my soul. Praise ye the LORD” (Ps. 104:35). While meditating upon this final conclusion, the psalmist said, “My meditation of Him shall be sweet: I will be glad in the LORD” (Ps. 104:34). “Behold, the Day of the LORD cometh cruel both with wrath and fierce anger, to lay the Land desolate: and **He shall destroy the sinners out of it**” (Isa. 13:9).

In the New Testament – *how it is*

“To **the general assembly** and **Church** of the firstborn, which are written in heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect” – Heb. 12:23

“Not forsaking **the assembling** of ourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much the more, as ye see the day approaching.” – Heb. 10:25

The age or dispensation between the Old Testament and the Consummation is, namely, the Gentile Church Age. The Covenant of this age is, the New Covenant. According to Hebrews 12:23, “**the assembly**” of the Church is a company of persons who are gathered there by birth (“The Church of the Firstborn” -Heb. 12:23), whose Divine-gathering was manifested because of election (“**written** in heaven” -Heb. 12:23). Take note, my reader! Like as the Old Testament assembly and the consummated assembly, the New Testament assembly exists by God’s “**writing**” (Heb. 12:23, Lk. 10:20, Php. 4:3, Rev. 13:8)! Even so, in the case of wrath-provoking sin, as in the Old Testament (Ex. 32:32-33), God can and will, He says, “blot out his name out of the Book of Life” (Rev. 3:5). This assembly’s entire population is saved, and if expelled... the man is damned! All scriptures considered, firstly, it is a Divinely-selected gathering. Therefore those whom God assembles, let THEM assemble locally! In a higher unseen assembly God’s will is done, therefore, “as in heaven, so in earth” (Lk. 11:2), God calls for His will to be done in the local Church assembly. If God’s call goes forth in the heavenly assembly, God’s voice will be heard in the earthly and local assembly! If the earthly and local assembly perfectly images the higher and unseen assembly, the saying is fulfilled: “Thy Kingdom come. Thy will be done, **as in heaven, so in earth**” (Lk. 11:2). “Heaven” is the place where Christ has gone, and we in Him, relate to God from where Christ is and what Christ is doing (Rom. 6:8-13), and if the position of this heavenly arena is the spiritual realty of all nine of these places and persons, then because we are positioned at the location of this all-encompassing arena whose reality is all shadows, our Lawful and spiritual coexistence with Christ in heaven makes us, by location, as the nine places and persons. In this way, heaven is the title which is all encompassing of every reality, because heaven is where Christ is, and we in Him. From heaven is the Spirit of salvation, our birthright, and conversation (John 1:12-13, 3:3, Php. 3:20). Heaven is how we became a “holy nation” (1 Pet. 2:9) of spiritual Israelites (Rom. 9:6, Gal. 6:15-16, Eph. 2:12-19) who are the “seed of Abraham” (Gal. 3:29), thus we are the inhabitants of Israelite Lands, congregations, and assemblies in all seven places (*The Temple, Tabernacle, House, or Sanctuary of God, The Kingdom of God, Mount Zion, and The City of God*)... praise God!

The NT assembly, as seen in Hebrews 10:25 (“**the assembling** of ourselves together”), is a local gathering of individuals who are collectively identified as “brethren”. Take note, my reader, these are *real* brethren! Brethren who, by a previous and God-empowered “profession of faith” (Heb. 10:23) became “sprinkled” and “washed” by Christ (Heb. 10:22). They were made holy by “the blood of Jesus” (Heb. 10:19). Therefore, lo, unto these individuals belongs the blood-bought path, the “New and Living Way” provided by their “High Priest” (Heb. 10:20-21), whereby they, through a ceremonial justification wrought in heaven, have been made able to “draw near” with “boldness” into “The House of God” (Heb. 10:19, 21, 22), and because this is their heavenly standing (by Spirit and Law), they are commanded to congregate on earth in the local assembly known and reputed as The House of God on earth (Heb. 10:23-25). Just as those who are assembled in heaven are in the House of God together, so on earth, “not forsaking the assembling of OURSELVES together, as the manner of some is” (Heb. 10:25), the brethren are commanded to gather. Forsaking this gathering is, according to Hebrews 10:24-29, an unpardonable sin (when it is committed with willful continuance). My reader, biblically speaking, forsaking this gathering is forsaking Christ. Christ, “being assembled together with them” (Acts 1:4), was the center-focus of the Church, and as the saints related to it (the assembly) they related to the Person of Christ who said, “there am I in the midst of them” (Matt. 18:20).

The Congregation

In the Old Testament – *how it was*

“all the congregation are **holy**, every one of them, and the LORD **is among them**” – Num. 16:3

The former quote was spoken by an apostate, but *the words* were true. Not in the application that Korah meant, I say, the words were true. Those who entered **the congregation** of Israel were partakers and beneficiaries of, “The Tabernacle of **the Congregation**” (Ex. 30:16). **The congregants** of Israel were religiously devoted to GOD who dwelt within the Tabernacle, thus the Tabernacle could rightly be called: “The Tabernacle of **the Congregation**”. Both it and the people

who attended were, by necessity, separate from all other people on the earth. Speaking on this wise, the Lord said, “Speak unto **ALL THE CONGREGATION** of the children of Israel, and say unto them, Ye shall be **HOLY**: for I the LORD your God am holy” (Lev. 19:2).

The whole of scripture could be recited in context to confirm this congregational principle of separateness! Yet, my reader, let these few verses be sufficient for now. It was written six times in eight verses,

“He...**shall not enter** into the **congregation** of the LORD.” – Deut. 23:1

“A...**shall not enter** into the **congregation** of the LORD;” – Deut. 23:2

“...to his tenth generation **shall he not enter** into the **congregation** of the LORD.” – Deut. 23:2

“A...**shall not enter** into the **congregation** of the LORD;” – Deut. 23:3

“...to their tenth generation **shall they not enter** into the **congregation** of the LORD for ever:” – Deut. 23:3

“The...**shall enter** into the **congregation** of the LORD in their third generation.” – Deut. 23:8

Such statements should not surprise us, my reader. The whole of scripture exists as a commentary on the matter. If the heart of God depicted in Deuteronomy 23:1-8 is still shrouded in mystery, my reader, Deuteronomy 23:9-14 will also be a mystery. Oh! How we NEED to understand the New Testament potential of the Old Testament command, “Up, SANCTIFY THE PEOPLE, and say, Sanctify yourselves against to morrow: for thus saith the LORD God of Israel, There is an accursed thing in the midst of thee, O Israel: thou canst not stand before thine enemies, until ye take away the accursed thing from among you” (Josh 7:13). On the same vein but only in a later generation, a weeping Priest of the Lord arose to decry the situation of national security in these words, “Now therefore, make confession unto the LORD God of your fathers, and do His pleasure: and **separate yourselves** from the people of the Land, and from the strange wives...until the fierce wrath of our God for this matter be turned from us” (Ezra 10:11-14)! Ezra said this after he had “prayed” and “confessed”, “weeping and casting himself down before the House of God” (Ezra 10:1). In this generation there was a nationwide revival of consciousness that **the congregation of Israel** was, more specifically, “**the congregation of God**” (Neh. 13:1-3)... thus there were ordinances to keep (Deut. 33:4-5, Num. 15:15)! Understanding this, the revivalists Joshua and Ezra *arose* to do judgment and re-establish Church Purity in the congregation of God, but the prophet Jeremiah, on the contrary (being born into a revival-less generation), *lay prostrate* in lamentation on behalf of Zion, saying, “The adversary hath spread out his hand upon her [Zion’s] pleasant things: for she [Zion] hath seen that the heathen **entered into** her **Sanctuary**, whom Thou [God] didst command that **they should not enter** into **Thy congregation**” (Lam. 1:10)! We must come to understand what Joshua, Ezra, and Jeremiah understood, what the Law commands: how that there is a *population-wide* criteria of **holiness** contained in **ordinances** for *the entire* congregation of Israelites (under-age children excluded).

“One ordinance...of **the congregation**” – Numbers 15:15

There is “one ordinance” for “the congregation” – a narrow criteria of conduct which could only be fulfilled by regenerated men (Num. 15:15). Like as the use of the word *assembly*, a *congregation* describes a gathering of various places for various purposes (religious, ceremonial, judgment, or war; see Num. 10:3, Ex. 12:27, Num. 25:6, Joel. 2:15, Ex. 19:7-8, Judges 20, 2 Chron. 30:5, 34:29, 1 Sam. 10:17, 2 Sam. 5:1-5, 1 Kings 12:20, 2 Kings 11:19, 21:24, 23:30), but all these places were **in Israel**. Because all congregations were *in Israel*, the word “congregation” was often used to describe *the entire multitude*, all of which were savingly converted (including converted strangers, see Ex. 12:19, Num. 9:14, Deut. 23:1-3, Num. 9:14, 15:15).

In **times of apostasy**, of course, these biblical ideals were not fulfilled. The people, as “Belial” (2 Cor. 6:15), became Lawless and unholy. Because of this there arose a “congregation of evil doers” (Ps. 26:5) who were, more specifically, “the congregation of the dead” (Prov. 21:16). Contradicting these dead congregations was God’s-gathering, and it was

called: “the congregation of the people” (Ps. 7:7), “the congregation of the righteous” (Ps. 1:5), “the congregation of the saints” (Ps. 89:5), “the congregation of saints” (Ps. 149:1), and speaking in terms possessive to God, “Thy congregation” (Ps. 68:10, 74:2) and “the congregation of Thy poor” (Ps. 74:19). “Thy congregation” specifically refers to “the poor”, the “purchased” of God, and God’s “inheritance” which is “redeemed” – “this Mount Zion, wherein Thou hast dwelt” (Ps. 68:10, 74:2, 19), the psalmist stated. From these verses there are specific persons which are categorically **named** and **excluded** from God’s congregation. They are “sinners”, “the wicked” “evil doers”, also called “the dead”. To **expel** them from God’s congregation, ministers must establish “**judgment**”, such judgment where “the ungodly shall not stand, nor sinners in the congregation of the righteous” (Ps. 1:5). Hallelujah!

King David, being born into an apostate generation, endured decades of tribulation at the hands of un-expelled sinners in the midst of an Impure Israel (Church Impurity). David did not dwell idly by and accept “the status-quo” Judaism of his apostate time, no! So much the rather, David confessed to God, “I have walked in Thy truth” (Ps. 26:3). By this, he meant,

“I have not **sat with vain persons**, neither will I **go in with dissemblers**. I have hated **the congregation of evil doers**; and will not **sit with the wicked**. I will wash mine hands in innocency: so will I compass Thine altar, O LORD: That I may publish with the voice of thanksgiving, and tell of all Thy wondrous works. LORD, I have loved **the Habitation of Thy House**, and **the place** where Thine honour dwelleth...**My foot standeth** in an even place: in **the congregations** will I bless the LORD” – Psalm 26:4-8, 12

David separated himself from “**the congregation of evil doers**” which existed in his backslidden generation, and he did it out of love for “the Habitation of [God’s] House” – from whence came the Laws of holiness! David understood the difference between “**the congregation of evil doers**” (Ps. 26:5) and “**the congregations**” (Ps. 26:12) that he would assemble with. By *sitting, going, and congregating* with the congregations that are clean in God’s sight, David pursued a revival (“*Though I walk in the midst of trouble, Thou wilt revive me: thou shalt stretch forth Thine hand against the wrath of mine enemies, and Thy right hand shall save me.*”-Ps.138:7), and upon seizing the throne of Israel he prepared his heart to cleanse and eradicate all sinners from the Land of Israel altogether (a reinstatement of Church Purity: see Psalm 101:1-8). This is the real “King and Country”, my reader... do you agree with it? “Repent ye: for the Kingdom of Heaven is at hand” (Matt. 3:2)!

Wrongfully so, some distinguish between Israelite **citizens** and Israelite **saints**. They assume that one can still dwell among Israel as a nation, when the man is not part of “the Church” (i.e. engaged in religious activities, holy convocations, and ceremonies). My reader, this is impossible! Advocates of this assumption do ascribe to the belief that one can be “an Israelite” who is *unconverted* and *once-born*, and seeing they have presumed upon the presence of such men in Israel, they conclude that the Israelite rules of **holiness** and **cleanness** belong to *state officers* and *political dignities* instead of **all Israelites**. Supporters of such a thought cannot argue that the congregations, assemblies, and convocations of Israel were restricted by rules of holiness, therefore to force their view upon others they claim that these congregations, assemblies, and convocations were always made up of state officers and political dignities, not all Israelites. My reader, with all scripture considered, the commands for holiness were for **all the people**, not just the politicians (Lev. 20:22-27)! ALL the people in ALL the Land of Israel (cities, provinces, camps, and nationwide gatherings of the people), except in those places which were designated for uncleanness (which were, by interpretation, the places of the damned), were to remain **holy** and **clean**!

My reader, Israelite citizenship does not operate like our Gentile citizenship. The Israelite nation was not as Gentile nations (Deut. 14:2). There was an inseparable mingling of state and citizen affairs in Israel, namely because Israel was holy unto God! The Land itself was HOLY! This means that unlike any other nation, state and citizen affairs were *not secular but religious*. Matters of state were matters of religion! The branches of society and civilization in Israel (every congregation held anywhere with any vocation in all of Israel) were, more specifically, branches of Church Ministry. Yes! And the congregants therein were Church Ministers! Therefore in Israel, the government and its citizens, along with the soldiers of war (Deut. 23:9-14, 28:7), the ingathering harvesters of the farm (Ex. 23:16, 34:22, Deut. 28:4-6, 10-13), the marital compatibility of individuals (Neh. 13:1-3), and all things that appertain to financial and economic prosperity (Deut.

28:4-6, 10-13), or likewise, family relationships and fruitfulness (Deut. 28:4-6, 10-13)... all persons of every vocation, or, “the children of Israel” as a people, had to be **separated** from all other peoples (exempting Lawful converts from strange peoples). This means, not this congregation *here* or that assembly *there*, this state officer *here* or this political dignity *there*... no my reader! “The children of Israel” as a people had to remain HOLY! If Israel *as a people* did mingle with uncleanness --- men would “DIE”! Religious rites were gospel messages preached by shadows, therefore Israel’s participation (inwardly and outwardly) was necessary for conversion and present progressive holiness (which is saving union with God’s Spirit), thus all Israelites were to be *Israelites indeed* (inwardly and outwardly), or in other words, all **citizens** were to be converted, twice-born, **saints** (Lev. 15:31; for more information see [Chapter 6](#), [Chapter 7](#), [Chapter 8](#), & [Chapter 9](#)).

I would remind you yet again, my reader: Israel was bound by Laws which demanded all of Israel’s participation in religious ceremonies. Ceremonies could not be neglected by any of the population. They were not a matter of personal choice or leisure, as if it was a mere privilege. Ceremonial practices were not dependent upon civilian preferences, no! The religious ceremonies of Israel were a matter of *life* and *death* (Deut. 30:15-20)! Pause and think about that, my reader. Whosoever did not keep **the Passover** was not *passed over* (which means, the destroying angel of God’s wrath did not *pass them by*, but rather, pursued and fell upon them with the death sentence), for it is written: “**that soul shall be cut off from Israel**” (Ex. 12:15). **The Day of Atonement** was a wrath-absorbing escape for “all the people of the congregation” (Lev. 16:33), thus anyone who did not observe it was “**cut off from among his people**” (Lev. 23:29). **The Sabbath** was observed by all and neglected by none, for upon its neglect it was written, “whosoever doeth any work therein, **that soul shall be cut off from among his people**” (Ex. 31:14). **Circumcision**, neglected by any man, “**that soul shall be cut off from his people**” (Gen. 17:14). Israel was a clean nation, a clean people, and when **Unclean Laws** were defied by individual Israelites (Lev. 15:31) or Levitical officers, the penalty was DEATH: “**that soul shall be cut off from My Presence, I am the LORD**” (Lev. 22:3). Any Israelite of any tribe, if they **Defile the Tabernacle** of God by their uncleanness they would die (Lev. 15:31). Either Israel was **separated from their uncleanness** or they were **separated from their God**, and if God did abide in their midst, He required the death of unclean persons, and if the nation did abide in uncleanness, the whole nation would be destroyed by a plethora of curses and heathen armies which God would raise up against them. Anyone excluded from **Religious Services** was **cut off** from among the people, the simplest example to reference being: Ceremonial **Sacrifices** (Num. 15:30-31, Heb. 10:28)! Some assume that those who were “**cut off**” from among God’s people were **excommunicated** rather than **put to death** (JFB), but this is not true! To be “**cut off**” from the people of Israel was, by God’s definition, the *death penalty* (Num. 4:18, Lev. 20:1-8, 18, 23:29, Ex. 31:14, see also the presumptuous sinners of Num. 15:30-31 in context with the Sabbath breaker in Num. 15:32-36, in comparison with Heb. 10:28; see also [Chapter 5](#)). Furthermore, unlike heathen nations, the punishments involving **the death penalty** were civilian affairs. Though our heathen nation, my reader, enforces the death penalty upon transgressors by political rather than civil powers, in Israel this was a civil matter. *All the people* were involved in and obligated to conduct the execution, rather than a mere state or national officer. Israel DID NOT operate like our heathen nation because in Israel... God is KING.

In the Consummation – *how it will be*

Speaking of the **1st Resurrection** & **2nd Resurrection**, it was written,

“But ye shall be named the **Priests** of the LORD: men shall call you the **Ministers** of our God: ye shall eat the riches of the Gentiles, and in their glory shall ye boast yourselves.” – Isaiah 61:6 (1st Resurrection)

“And I will also take of them for **Priests** and for **Levites**, saith the LORD.” – Isaiah 66:21 (2nd Resurrection)

“And has made us unto our God **Kings** and **Priests**: and we shall **reign on the earth**.” – Rev. 5:10 (1st & 2nd Resurrection)

“Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the **First Resurrection**: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be **Priests** of God and of Christ, and shall **reign with Him** a thousand years.” – Rev. 20:6 (1st Resurrection)

At this climactic point of redemption, God fulfills what He always endeavored to accomplish; the age-old promises which were prolonged and breached time and time again. Give glory to God, my reader! The promises which saints of every generation reached after, will be performed! “I will perform that good thing which I have promised”, the LORD said (Jer. 33:14). Every congregation within Israel, and, every congregation of Israelites will be all-holy and all-saved men and women! They will be, as God said, “the Priests of the LORD”, “the Ministers of our God”, “Levites”, and “Kings” in the hour when the citizens of Israel become the conquerors of the world! This will be the final fulfillment of what was written of old, “And ye shall be unto Me a **Kingdom of Priests**, and an holy nation” (Ex. 19:6). Oh, this glorious calling! These glorious promises! This glorious consummation! The Lord will fulfill the prophetic mysteries which were spoken of old, saying,

“For thus saith the LORD; David shall never want a man to sit upon the throne of the house of Israel; Neither shall the **Priests** the **Levites** want a man before Me **to offer burnt-offerings**, and **to kindle meat-offerings**, and **to do sacrifice continually**. And the word of the LORD came unto Jeremiah, saying, Thus saith the LORD; If ye can break my covenant of the day, and my covenant of the night, and that there should not be day and night in their season; Then may also my covenant be broken with **David** my servant, that he should not have a **Son to reign upon his throne**; and with **the Levites the Priests, My Ministers**. As the host of heaven cannot be numbered, neither the sand of the sea measured: so will I multiply the seed of David my servant, and the Levites that minister unto me.” – Jer. 33:17-22

The regenerated men throughout redemptive history will be resurrected into glorified bodies to rule the world! They will be, furthermore, “**Priests**”, “**Levites**”, and “**Ministers**” who “bring the **sacrifice of praise** into the House of the LORD” for all ETERNITY (Jer. 33:11)! This glorious consummation comes to birth at the 2nd Advent of Jesus Christ – a time at which redemption becomes more glorious in its manifestation for all the world to wonder at “the glorious liberty of the children of God” (Rom. 8:21). God spoke of this day through the prophet Zechariah, saying,

“In that day shall the LORD *defend* the inhabitants of Jerusalem; and he that is feeble among them at that day **shall be as David**; and the house of David **shall be as God**, as the angel of the LORD before them.” – Zech. 12:8

Know ye not that “we shall be changed”, my reader? So glorious is this *change* (1 Cor. 15:51-53) that the disinterested become devastated and the sin-obsessed become envious! The weakest Israelite will be AS DAVID and the whole congregation of God’s people will be AS GOD! This glorious *defense* (see Zech. 12:8) of God’s people will happen by a sudden *change* of their persons. It was foretold that, “when He shall appear, we shall be like Him; for we shall see Him as He is” (1 Jn. 3:2)... thus with the whole of God’s people *changed* they will march forth to accomplish the mystery foretold long ago, which said,

“Let the saints be joyful in glory: let them sing aloud upon their beds. Let the high praises of God be in their mouth, and a twoedged sword in their hand; To execute vengeance upon the heathen, and punishments upon the people; To bind their kings with chains, and their nobles with fetters of iron; To execute upon them the judgment written: this honour have all his saints. Praise ye the LORD.” – Psalm 149:5-9

In THIS WAY, my reader, the congregation of the God will be established before the Lord Jesus Christ in glory. It is written, “His feet shall stand in that day upon the Mount of Olives” (Zech. 14:4)! What a day! Aye, “Then shall the LORD go forth, and fight against those nations, as when He fought in the day of battle” (Zech. 14:3)! In THIS WAY, God said, “**their congregation** shall be established before Me, and I will punish all that oppress them” (Jer. 30:20). Behold, my reader, the consummated congregation caught up in the air with the LORD, and, from thence, descending down to the earth for war, for conquering, till all the saints reign with Christ for a thousand years! “For the Lord Himself shall descend from Heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the

dead in Christ shall rise first: Then we which are alive and remain shall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air: and so shall we ever be with the Lord. Wherefore comfort one another with these words” (1 Thess. 4:16-18).

In The New Testament – *how it is*

“I will declare thy name unto **My brethren: in the midst of the congregation** will I praise thee.” – Psalm 22:22

“For both He that sanctifieth and **they who are sanctified** are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them **brethren**, Saying, I will declare thy name unto **My brethren, in the midst of the Church** will I sing praise unto thee.” – Heb. 2:11-12

The uncreated I AM, the Almighty God, the highly exalted One prophesied in psalm 22: this God, who is the Pre-Incarnate Christ, He *was*, He *is*, and He *is to come*. This One Being is transcendent over time itself. Demonstrating this, He repeatedly declared the end from the beginning, and above most prophetic utterances, Psalm 22 is staggering. It contains the most profound and explicit scene of Jesus Christ’s crucifixion, **centuries before He died**. David wrote as if he was looking upon the crucifixion scene with his own eyes! My reader, think of it! David lived hundreds of years before the Roman crucifix or Roman Empire even existed! And yet it is as if David was watching on in the very act of Christ crucified! David wrote a first-person utterance of Christ as He hung on the cross, the Lord Jesus, saying: “they shake the head”, “they gaped upon me with their mouths”, “all My bones are out of joint”, “they pierced My hands and My feet”, “they look and stare upon Me”, “they part My garments among them and cast lots upon My vesture” (see Psalm 22:7-8, 12-18). Amazing!

Throwing the Jews into holy perplexity, God Almighty who is Holy-Holy-Holy, who is utterly *other than* all of humanity... He calls humanity His *fellow humans*, yea... and He used the affectionate and friendly name, “**My brethren**”! What a glory! Here, my reader, in this psalm – *Psalm 22* – the same psalm which depicted the death of the undying One – -- thereby God made possible this impossible claim! Humanity IS His brethren, praise God! And this was accomplished by this awful and glorious crucifixion scene! Think of it, my reader. Think of the impossibility that the Second Person of the Godhead, Jesus Christ, spoke in reference to redeemed humanity as, “My brethren”!? The writer of Hebrews explained the wonder with infallible exactitude, saying, “But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that He by the grace of God should taste death for every man. For it became Him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the Captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings. For both He that sanctifieth and they who are sanctified are all of One, for which cause He is not ashamed to call them **BRETHREN**” (Heb. 2:9-11)! These “brethren” of Christ are those who are, as He said in psalm 22:22, “in the midst of **the congregation**”, and the word “**congregation**” is interpreted in Hebrews 2:12 as “**the Church**”! These brethren became brethren by a Divine sanctification, a spiritual union between God and man whereby they became “ONE” (Heb. 2:11). These beloved individuals are, as Christ said, “the children which God hath given Me” (Heb. 2:13). Therefore THESE individuals – and none else – are **the persons in the congregation of the New Testament Church**! But, my reader, are we turning it into a *mingled* congregation, a *mixture*, a person-to-person contradiction, a gathering of God’s and Satan’s children? Or are you in line with the scripture? By its rule and mandate it was written that, “**the congregation**”, is the children of God. Christ became the God-Man, thus it is not blasphemy for Him to look upon redeemed humanity and say, “My brethren”! Is it true for you, my reader, in your local congregation?

The NT assembly and congregation began in the same higher, unseen place (“heaven” –Heb12:23), a place for the persons of God’s Divine election. Therefore the local gathering is a supernaturally-knit fellowship which, in supernatural terms (1 Cor. 2:14), was required to be regulated (1 Jn. 1, 1 Cor. 1:8-9, 2 Cor. 6:17-7:1). Finally, because true saints were capable of falling into a spiritual condition which would result in their expulsion from the gathering, the sober mentality of the people gathered exhibits their awareness of this danger, thus they gathered together locally that they might help

prevent one another from suffering Divine-expulsion – an expulsion which would first begin in the heavenlies by the Lord Himself, and thereafter in the local assembly (on earth “as in heaven”) – then the Lord would expel them through His God-ordained authorities in the Church [for more information see [Chapter 3](#) & “[The Earth & Heaven Interconnectedness of Courtroom Appeals and Legal Transactions](#)” from “Answers to My Brethren, The Calvinists”].

CHAPTER #16

The Land of Israel & Judah, The Kingdom of God, The City of Jerusalem, & Mount Zion

Section #1: The Old Testament – *how it was*
 Section #2: The Consummation – *how it will be*
 Section #3: The New Testament – *how it is*

The Old Testament – *how it was*

Having just examined the persons who congregated and assembled, specifically speaking, let us turn and gaze upon the locations in which they gathered: *The Land of Israel & Judah, The Kingdom of God, The City of Jerusalem, and Mount Zion*. These locations are listed in order from greatest to least in terms of size, which means that the length and breadth of the regions become increasingly narrow, but each region is vast enough to be considered in separate categories of study.

The Land of Israel & Judah

“For **the upright** shall dwell in the Land, and **the perfect** shall remain in it.” – Proverbs 2:21

“**they** shall not enter into **the Land of Israel**” – Ezek. 13:9

“**They** shall not dwell in **the LORD’s Land**” – Hosea 9:3

Like all other locations and for the same reasons, not just **anyone** can “enter into **the Land of Israel**” (Ezek. 13:9). As we have covered already (verses applicable to *The Land of Israel & Judah*), all rebels, false prophets, sinners, and unconverted people were put to public execution (Ex. 32:27, Deut. 13:1-11, 17:2-7 Num. 15:30-31). This is not a subject which the Lord has been unclear about. The Lord said,

“**He that putteth his trust in Me shall possess The Land, and shall inherit My holy Mountain**” - Isa. 57:13

“For **the upright** shall dwell in the Land, and **the perfect** shall remain in it. But **the wicked** shall be cut off from the earth, and **the transgressors** shall be rooted out of it.” - Prov. 2:21-22

When the Law was kept, and, therefore, the public execution of sinning Israelites was consistently beheld by the populous, it was so that “**all Israel** shall *hear, and fear*, and shall do no more any such *wickedness* as this **among [them]**” (Deut. 13:11). A consciousness of holiness and fear was to remain “among [Israel]” and in “the midst of [Israel]” (Deut. 13:5), for thereby the people were enabled to “**perfect holiness** in the fear of God” (2 Cor. 7:1). Henceforth we can see, according to scripture, an exclusive and specified populous was allowed to inhabit *The Land of Israel and Judah*: “**the upright**”, “**the perfect**”, “**He that putteth his truth in Me**”. All others, called “**the wicked**” and “**the transgressors**”, or whatever “**they**” are called (Ezek. 13:9), were eradicated from the Land by the penalty of death so that, thereby, all the people who remained in the Land did *hear, fear*, shun *wickedness*, and *perfect holiness*!

It was a glorious privilege – equivalent to salvation – for God to allow a people to “come into the Land” of Israel (Num. 14:30). The oaths of salvation given to Israel promised that they would “dwell therein” (Num. 14:30, see also Hebrews 3-4). Typologically speaking, this means that their *inheritance* of the Promised Land was equivalent to our *inheritance* of Heaven! In unison with this, do you remember how many times the New Testament writers warned of heaven and hell on these terms: “the unrighteous shall not *inherit the Kingdom of God*” (1 Cor. 6:9-10, Gal. 5:19-21, Eph. 5:5)? Have you ever understood why, my reader? Do you know the eternal significance of the event when Rahab was ushered out of Jericho and into the midst of Israel (Joshua 7)? Notably, the Israelites which began their pilgrimage through the Red Sea were all-holy and all-regenerate (see [Chapter 1](#), [Chapter 2](#), & [Chapter 3](#)), therefore all of them were worthy to inherit the glories of Heaven at that time. Therefore, also, when and if Israel was contaminated by “rebels” and there were no men of God to fulfill the public executions required by the letter of the Law, God intervened to do the deed. God intervened BECAUSE it is impossible that rebels should inherit Heaven! Therefore, God said, “I WILL **purge out from among you the rebels**, and **them that transgress** against Me: I WILL **bring them forth out of the country** where they sojourn, and **they shall not ENTER into the Land of Israel**: and ye shall know that I am the LORD...For in **Mine Holy Mountain, the Mountain** of the height of Israel, saith the Lord GOD, there shall **ALL the House of Israel, ALL OF THEM OF THE LAND**, serve Me: there will I accept them, and there will I require your offerings, and the firstfruits of your oblations, with all your holy things” (Ezek. 20:38-40).

Such men must be removed from Israel, my reader. Salvation is when Israel, Judah, and Ephraim are *no longer* meeting the caricature spoken of old, “he hath **mixed himself** among the people; **Ephraim** is a cake not turned. **Strangers** have devoured his strength, and he knoweth it not...” (Hos. 7:8-9). Therefore as a declaration of salvation, God said, “O Judah, keep thy solemn feasts, perform thy vows: for **the wicked shall no more pass through thee**; he is utterly cut off” (Nah. 1:15). When Israel made inordinate unions with strange lovers inwardly, God turned their lovers against Israel so that by invasion, outwardly, it was written of Israel: “Your **country** is desolate, your **cities** are burned with fire: your **land, strangers** devour it in your presence, and it is desolate, as overthrown by **strangers**” (Isa. 1:7). For good reason it was written, standing as a typological expression of our King David who is Jesus Christ (Ezek. 34:23-24, Jer. 30:9): “**A froward heart shall depart from me**: I will not know **a wicked person**. **Whoso privily slandereth his neighbour**, him **will I cut off**: **him that hath an high look and a proud heart will not I suffer**. Mine eyes shall be upon **the faithful of the Land**, that they may **dwell with me**: **he that walketh in a perfect way, he shall serve me**. **He that worketh deceit shall not dwell within my house**: **he that telleth lies shall not tarry in my sight**. I will early destroy **all the wicked of the Land**; that I may cut off **all wicked doers from the city of the LORD**” (Psalm 101:4-8).

What does it mean for Israel to, as God said, “put on Thy strength”? What does it mean for Israel to, as God said, “put on thy beautiful garments”? At the time when the “Arm of the LORD” is awakened and made bare, Israel shall “trust” in the Lord (Isa. 51:5, 9), but... to what beautification? As God’s Arm awakens to act, so also Israel, Jerusalem, and Zion will awaken to their beautification, that “henceforth there shall **no more come into [Israel] the uncircumcised and the unclean**” (Isa. 52:1)! Their exodus out of Babylon and their regathering within Israelite borders was and will be by this very act: “The LORD hath made bare His holy arm in the eyes of all the nations; and all the ends of the earth shall see the salvation of our God” (Isa. 52:10). This passage does, with inferiority, declare the Regathering of God’s people into Israel after the Assyrian and Babylonian Captivities. It does also, with inferiority, declare the **1st Advent** of Christ (Isa. 52:7, 53:1). Notwithstanding it does, furthermore, with superiority and entirety, declare the **2nd Advent** of Christ - therefore Israel’s regathering thereto and salvation within happens by this one single act! In preparation of this act God calls forth Israel’s regathering, saying, “**Depart ye, depart ye**, go ye out from thence, **touch no unclean thing**; go ye out of the midst of her; **be ye clean**, that bear the vessels of the LORD” (Isa. 52:11). For good reason the Lord says, “be ye clean”, for *these individuals* are going forth to enter within *The Land of Israel & Judah* and *The Gates of Jerusalem* as inheritors of *The Kingdom of God*, from thence to ascend the holy hill of *Mount Zion* to appear before God forever!

With all scripture heretofore considered, applied, and fulfilled, the inhabitants of *The Land of Israel and Judah* were exclusively: “**the upright**”, “**the perfect**”, “**He that putteth his truth in Me**”, “**the faithful**”, “**he that walketh in a perfect way**”, and those who are “**clean**” (Prov. 2:21, Isa. 57:13, Ps. 101:4-8, Isa. 52:11). Those who were eradicated from *The Land of Israel and Judah* via the death penalty were, very specifically: “**the wicked**”, “**the transgressors**”, “**rebels**”, “**them**”

that transgress against Me”, “a froward heart”, “a wicked person”, “whoso privily slandereth his neighbor”, “him that hath an high look and a proud heart”, “he that worketh deceit”, “he that telleth lies”, “all wicked doers” in whatever name “they” are called - “the uncircumcised”, “the unclean”, and the “unclean thing” (Prov. 2:22, Ezek. 20:38-40, Nah. 1:15, Ps. 101:4-8, Ezek. 13:9, Isa. 52:1, 11). With the death penalty successfully exercised and the scripture fulfilled, the inhabitants of the Land did *hear, fear*, and shun *wickedness* in all forms; one of which included *mixing* with *strangers* (Hos. 7:8-9). *The Land of Israel and Judah* was established by God that it might be a Sanctuary of HOLINESS in this very specific way, my reader! Oh, but we want a more tolerable holiness that we have invented! Shun it, my reader. On God’s terms, “let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, **perfecting holiness** in the fear of God” (2 Cor. 7:1).

After surveying all the aforementioned scriptures, it is apparent that Israel was intended to be **territorially clean**, according to the Law. Shockingly, though, this is demonstrated in more ways than the expulsion of sinners from the Holy Land. *Everything outside* of Israel was considered **territorially unclean**, my reader! E-V-E-R-Y-T-H-I-N-G! In other words, *everything inside* of Israel was intended to be **territorially clean**, Lawfully speaking. This is easily discernable when reading the history of how Israel conquered the native peoples of The Promised Land. When God first gave the Israelites the Promised Land, He forbade the cohabitation of Israel and Gentile Nations. On this vein, God demanded the total annihilation of all Gentiles which abode in the Promised Land (Ex. 23:20-33, 34:11-14, Lev. 18:24-30, 20:22-27, Num. 33:51-56, Deut. 7:1-6, 16-19, 23-26, 12:1-4, 29-32, 18:9-14, 20:16-18, 23:1-17, Josh. 23:2-16, Judges 2:2-3). God was intent upon eradicating from the Land of Israel every person, tradition, and custom of all Gentile peoples, that He might, in turn, preserve Israel as a holy and set-apart people unto Himself (“*I am the LORD your God, which have **separated** you from other people*” - Lev. 20:24).

According to God’s Law the Gentiles were unclean - their religion, way of life, culture, customs, manners, and traditions made them so to be (Lev. 18:24-30, 20:22-27) - therefore in the process of war to inhabit the Land of Canaan, while the Israelites were utterly eradicating the peoples and customs of the Canaanites, there was a difference maintained between the Israelites who were defiled at war and those who remained clean at the main camp of settlement. According to God’s Law the Israelites were cleansed and commanded to remain clean and holy: in clothing (Deut. 22:5, 11-12), farming (Deut. 22:9-10), eating (Lev. 20:25), taxing (Ex. 22:25, Lev. 25:36-37, Deut. 23:19), living (Ps. 34:12-16, Deut. 32:39), dying (i.e. funeral ceremonies: Num. 19:16-18), and even in the excrement of their waste (Deut. 23:12-14), to name a few. In Israel every man (Prov. 5:21, 19:16), household (Prov. 3:32-35, 12:17), city (Eccl. 7:19, Prov. 11:11, 29:8, Deut. 28:3, 16), and province (Eccl. 5:8), and the entirety of the Land and Nation (Prov. 2:20-22, 10:27, 30), all of it belonged immediately and especially to God, therefore the Gentiles were considered aliens, strangers, and enemies to the progress and prosperity of religion and society.

To squelch any possible mixing of these two peoples, the Israelites were commanded to slaughter everything that breathed throughout the entire countryside of the Land of Canaan. Shockingly, this meant that no person or animal was salvageable from the curse of **territorial uncleanness** (Deut. 20:16-18)! Furthermore, also, if Israel happened to go to war against any non-Canaanite City or Nation, even though the rules of war were altered from the course of total annihilation, the code of cleanliness was maintained through the maintenance of Divine ceremonies. In the event of war with non-Canaanite Cities or Nations *all the males* of the society were to be slain... but nothing more. Therefore, circumstances permitting, *everyone* and *everything* else was salvageable from **territorial uncleanness** (Deut. 20:10-15)... but how? The salvageable *persons* and *objects* from these Cities or Nations needed to undergo a **cleansing** ceremony of **purification** before entering the settlement Camp or territory of Israel (**a clean place**). Cleansed things belong in clean places, my reader! Ceremonial instructions of purification were specified categorically according to what the object was: a person (Num. 31:19), an imperishable object (Num. 31:21-24), or a perishable object (Num. 31:21-24). All these rules of war and ceremonies of cleansing existed because the Land of Israel – *Itself* – was meant to be **a clean place**; and when and if that which was ordained and intended to be clean was defiled, it happened via unlawful bloodshed (Num. 35:33, Deut. 21:23), sexual sin (Deut. 24:4), idolatry (Jer. 3:9, 16:18, Ezek. 36:17), and the increase of all kinds of iniquity, transgression, and sin (Jer. 2:7, Ezek. 22:24, Lev. 18:25, 27). Therefore, my reader, it is an indisputable fact: the concept

of **territorial uncleanness** was introduced to Israel by the Law and enforced among Israel through the power of Divine-anger all throughout biblical history, according to the scriptures.

The Kingdom of God

*“I AM a great KING, saith the LORD of hosts,
and My Name is dreadful among the heathen” – Malachi 1:14*

We know that in Israel, God was KING. Before an earthly King was ever set up in the days of the prophet Samuel, God was KING. God’s Kingship is an eternal office, without a doubt, but within time this attribute of God was not always apparent. Therefore seeing that *The Kingdom of God* was increasingly manifest throughout the ages of human redemption, nativity to maturity, a brief survey is necessary for our topic of study. Notable points of the progressive manifestation of *The Kingdom of God* are numerically ordered below.

#1) Kings rule a people, thus God had an earthly Throne in the midst of His people Israel.

This was true before Israel had their own Land to inhabit and defend. When Israel did sojourn in tents and dwell in camps, the most notable component of any Kingdom could be seen. It was, namely, the very Throne itself. “The LORD reigneth; let the people tremble: **He sitteth between the cherubims**; let the earth be moved” (Ps. 99:1). Speaking of this Throne, God said to Moses, “*there* I will meet with thee, and I will commune with thee **from above the mercy seat, from between the two cherubims which are upon the ark of testimony**, of all things which I will give thee in commandment unto the children of Israel” (Ex. 25:22). *The Most Holy Place* and *The Ark* were, in modern terms, *The Throne Room* and *The Throne* in and upon which God Almighty reigned on earth! This visible room and earthly seat did house and support the invisible KING of Israel! And what is more amazing is that *the physical elements* represent *spiritual realities*! Seeing this invisible reality, David declared, “[God] rode upon a Cherub, and did fly: yea, He did fly upon the wings of the wind” (Ps. 18:10)! Can you see *the mystery*, my reader? Can you see why the saints of Israel did address God in prayer, saying, “Thou that dwellest between the Cherubims, **SHINE FORTH**” (Ps. 80:1)! The Almighty was not confined to that earthly room, was He? Nay, the room in which God was housed, the throne upon which He sat, and the Cherubim statues’ in which He was among – these were mere symbols of the transcending radiance by which GOD was KING in Israel!

#2) Kings rule territories, thus God had a Land over which He ruled.

At the first, long ago, God named the territory which He claimed for Himself and His people (see Gen. 15:18-21). God chose this Land and the generation which would possess it. When the generation came which God enabled to take possession of the Land, the KING wrote a *Law* by which He would govern the Land and people (Gen. 15:13-16, Ex. 3:17).

#3) Kings rule by Law, thus God had a Government to enforce what was written.

God took the people of Israel which were purchased by ransom and brought them to Sinai. For what? It was written, “The LORD came from Sinai, and rose up from Seir unto them; He shined forth from Mount Paran, and He came with ten thousands of saints: from His right hand went a fiery Law for them. Yea, He loved the people; all His saints are in Thy hand: and they sat down at Thy feet; every one shall receive of Thy words. Moses commanded us **a Law**, even the inheritance of the congregation of Jacob. And **HE WAS KING** in Jeshurun, when the heads of the people and the tribes of Israel were gathered together” (Deut. 33:2-5). The physical government of Israel did not exist in the infrastructure seen in heathen nations at Moses’ time, the time in which Deuteronomy 33:2-5 was written. The governmental infrastructure changed in the days of the prophet Samuel (1 Sam. 8:7, 12:12). From Moses to Samuel God was KING through this means: **firstly**, through Spirit-filled Prophets (Ex. 19:9, 1 Sam. 7:16), **secondarily**, through Princes/Elders (Num. 1:16, 11:16-17, 25-26, Deut. 1:15), and **thirdly**, through Levitical Judges. During the days of

Samuel the people rejected *the most pure* form of God's Government. They lusted after the infrastructure of heathen nations instead of God's Government until, tragically, they rejected God as KING. As a result, God did not relinquish His rule as KING – this is impossible! – but He did yield to their request to change the means of Government so that, henceforth, from Samuel to the Captivities, God's Rule was implemented: **firstly**, through Kings (Deut. 17:14-20), **secondarily**, through Spirit-filled Prophets (2 Chron. 20:20, Amos 3:7), **thirdly**, through Princes/Elders (Prov. 28:2, Eccl. 10:17), **fourthly**, through Priests and Levitical Judges (Deut. 17:8-13, 1 Chron. 23:2, 4, 2 Chron. 30:22, Neh. 8:1-12). There were many different seasons in which God's ordained method of Government decayed, thus inferior manifestations of God's Rule did intermittently mark the ages, but in seasons of revival - the KING, King, and Kingdom of Israel flourished in worldwide fame and glory!

#4) Kings invade, conquer, and defend, thus God had armies of sword-drawn men to command.

Since the days of Abraham (Gen. 15:18-21), ten different nations were already established and thriving in what God would eventually call, "The Holy Land" (Zech. 2:12). At that time, from Abraham's day to the Exodus generation, the chosen Land was defiled underneath the native inhabitants because of their wicked and abominable sin against their Creator. Because of this, to say the least: God intended to *invade and conquer!* For God, *this was righteous* (Deut. 9:4-5). The fame and success of this invasion won for God the title, "The LORD of hosts, the God of the armies of Israel" (1 Sam. 17:45). Swords are drawn to defend Lords: their properties, familial inheritances, geographic Kingdoms, and all such things that belong to Kings; the enforcement of Law was by sword-drawn men (Rom. 13:4).

#5) Kings fight battles, thus God went out with the forces of Israel to war.

Moses said, "The LORD is a Man of War: the LORD is His Name" (Ex. 15:3). Isaiah said, "The LORD shall go forth as a Mighty Man, He shall stir up jealousy like a Man of War: He shall CRY, yea, ROAR; He shall prevail against His enemies" (Isa. 42:13)! Therefore Joshua – who was the highest officer in the armies of Israel – beheld a vision at the onset of God's invasion into The Holy Land: "behold, there stood a Man over against [Joshua] with His sword drawn in His hand" (Josh. 5:13). This mysterious Man then confessed, "as captain of the Host of the LORD am I now come. And Joshua fell on his face to the earth, and did *worship...*" (Josh. 5:14). Kingdoms are established and ruled by sword-drawn men, yes, but the KING of Israel was The Sword-Drawn Man!

All of these details have been reviewed to emphasize that in Israel, God was KING: of a people, a territory, by Law, through Government, by war through battles in which God commanded and fought. In all of this, God was the center. This means that, furthermore, on the basis of the KING's *pleasure* the Kingdom prospered and Israel was undefeatable, or on the basis of the KING's *displeasure* the Kingdom fell and Israel was slaughtered. The King's *pleasure* or *displeasure* was the single most important factor of gain and loss, prosperity and catastrophe, or life and death in Israel! Oh, my reader, let this saying sink down into your ears! God was pleased with **HOLINESS**.

God's Kingdom was born a "Holy Nation" (Ex. 19:6), scripture states, and God intended that it would persevere a Holy Nation. God Himself bore witness to the people why He did what He did: "Ye have seen what I did unto the Egyptians, and *how* I bare you on eagles' wings, and brought you unto Myself. Now therefore, **if ye will obey My voice** indeed, and keep My covenant, then ye shall be a peculiar treasure unto Me above all people: for all the earth *is* Mine: And ye shall be unto Me a kingdom of Priests, and an **Holy Nation**" (Ex. 19:4-6). Nevertheless, sadly, many generations were interrupted from their promise-bound course of salvation, glory, and victory in "The Kingdom of God" because they did not comprehend *the necessity of holiness!* The KING made *these terms* very clear, my reader... but do we comprehend them? Oh, my soul! How estranged have we become to the personality of GOD that we cannot remember His pleasure: "**HOLINESS**, without which no man shall see the Lord" (Heb. 12:14)!? Nor did Old Testament Israel remember it, my reader, to their eventual demise and everlasting shame (most of them!).

God gave *terms* and *conditions*, you might say, but they are better known as *promises* - some to **salvation** and some to **damnation**.

A Promise of Salvation: When the scripture declares/promises salvation upon any person who, by “such and such” conduct (all necessary faith and repentance required by God wrought by provisional grace), will inevitably become what the word of the Lord has promised.

A Promise of Damnation: When the scripture declares/promises damnation upon any person who, by “such and such” conduct (sins of commission or omission), will inevitably become what the word of the Lord has promised.

The Exodus Generation beheld with their own eyes *the salvation* which would become their hope in future conquests. It was told to them in these words, “**The LORD shall FIGHT FOR YOU**, and ye shall hold your peace” (Ex. 14:14). On the very edge of Heaven (The Promised Land) it was said, yet again, “Dread not, neither be afraid of them. The LORD your God which goeth before you, **He shall FIGHT FOR YOU**, according to all that He did for you in Egypt before your eyes” (Duet. 1:29-30). The Exodus Generation fell short of these promises because they were not *mixed with faith* in them that heard them (Heb. 3:16-4:1, Deut. 1:32), and, thus, after their carcasses were wasted in the wilderness and their children were risen up in their stead, the LORD said, “Ye shall not fear them: for the LORD your God He shall **FIGHT FOR YOU**” (Duet. 3:22). This was the language of salvation to Israel, communicated in promises which could be resisted and denied through unbelief.

If these promises of salvation *were believed* then the commandments of God were not burdensome to the Israelites. This is because, it was written,

“And ye **shall** chase your enemies and they **shall** fall before you by the sword. And five of you **shall** chase an hundred, and an hundred of you **shall** put ten thousand to flight: and your enemies **shall** fall before you by the sword.” – Lev. 26:7-8

“Blessed **shalt** thou be when thou comest in, and blessed **shalt** thou be when thou goest out. The LORD **shall** cause thine enemies that rise up against thee to be smitten before thy face: they **shall** come out against thee one way, and flee before thee seven ways.” – Deut. 28:6-7

What a glorious experience this must have been! When, namely, God led forth His army to victory! The songs of Israel did resound, “Let God arise, and let His enemies be scattered: let them that hate Him flee before Him” (Ps. 68:1)! Shockingly, this was literal. This song was literally fulfilled in real time before their very eyes! Can you imagine being a part of the camp of Israel which sojourned in the wilderness, and then, suddenly, the pillar of Cloud was removed from its resting place yonder to lead the march toward the distant battlefield!? As soon as the camp did move forward to follow the pillar of Cloud, do you know what thoughts were stirring in the heart of the Israelites who followed on? “And it came to pass, when **The Ark [The Throne]** set forward, that Moses said, **RISE UP, LORD, and LET THINE ENEMIES BE SCATTERED;** and let them that hate Thee **FLEE BEFORE THEE**. And when it rested, he said, Return, O LORD, unto the many thousands of Israel” (Num. 10:35-36). Oh, my reader! With what anticipation would a believing Israelite approach the battle line knowing that GOD ALMIGHTY was in the front of the host!? And, on the contrary, with what presumption and foolishness would an Israelite go to war without the ark of God going before them (Num. 14:44)!?

With all things prepared and all conditions fulfilled, strong effort was given to keep the people believing in God (“*Who through faith subdued kingdoms, wrought righteousness, obtained promises...*” – Heb. 11:33). Speaking on this wise, it was written,

“When thou goest out to battle against thine enemies, and seest horses, and chariots, and a people more than thou, **be not afraid of them: for the LORD thy God is with thee, which brought thee up out of the Land of Egypt**. And it shall be, when ye are come nigh unto the battle, that the Priest shall approach and speak unto the people, And shall say unto them, Hear, O Israel, ye approach this day unto battle against your enemies: **let not your hearts faint, fear not, and do not tremble, neither be ye terrified because of them; For the LORD your God is He that goeth with you, to fight for you against your enemies, to save you.**” – Deut. 20:1-4

In all the former passages which we have just covered – the passages which express a promise for salvation – the acts of faith were manifest in unwavering fearlessness and undaunted confidence before enemy hosts, a minding of the former works of salvation wrought by God to the wit, at the present time, their expectation was for unconquerable victory! GOD Almighty expected nothing less than absolute victory for Israel and utter destruction of the inhabitants of The Promised Land. The LORD commanded, “thou shalt **save alive nothing that breatheth**: but thou shalt **utterly destroy** them” (Deut. 20:16-17). Does that shock you, my reader?

This commandment was unusual behavior in pastime or modern warfare. Ordinarily upon a victory at war, those who remained alive were made to serve as tributaries to the victor, but God forbade this option during the conquest of The Promised Land. God commanded total annihilation, or what the world would *slander* as genocide. Why? Think of it, my reader. To fully annihilate every living person was both meticulous and exhausting, and it was also unwise and unprofitable according to *the wisdom of the world* at that time. Such a task would be exhausting because after battles were won, the defeated people scatter into remote areas for hiding or refuge. They could resettle in the mountains or the woods, or in remote cities if there were any which could serve as a refuge. To survey the Land in search for them was no small enterprise. Furthermore, such a task could be called unwise and unprofitable because making the defeated people tributaries was both quicker and financially boosting. Seeing this is the case, how did the warriors of Israel agree with the command of their God and KING? Only a certain frame of heart could tirelessly kill and kill until all was accomplished, don't you think?

The LORD commanded Israel, “And thou shalt **consume all the people** which the LORD thy God shall deliver thee; **thine eye shall have NO PITY** upon them...” (Deut. 7:16). Think of it, my reader! “NO PITY” – when before a weeping teenage girl, when before a mourning old woman, when before a mother with child, when before children in the streets! No man in his *natural mind* could accomplish this task unless they were filled with the same righteous motivations which burned in the heart of their God and KING; until they, like God, had no more pity left in them! God wanted Israel to be morally and legally repulsed at the nations which inhabited The Promised Land; and Israel, being so filled with this righteous and moral hatred, would exercise their swords according to what justice required. The heart of Israel shouted, “The fear of the LORD is to hate evil: pride, and arrogance, and the evil way, and the froward mouth, do I hate” (Prov. 8:13)! – thus they were warriors for God.

This pitiless and merciless hatred was moral because God commanded it, my reader. God hated these people and Israel was required to be like God (i.e. in legal agreement with God; Lev. 20:23). In the sense that the inhabitants of The Promised Land were legally repulsive, legally unclean, legally condemned, and legally penalized with total annihilation with no possibility of pity or mercy, *Israel hated them*. The legal case that God had against the Canaanites was made clear to Israel. At the beginning, when God first decided to overthrow the nations of The Promised Land and give the Land to His people for an inheritance, it was required that Abraham would wait 400 years because, God said, “*the iniquity* of the Amorites was not yet FULL” (Gen. 15:16); and, furthermore, when it became full, the hour of their merciless and total annihilation was merited as a just recompense, according to the scriptures. It was written,

“Defile not ye yourselves in any of these things: for in all these **the nations are defiled** which I cast out before you: And **the Land is defiled: therefore I do visit the iniquity thereof upon it, and the Land itself vomiteth out her inhabitants**. Ye shall therefore keep my statutes and my judgments, and shall not commit any of these abominations; neither any of your own nation, nor any stranger that sojourneth among you: **(For all these abominations have the men of the Land done, which were before you, and the Land is defiled;)** That the Land spue not you out also, when ye defile it, as it spued out the nations that were before you. For whosoever shall commit any of these abominations, even the souls that commit them shall be cut off from among their people. Therefore shall ye keep mine ordinance, that ye commit not any one of these **abominable customs**, which were committed before you, and that ye defile not yourselves therein: I am the LORD your God.” – Lev. 18:24-30

“Ye shall therefore keep all my statutes, and all my judgments, and do them: that the Land, whither I bring you to dwell therein, spue you not out. And **ye shall not walk in the manners of the nation, which I cast out before**

you: for they committed all these things, and therefore I abhorred them. But I have said unto you, Ye shall inherit their land, and I will give it unto you to possess it, a land that floweth with milk and honey: I am the LORD your God, which have **separated you** from other people. Ye shall therefore put **difference** between **clean** beasts and **unclean**, and **between unclean** fowls and **clean**: and ye shall not make your souls abominable by beast, or by fowl, or by any manner of living thing that creepeth on the ground, which I have **separated** from you as unclean. And ye shall be **holy** unto me: for I the LORD am holy, and have **severed you** from other people, **that ye should be Mine.** A man also or woman that hath a familiar spirit, or that is a wizard, shall surely be put to death: they shall stone them with stones: their blood shall be upon them.” – Lev. 20:22-27

“Hear, O Israel: Thou art to pass over Jordan this day, to go in to possess nations greater and mightier than thyself, cities great and fenced up to heaven, A people great and tall, the children of the Anakims, whom thou knowest, and of whom thou hast heard say, Who can stand before the children of Anak! Understand therefore this day, that the LORD thy God is he which goeth over before thee; as a consuming fire **He shall destroy them, and He shall bring them down before thy face: so shalt thou drive them out, and destroy them quickly,** as the LORD hath said unto thee. Speak not thou in thine heart, after that the LORD thy God hath cast them out from before thee, saying, For my righteousness the LORD hath brought me in to possess this land: but **for the wickedness of these nations the LORD doth drive them out from before thee.** Not for thy righteousness, or for the uprightness of thine heart, dost thou go to possess their land: **but for the wickedness of these nations the LORD thy God doth drive them out from before thee,** and that he may perform the word which the LORD swore unto thy fathers, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.” – Deut. 9:1-5

Israel was very conscious why God was intent upon destroying all the nations of The Promised Land. In the process, they became conscious of God’s furious hatred of sin. They learned to hate what God hated, at least in the beginning. Thus far, according to the scriptures, Israel needed faith-empowered fearlessness and confidence in God for the victory, and, furthermore, the victory was not to be enjoyed for the sheer excitement of war or the advantages of personal gain. No! Israel was commanded to fight and win, yes, but their warfare was to be fueled by a burning sense of justice to hate, to destroy, and to fully annihilate. If they failed to have such a heart – to be driven to kill and spare not – damnation would fall upon Israel. God was so furiously opposed to the inhabitants of The Promised Land that if Israel did not destroy them, God would turn against Israel. On this condition God promised Israel damnation, my reader... but do we understand the language of it? God promised,

“it will surely be a **snare** unto thee” – Ex. 23:33

“lest it be for a **snare** in the midst of thee” – Ex. 34:12

“that will be a **snare** unto thee” – Deut. 7:16

“lest thou be **snared** therein” – Deut. 7:25

“take heed to thyself that thou be not **snared** by following them” – Deut. 12:30

“those which ye let remain of them shall be **pricks in your eyes,** and **thorns in your sides,** and shall **vex you** in the Land wherein ye dwell” – Numbers 33:55

“they shall be as **thorns in your sides** and their gods shall be a **snare** unto you” – Judges 2:3

Oh, my reader, do we understand the metaphorical language undertaken by God whereby He promised certain damnation to His ransomed and beloved people? By interpretation and in more apparent terms, God said,

“they shall be **snakes** and **traps** unto you, and **scourges in your sides,** and **thorns in your eyes, UNTIL YE PERISH** from off this good Land” – Josh 23:13

“they will **turn away thy son from following Me,** that they may serve other gods” – Deut. 7:4

“That they **teach you not to do after all their abominations,** which they have done unto their gods; **so should ye sin** against the LORD your God.” – Deut. 20:18

“lest they **make thee sin** against Me” – Ex. 23:33

“lest thou **be cursed** like it” – Deut. 7:26

Can you see *the interpretation*, my reader? These nations were doomed to total annihilation so that Israel would be totally preserved from damnation! The “snare”, which was as “pricks” in the eyes and “thorns” in the sides, which was as “traps” and “scourges” – they did turn the people away from “following” the LORD (Duet. 7:4), and they taught the people “to do” all manner of abominations and “sin” (Deut. 20:18); they were thereby made to sin (Ex. 23:33) and brought under the curse of damnation (Deut. 7:26)! These “snares”, “traps”, “scourges”, and “thorns” took hold upon the people so that they would unwillingly decline from the path of righteousness over time, the paths of righteousness they once adored (Josh. 23:13)! According to God’s promise, this happened until Israel perished from off the good Land (“until ye perish” – Josh. 23:13)! My reader, it is important that we see that these were **promises of damnation**, but it is equally important to see what conduct (sins of *commission* or *omission*) merited the performance of this woeful fate. A promise of damnation is when the scripture declares/promises damnation upon any person who, by “such and such” conduct (sins of *commission* or *omission*), will inevitably become what the word of the Lord has promised. In survey of the former verses, God commanded,

“utterly overthrow them”	“destroy their altars”	“drive out all the inhabitants”
“quite break down their images”	“break their images”	“destroy all their pictures”
“drive them out from before thee”	“cut down their groves”	“destroy all their molten images”
“make no covenant with them”	“Lest thou make a covenant...”	“quite pluck down all their high places”
“they shall not dwell in thy Land”	“and they go whoring”	“dispossess the inhabitants”
– Ex. 23:23-24, 31-33	– Ex. 34:11-17	– Num. 33:51-56
“smite them”	“overthrow their altars”	“come not among these nations”
“utterly destroy them”	“break their pillars”	“neither make mention”
“make no covenant with them”	“burn their groves with fire”	“nor bow yourselves”
“nor shew mercy unto them”	“hew down the graven images”	– Joshua 23:1-16
“neither shalt thou make marriages”	“destroy the names”	
“destroy their altars”	– Duet. 12:1-4, 29-32	
“break down their images”		
“cut down their groves”	“save alive nothing”	
“burn their graven images with fire”	“utterly destroy them”	
“thine eye shall have no pity”	“that they teach you not”	
“burn with fire”	– Deut. 20:16-18	
– Deut. 7:1-6, 16-21, 25-26		

The Principle Command

“thou shalt not **learn**”
“there shall not be found **among you**”
“thou shalt **be perfect**”
– Deut. 18:9-14

See for yourself, my reader. Examine the context of these commands thoroughly. If these commands were left undone by Israel via sins of *omission*, the promises of damnation would overtake them and destroy them – the saints of Israel would inevitably become sinners nationwide! Though the process of degeneration be subtle in its progress, the doom is suddenly realized. Consider the witness of biblical history below and you will see the awful course, my reader, just as it panned out.

“For mine Angel shall go before thee, and bring thee in unto the Amorites, and the Hittites, and the Perizzites, and the Canaanites, the Hivites, and the Jebusites: and I will cut them off. Thou shalt not bow down to their gods, nor serve them, nor do after their works: but **thou shalt utterly overthrow them, and quite break down their images...** And I will set thy bounds from the Red sea even unto the sea of the Philistines, and from the desert unto the river: for I will deliver the inhabitants of the Land into your hand; and **thou shalt drive them out before thee.** Thou shalt **make no covenant with them**, nor with their gods. **They shall not dwell in thy land, lest they make thee sin against me:** for if thou serve their gods, **it will surely be a snare unto thee.**” – Exodus 23:23-24, 31-33

“Observe thou that which I command thee this day: behold, I drive out before thee the Amorite, and the Canaanite, and the Hittite, and the Perizzite, and the Hivite, and the Jebusite. Take heed to thyself, **lest thou make a covenant with the inhabitants of the Land whither thou goest, lest it be for a snare in the midst of thee:** But ye shall **destroy their altars, break their images, and cut down their groves:** For thou shalt worship no other

god: for the LORD, whose name is Jealous, is a jealous God: **Lest thou make a covenant with the inhabitants of the Land, and they go a whoring** after their gods, and do sacrifice unto their gods, and one call thee, and thou eat of his sacrifice; And thou take of their daughters unto thy sons, and their daughters **go a whoring** after their gods, and **make thy sons go a whoring** after their gods. Thou shalt make thee no molten gods.” – Exodus 34:11-17

“Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, When ye are passed over Jordan into the Land of Canaan; Then ye shall **drive out all the inhabitants** of the Land from before you, and **destroy all their pictures**, and **destroy all their molten images**, and **quite pluck down all their high places**: And ye shall **dispossess the inhabitants** of the Land, and dwell therein: for I have given you the Land to possess it. And ye shall divide the Land by lot for an inheritance among your families: and to the more ye shall give the more inheritance, and to the fewer ye shall give the less inheritance: every man's inheritance shall be in the place where his lot falleth; according to the tribes of your fathers ye shall inherit. **But if ye will not drive out the inhabitants of the Land from before you; then it shall come to pass, that those which ye let remain of them shall be pricks in your eyes, and thorns in your sides, and shall vex you in the Land wherein ye dwell. Moreover it shall come to pass, that I shall do unto you, as I thought to do unto them.**” – Numbers 33:51-56

“When the LORD thy God shall bring thee into the Land whither thou goest to possess it, and hath **cast out** many nations before thee, the Hittites, and the Girgashites, and the Amorites, and the Canaanites, and the Perizzites, and the Hivites, and the Jebusites, seven nations greater and mightier than thou; And when the LORD thy God shall deliver them before thee; thou shalt **smite them**, and **utterly destroy them**; thou shalt **make no covenant with them, nor shew mercy unto them**: **Neither shalt thou make marriages with them**; thy daughter thou shalt not give unto his son, nor his daughter shalt thou take unto thy son. **For they will turn away thy son from following me, that they may serve other gods: so will the anger of the LORD be kindled against you, and destroy thee suddenly.** But thus shall ye deal with them; ye shall **destroy their altars**, and **break down their images**, and **cut down their groves**, and **burn their graven images with fire**. For thou art an **holy people** unto the LORD thy God: the LORD thy God hath chosen thee to be **a special people** unto himself, above all people that are upon the face of the earth... And thou shalt **consume all the people** which the LORD thy God shall deliver thee; **thine eye shall have no pity upon them**: neither shalt thou serve their gods; **for that will be a snare unto thee**. If thou shalt say in thine heart, ‘These nations are more than I; how can I dispossess them?’ **Thou shalt not be afraid of them**: but shalt well remember what the LORD thy God did unto Pharaoh, and unto all Egypt; The great temptations which thine eyes saw, and the signs, and the wonders, and the mighty hand, and the stretched out arm, whereby the LORD thy God brought thee out: so shall the LORD thy God do unto all the people of whom thou art afraid. Moreover the LORD thy God will send the hornet among them, until they that are left, and hide themselves from thee, be destroyed. **Thou shalt not be affrighted at them: for the LORD thy God is among you, a mighty God and terrible...** The graven images of their gods shall ye **burn with fire: thou shalt not desire the silver or gold that is on them, nor take it unto thee, lest thou be snared therein: for it is an abomination to the LORD thy God. Neither shalt thou bring an abomination into thine house, lest thou be a cursed thing like it: but thou shalt utterly detest it, and thou shalt utterly abhor it; for it is a cursed thing.**” – Deut. 7:1-6, 16-21, 25-26

“These are the statutes and judgments, which ye shall observe to do in the Land, which the LORD God of thy fathers giveth thee to possess it, all the days that ye live upon the earth. Ye shall **utterly destroy** all the places, wherein the nations which ye shall possess served their gods, upon the high mountains, and upon the hills, and under every green tree: And ye shall **overthrow their altars**, and **break their pillars**, and **burn their groves with fire**; and ye shall **hew down the graven images** of their gods, and **destroy the names** of them out of that place. Ye shall not do so unto the LORD your God... When the LORD thy God shall **cut off** the nations from before thee, whither thou goest to possess them, and thou succeedest them, and dwellest in their land; **Take heed to thyself that thou be not snared by following them, after that they be destroyed from before thee; and that thou enquire not after their gods, saying, How did these nations serve their gods? even so will I do likewise. Thou shalt not do so unto the LORD thy God: for every abomination to the LORD, which he**

hateth, have they done unto their gods; for even their sons and their daughters they have burnt in the fire to their gods. What thing soever I command you, observe to do it: thou shalt not add thereto, nor diminish from it.” – Deut. 12:1-4, 29-32

“When thou art come into the Land which the LORD thy God giveth thee, **thou shalt not learn** to do after the abominations of those nations. **There shall not be found among you** any one that maketh his son or his daughter to pass through the fire, or that useth divination, or an observer of times, or an enchanter, or a witch, Or a charmer, or a consulter with familiar spirits, or a wizard, or a necromancer. For all that do these things are an abomination unto the LORD: and because of these abominations the LORD thy God doth drive them out from before thee. **Thou shalt be perfect** with the LORD thy God. For these nations, which thou shalt possess, hearkened unto observers of times, and unto diviners: but as for thee, the LORD thy God hath not suffered thee so to do.” – Deut. 18:9-14

“But of the cities of these people, which the LORD thy God doth give thee for an inheritance, thou shalt **save alive nothing** that breatheth: But thou shalt **utterly destroy them**; namely, the Hittites, and the Amorites, the Canaanites, and the Perizzites, the Hivites, and the Jebusites; as the LORD thy God hath commanded thee: **That they teach you not to do after all their abominations, which they have done unto their gods; so should ye sin against the LORD your God.**” – Deut. 20:16-18

“And it came to pass a long time after that the LORD had given rest unto Israel from all their enemies round about, that Joshua waxed old and stricken in age. And Joshua called for all Israel, and for their elders, and for their heads, and for their judges, and for their officers, and said unto them, I am old and stricken in age: And ye have seen all that the LORD your God hath done unto all these nations because of you; for the LORD your God is he that hath fought for you. Behold, I have divided unto you by lot these nations that remain, to be an inheritance for your tribes, from Jordan, with all the nations that I have cut off, even unto the great sea westward. And the LORD your God, he shall expel them from before you, and drive them from out of your sight; and ye shall possess their land, as the LORD your God hath promised unto you. **Be ye therefore very courageous** to keep and to do all that is written in the book of the Law of Moses, that ye turn not aside therefrom to the right hand or to the left; That ye **come not among these nations**, these that remain among you; **neither make mention** of the name of their gods, nor cause to swear by them, neither serve them, **nor bow yourselves** unto them: But cleave unto the LORD your God, as ye have done unto this day. For the LORD hath driven out from before you great nations and strong: but as for you, no man hath been able to stand before you unto this day. **One man of you shall chase a thousand: for the LORD your God, he it is that fighteth for you, as he hath promised you. Take good heed therefore unto yourselves, that ye love the LORD your God.** Else if ye do in any wise go back, and cleave unto the remnant of these nations, even these that remain among you, and shall make marriages with them, and go in unto them, and they to you: **Know for a certainty that the LORD your God will no more drive out any of these nations from before you; but they shall be snares and traps unto you, and scourges in your sides, and thorns in your eyes, until ye perish from off this good land which the LORD your God hath given you.** And, behold, this day I am going the way of all the earth: and ye know in all your hearts and in all your souls, that not one thing hath failed of all the good things which the LORD your God spake concerning you; all are come to pass unto you, and not one thing hath failed thereof. Therefore it shall come to pass, that as all good things are come upon you, which the LORD your God promised you; so shall the LORD bring upon you all evil things, until he have destroyed you from off this good land which the LORD your God hath given you. When ye have transgressed the covenant of the LORD your God, which he commanded you, and have gone and served other gods, and bowed yourselves to them; then shall the anger of the LORD be kindled against you, and ye shall perish quickly from off the good land which he hath given unto you.” – Joshua 23:1-16

What became of Israel confirms God’s promise of damnation. The promise was sure. The sins of *omission* were very specifically recorded in Judges Chapter 1. Future generations were expected to learn from the devastation that ensued when, alas, *small compromises* led to nationwide apostasy! When *a little leaven* of sinners did permeate and overcome the righteousness of the saints nationwide! When, shockingly, holiness went unperfected and salvation went unperformed!

“**Judah**...could not drive out” – Judges 1:19

“**Benjamin** did not drive out the Jebusites” – Judges 1:21

“Neither did **Manassah** drive out the inhabitants...but the Canaanites would **dwell in the Land**. And it came to pass, when Israel was strong, that they put the Canaanites **to tribute**, and **did not utterly drive them out**.” – Judges 1:27-28

“Neither did **Ephraim** drive out...” – Judges 1:29

“Neither did **Zebulun** drive out...but the Canaanites **dwelt among them**, and **became tributaries**.” – Judges 1:30

“Neither did **Asher** drive out...” – Judges 1:31

“Neither did **Naphtali** drive out...but he **dwelt among** the Canaanites...nevertheless the inhabitants...**became tributaries**” – Judges 1:32

“And the Amorites forced the children of **Dan** into the mountain...” – Judges 1:34

Here we see the awful *omission*... Israel in the deplorable condition which God warned against! We see no victory at war because there was no faith. We see no perseverance to fight because there was no hatred of the legally repulsive. We see no godly fear that sin can overtake Israel's saintliness and that sinners could nullify Israel's *saving separateness*. We see an immoral satisfaction with dwelling among those whom God forbade cohabitation. We see an obvious denial of the promise that hereby, by these sins of *commission* and *omission*, the saints of Israel were doomed to become sinners. Israel was in for a wakeup call which, when they heard it... they wept. It was written,

“And an angel of the LORD came up from Gilgal to Bochim, and said, I made you to go up out of Egypt, and have brought you unto the Land which I swear unto your fathers; and I said, I will never break my covenant with you. And ye shall **make no league** with the inhabitants of this land; ye shall **throw down their altars**: but YE HAVE NOT OBEYED MY VOICE: why have ye done this? Wherefore I also said, I will not drive them out from before you; but **they shall be as thorns in your sides, and their gods shall be a snare unto you**. And it came to pass, when the angel of the LORD spake these words unto all the children of Israel, that the people lifted up their voice, and wept. And they called the name of that place Bochim: and they sacrificed there unto the LORD.

And when Joshua had let the people go, the children of Israel went every man unto his inheritance to possess the Land. And the people served the LORD all the days of Joshua, and all the days of the elders that outlived Joshua, who had seen all the great works of the LORD, that he did for Israel. And Joshua the son of Nun, the servant of the LORD, died, being an hundred and ten years old. And they buried him in the border of his inheritance in Timnathheres, in the mount of Ephraim, on the north side of the hill Gaash.

And also all that generation were gathered unto their fathers: and there arose another generation after them, which knew not the LORD, nor yet the works which he had done for Israel. And the children of Israel did evil in the sight of the LORD, and served Baalim: And they forsook the LORD God of their fathers, which brought them out of the Land of Egypt, and followed other gods, of the gods of the people that were round about them, and bowed themselves unto them, and provoked the LORD to anger. And **they forsook the LORD**, and served Baal and Ashtaroth. **And the anger of the LORD was hot against Israel, and he delivered them into the hands of spoilers that spoiled them, and he sold them into the hands of their enemies round about, so that they could not any longer stand before their enemies. Whithersoever they went out, the hand of the LORD was against them for evil, as the LORD had said, and as the LORD had sworn unto them: and they were greatly distressed.**” – Judges 2:1-15

That which almost befell Joshua, befell the nation. God said to Joshua, “Israel hath sinned...therefore the children of Israel could not stand before their enemies, but turned their backs before their enemies, because they were accursed: NEITHER WILL I BE WITH YOU ANY MORE, except ye destroy the accursed from among you. UP, SANCTIFY THE PEOPLE...” (Josh. 7:11-13)! When Israel was found out to be in a deplorable condition of unholiness, what God commanded---Joshua did! He sanctified the people. He made them holy again. But Israel as a nation, after they were reprov'd of the breaches in the Covenant agreement they made with God, they did not arise and sanctify the people from the unholy and the unclean... therefore a little leaven took its violent course to wit, shockingly, a nation of saints became a nation of sinners by the next generation! Approximately 13 generations (from 1425 to 1063 B.C. according to Ussher) were scarce able to lift their heads from the stormy waves of apostasy which well-nigh drowned them into the deep. A momentary breath was granted here and there, as the billows of God's anger crashed upon their heads from generation to generation... until the prophet Samuel took up the mantle of intercession for a lifetime of rigorous prayers for revival, and, thus, God found David.

In a sweeping and broad survey, we have seen the devastating fate of Israel according to the word of the LORD. We have seen a War won through the valiant leadership of Joshua, yes, but the *minor battles* were lost and a nation was undone. *A little sin* worked like “*a little leaven*”, and the whole nation apostatized! That which was unthinkable just 20 years prior became reality, according to the promise of damnation. Let the alarm sound in your soul, my reader, how that in Israel: the *rules of holiness* are *rules of salvation*!

The Kingdom of God existed because God became KING over a people, a territory, by Law, through Government, by war through battles in which God commanded and fought, but when at battle against enemy nations and **the rules of holiness** were defied, God abandoned the armies of Israel leaving untold numbers to die! Even before the conquest of The Promised Land, the Captain of the Host forewarned,

“When the host goeth forth against thine enemies, then **keep thee from every wicked thing**. If there be **among you** any man, that is **not clean** by reason of **uncleanness** that chanceth him by night, then shall he go abroad **out of the camp**, he shall **NOT come within the camp**: But it shall be, when evening cometh on, he shall wash himself with water: and when the sun is down, he shall **come into the camp** again. Thou shalt have a place also **without the camp**, whither thou shalt go forth abroad: And thou shalt have a paddle upon thy weapon; and it shall be, when thou wilt ease thyself abroad, thou shalt dig therewith, and shalt turn back and cover that which cometh from thee: **For the LORD thy God walketh in the midst of thy camp, to deliver thee, and to give up thine enemies before thee;** therefore shall **thy camp** be **holy**: that He see no unclean thing **in thee**, and **TURN AWAY from thee.**” – Deut. 23:9-14

As much as Israel *turned away* from “every wicked” and “unclean thing”, God did not *turn away* from them. The war-camp itself needed to remain *holy* and *pure* if Israel was going to fight alongside the God of Israel. These rules existed for the *war-camp* and the *whole congregation* of Israel, without differentiation in their own senses. God demanded the eradication of all Canaanites from The Holy Land lest they mingle and mix among the holy people of God – the holy with the unholy. So also if an Israelite turned Canaanite, which means that he turns from the LORD unto idolatry, sin, or Canaanite customs, the Israelite man would be expelled from the people of God through the death penalty. The heart of mercilessness (formerly addressed) by which Israel was enabled to totally annihilate the defeated and surrendered Canaanites was, yet again, employed upon backsliding Israelites turned Canaanite (saints turned sinners)! Consider the unanimity of the following scriptures, my reader.

Mercilessness & Pitilessness unto Death

“Thou shalt not consent unto him, nor hearken unto him; **neither shall thine eye pity him, neither shalt thou spare, neither shalt thou conceal him: But thou shalt surely kill him...And all Israel shall hear, and fear, and shall do no more any such wickedness as this is among you.**” – Duet. 13:8-9, 11

Congregation-wide Holiness & Purity

“So shalt thou put the evil way from **the midst of thee.**” – Deut. 13:5

“So thou shalt put the evil away from **among you**” – Deut. 17:7

“thou shalt put away the evil **from Israel**” – Deut. 17:12

“Therefore put way from **among yourselves that wicked person**” – 1 Cor. 5:13

Perfected Holiness

“There shall not be found **among you** any one...

Thou shalt be **perfect** with the LORD Thy God”

– Deut. 18:10, 13

“Wherefore come out from **among them**, and be ye **separate**...

perfecting holiness in the fear of God”

– 2 Cor. 6:17, 7:1

Israel was commanded to mercilessly annihilate the unholy and sinful Canaanites from The Holy Land, this we know, but if in the process of or after Israelite settlement began within The Holy Land, if Israel found any Israelite turning Canaanite (turning to sin, to unholiness, to idolatry) the guilty man would be subjected to the same judgment which fell upon the Canaanites: TOTAL ANNIHILATION. The unholy and sinful chaos which ruled within once-born mankind worldwide – it was **unwelcome** in Israel. The passions and persons of hell were given *their boundary point*---stopping at the borders of Israelite settlements (Isa. 26:1-2, 60:18-19). My reader, Israel was sanctified to God as a “peculiar” and “separated” people (Ex. 19:5, Deut. 14:2, Lev. 20:24-25) above all other peoples on the face of the earth! Like the crest of earth was appointed by God and fixed with immovable fortitude before the whelming and untamable sea, the borders of Israel were appointed to withstand the untamable chaos of depravity that it would pass no further (Zech. 2:5, Isa. 4:5, 60:18-19, Psalm 48). As God “gave to the sea His decree, that the waters should not pass his commandment: when He appointed **the foundations** of the earth” (Prov. 8:29), even so, likewise, God gave sin and sinners His decree that they should not pass into the camps, settlements, cities, or Lands of Israel: when He appointed **the foundations** of *The Kingdom of God* amidst the people of Israel (Isa. 26:1-2, 60:18-19). That which was expelled without would die if it was found within. The judgment that was exercised outside of Israel was used inside of Israel, wherever the need required. Look closely at the passages of scripture which were provided above in different subject categories, my reader. Seek to understand the context and application in both the Old and New Testaments.

The scripture teaches that the making of an idol is a sin that does “corrupt” oneself (Deut. 4:16), legally speaking. The crime of *idolatry* was punished without mercy or pity as long as two or three witnesses were confirming the crime (Deut. 17:6). Israel was commanded to take *every individual* who had done this “wicked thing” and “stone them with stones till they die”. According to the word of the LORD, they were “worthy of death” (Deut. 17:5-6). In this manner Israel was commanded to be a witness against *backsliding Israelites* turned *sinners*, and the Lord phrased their public execution as: “**So thou shalt put the evil away from among you**” (Deut. 17:7). Undeniably, this judgment was a Church Purity judgment. Undeniably, this judgment stood as a type of what is now expected of Christians in the New Testament. We too are called, “to judge” (1 Cor. 5:12), so to speak. Thus in like manner we must “**put way from among yourselves that wicked person**” (1 Cor. 5:13). Old Testament Israel was to “put the *evil* away from **among [them]**” as New Testament Spiritual Israel is to “put away from **among [ourselves]** that *wicked person*” (Deut. 17:7, 1 Cor. 5:13). Do you agree, my reader?

This judgment existed without partiality in the Old and New Testaments. Judgment was just as severe upon a supposed “prophet” or “dreamer”, upon any family member or dear relation, if any one of them sought to “entice” an Israelite away to serve other gods - God commanded merciless judgment: “**So shalt thou put the evil away from the midst of thee**” (Deut. 13:5). The backslider could have been your nearest and dearest, and the judgment stood the same. I repeat, God hated idolatry and idolaters, without partiality. These passages and the like were undeniably quoted by the apostle

Paul in 1 Corinthians 5:13, my reader. Can you see it? Take a thorough look at Duet. 13:5-11, for example, and see the contextual correlation to 1 Corinthians Chapter 5.

“And that prophet, or that dreamer of dreams, shall be put to death; because he hath spoken to turn *you* away from the LORD your God, which brought you out of the Land of Egypt, and redeemed you out of the house of bondage, to thrust thee out of the way which the LORD thy God commanded thee to walk in. **So shalt thou put the evil away from the midst of thee.** If thy brother, the son of thy mother, or thy son, or thy daughter, or the wife of thy bosom, or thy friend, which *is* as thine own soul, entice thee secretly, saying, Let us go and serve other gods, which thou hast not known, thou, nor thy fathers; *Namely*, of the gods of the people which *are* round about you, nigh unto thee, or far off from thee, from the *one* end of the earth even unto the *other* end of the earth; Thou shalt not consent unto him, nor hearken unto him; **neither shall thine eye pity him, neither shalt thou spare,** neither shalt thou conceal him: But thou shalt surely kill him; thine hand shall be first upon him to put him to death, and afterwards the hand of all the people. And thou shalt stone him with stones, that he die; because he hath sought to thrust thee away from the LORD thy God, which brought thee out of the Land of Egypt, from the house of bondage. And all Israel shall **hear, and fear,** and **shall do no more any such wickedness as this is among you.**”
– Deuteronomy 13:5-11

The Lord warned Israel and promised them damnation if they did not keep Israel holy by disallowing idolatry within their congregation. Likewise, also, damnation was promised if the idolatrous nations were not utterly destroyed or expelled from their midst and their Land because then Israel would be infected by the sin of the Canaanites. God emphatically warned that *a tributary covenant* (or agreement) with the Canaanites would be “a **snare**” (Ex. 34:12) BECAUSE the mixed-in-presence of the Canaanites would certainly compel Israel to sin and apostasy. God meant what He said. There was no escaping it. When He said, “lest they make thee sin against Me” (Ex. 23:33), He meant, “LEST THEY MAKE THEE SIN AGAINST ME”! Contrary to God’s promise, the proud in heart think that they cannot or will not, by any situation or circumstance, be made to sin against a God they love! This is high-mindedness. This is unholy and inordinate fearlessness. With staggering contextual significance in Romans Chapter 11, God said, “Be not highminded, but FEAR” (Rom. 11:20). The Old Testament saints who believed that they could not be snared were snared. The Old Testament saints who believed that they could not be made to sin were made to sin. This snare was wrought by the cohabitation of the people in bodily presence, by the nearness of proximity, and by any relational interaction or communion which would be had thereby, according to the scriptures. This very same snare is emphatically warned against in the New Testament (here in metaphorical language), saying, “a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump” (1 Cor. 5:6). What God said through the Spirit of Inspiration, God meant! When He said, “a little leaven leaveneth” (1 Cor. 5:6), He meant, “a little leaven leaveneth THE WHOLE LUMP”! In context and with the correct interpretation and application, this means that *one sinner* turns *the whole Church* of saints into sinners! That which was *Nation-ending* in the Old Testament is *Church-ending* in the New Testament! This was the contextual and historical situation warned against in 1st century Corinth (see 1 Corinthians Chapter 5). Therefore we, like Old Testament Israel, must “put away from **among [ourselves]** that wicked person” (1 Cor. 5:13)! Like Old Testament Israel, we must refuse to be “yoked” in “fellowship”, “communion”, “concord”, “part”, and “agreement” with those whom God commands separation from (2 Cor. 6:14-7:1)! Or else like Old Testament Israel, we will be infected, undone, and doomed!

Understandably so, that which was *Nation-ending* in the Old Testament is *Church-ending* in the New Testament. The same sins committed in two different Covenants do result in the same fate. Therefore, likewise, the judgment of God is the same: in description of the Canaanites, it was said, The Promised Land did “vomit” (Lev. 18:25) or “spue” (Lev. 18:26-29) them out, and the Lord said that this would happen to Israel if they mixed-with the Canaanites so as to become like them (according to the promise of damnation). Even so, also, God warned the New Testament Church that He would vomit or “spue” (Rev. 3:16) them out! Those of Israel who are vomited and spewed-out in both Covenants were lukewarm believers, so to speak: those who have learned the way of the heathen (the way of the world) enough to be cooled down from whole-hearted service to God. In this case, unperfected and incomplete holiness is damnable worldliness. Do you know what I mean by “unperfected holiness”?

“There shall not be found **among you** any one...

Thou shalt be **perfect** with the LORD Thy God”

– Deut. 18:10, 13

“Wherefore come out from **among them**, and be ye **separate**...
perfecting holiness in the fear of God”

– 2 Cor. 6:17, 7:1

When surveying the whole congregation of the LORD in the Old Testament, if there was NOT FOUND anyone among them who was a sinner, a Canaanite, an idolater, and the like, then Israel was **perfected in holiness** (see. Deut. 18:9-14). The New Testament command, “let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, **perfecting holiness** in the fear of God” (2 Cor. 7:1), is a New Testament rendition of the Old Testament command, “Thou shalt be **perfect** with the LORD thy God” (Deut. 18:13). The New Testament command is, “**Come out from among them** and **be ye separate**, saith the LORD, and **touch not the unclean thing...**” (2 Cor. 6:17-7:1), and the Canaanite nations were *unclean, idolatrous*, and *wicked* beyond recovery. Therefore to “**be perfect**” in Deuteronomy 18:13 was, in context, to be **perfected in holiness** and **separateness**. It is certain that Paul had Deuteronomy 18:10 & 13 in his mind as he was writing 2 Corinthians 7:1, under inspiration.

So also and yet again, the writer of Hebrews makes an exact parallel. If an Israelite departed from faith in the LORD – being turned unto sin and idolatry (see Deut. 29:16-18) – while abiding among the congregation of the LORD nevertheless, his presence among them was said to be “a root that beareth gall and wormwood” (Deut. 29:18). Gall and wormwood are archaic words for poison. These backsliders were called **roots of poison** in God’s garden! Therefore they were roots which were doomed to be *uprooted* and *eradicated* from among the people of Israel (see Deut. 29:20). Speaking of this, Moses said, “The LORD **will not spare him** [the backslidden Israelite turned into a root of poison], but then the anger of the LORD and His jealousy shall smoke against that man, and all the curses that are written in this Book shall lie upon him, and the LORD shall **blot out his name** from under heaven” (Deut. 29:20). With staggering clarity and unison, the writer of Hebrews warned New Testament saints likewise. The degeneration which took place within the backsliding saints of the Old Testament was quoted and applied in the New Testament.

“lest there should be among you a **root** that beareth gall and wormwood” – Deut. 29:18

“lest any **root** of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled” – Heb. 12:15

While the writer of Hebrews is expounding the need for *personal holiness*, saying, “Follow peace with all men, and **holiness**, without which no man shall see the Lord”, he points the reader to behold the potential end of a man who fails to follow the command of holiness. The writer of Hebrews wrote in full, “Follow peace with all men, and **holiness**, without which no man shall see the Lord: Looking diligently **lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled**” (Heb. 12:14-15). The potential fate that was warned against was called, “failing the grace of God”, doctrinally speaking, and this resulted in a man becoming a poisonous root, metaphorically speaking. All of this happened through a faith-failure: a failure to “look diligently” at Jesus Christ who presently and progressively delivers the saints from the ever-present battle against sin and unholiness (see Heb. 12:1-2 & 15). Therefore upon this *failure* and *fall* the degeneration took place: the saint became an unholy, defiling, and poisonous root which must be uprooted and eradicated from among God’s holy people, The Church. As we can see, those who don’t *follow holiness* must be eradicated from a *holy people*.

When Israel, because of these snares, became as vomited-out-poison in the mouth of God, the Lord described the severity of their crime as spiritual *adultery*, *fornication*, and *whoredom* or *barlotry* (Ezek. 23:11, 36:25, Jer. 3:1-10, 13:27). Their “whoredom” was evident in the saying, “We will be as the heathen, as the families of the countries, to serve wood and stone” (Ezek. 20:30-32). Israel’s “whoredoms” were “with all their idols”, and with these “she **defiled** herself” (Ezek. 23:7). Israel had become “**corrupt** in her inordinate love” with idolatry (Ezek. 23:11). With the aid of confrontational and shocking imagery, God decried Israel’s “bed of love”. God said, “And the Babylonians came to her into the bed of love, and they defiled her with their whoredom, and she was polluted with them, and her mind was alienated from them. So she discovered her whoredoms, and discovered her nakedness: then My mind was alienated from her, like as my

mind was alienated from her sister” (Ezek. 23:17-18). This is because the LORD was a betrayed Husband unto Israel, with jealousy enraged. God said, “I will set my **jealousy** against thee” (Ezek. 23:25). “I will do these things unto thee, because thou hast gone a **whoring** after the heathen, and because thou art **polluted** with her idols” (Ezek. 23:30).

Oh, my reader! New Testament saints might acknowledge the enagement of jealousy in God on behalf of idolatry, but Israel **never believed** they would reach such a stage of *degeneracy* and *fallenness* from what they once were. They were “a noble vine” and a “wholly right seed” (Jer. 2:21), God said. Israel was once “holiness unto the LORD” and full of love toward God (Jer. 2:2-3). God said, “Surely they are My people, children that will not lie: so He was their Saviour” (Isa. 63:8). This was when Israel was all-saved and idolatry-free, as it was written: “So the LORD alone did lead him, and there was no strange god with him” (Deut. 32:12). What Israel never believed could happen, happened! What they disbelieved they could become, they became! And what Old Testament Israel became, the New Testament saints can become! Consider the following parallel carefully, my reader. It was written,

"And they consider not in their hearts that I remember all their wickedness: now their own doings have beset them about; they are before my face... They are all **adulterers**, as an oven heated by the baker, who ceaseth from raising after he hath kneaded the dough, until it be leavened... there is none among them that calleth unto me (**1 Cor. 5:2**). Ephraim, he hath **mixed himself among the people**; Ephraim is a cake not turned. **Strangers have devoured his strength**, and he **knoweth it not**: yea, gray hairs are here and there upon him, yet he **knoweth not** (**1 Cor. 5:6**). And the **pride** (**1 Cor. 5:2**) of Israel testifieth to his face: and they do not return to the LORD their God, nor seek him for all this." (Hosea 7:2, 4, 7-10)

"And ye are **puffed up**, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed might be taken away from among you... Your glorying is not good. **Know ye not** that **a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump**? Purge out therefore the old leaven, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us:" (1 Corinthians 5:2, 6-7)

If Israel would have simply obeyed the voice of God and destroyed all the nations of the Promised Land, they would have persevered. Instead, God said, “Ephraim, he hath **mixed himself** among the people”. This mixture is, in other words, a mingling among the heathen (see Ps. 106:35). This inordinate mixture (holy-with-unholy) hindered Israel from finding “**strength**” to obey God in perseverance, and, thus, their heart was turned away from the Lord. Surely the scriptures are repetitious on this matter for a reason, my reader! Why did Israel become so terribly wicked? Why did she degenerate? Because they did not *kill* and *destroy* what God said to *mortify*, they did not *separate* from those whom God said, “be ye *separate*”, and thus they became *mixed* and *mingled* to their own *destruction* and *death*. If Israel, who was a “wholly right seed”, committed **whoredom** and **adulteries** through *mixing* with the heathen... can New Testament saints expect anything different? Can we expect that we will never be *leavened* no matter what the mixture (1 Cor. 5)? Can we expect that we will never become **adulterers** (James 4:4)? Can we expect to be *received by God* no matter the *uncleanness*, the *unperfected holiness*, when all necessary *separation* is lost (2 Cor. 6:17-7:1)? We would be **proud** to think it so, as Old Testament Israel and 1st century Corinth were **proud** (Hos. 7:10, 1 Cor. 5:2)! I marvel if we will ever come to **know** what Old Testament Israel and 1st century Corinth **knew not** (Hos. 7:9, 1 Cor. 5:6). We live in a generation of saints who are *high-minded* and *fearless*, who think they can never fall (Rom. 11:20-22). Decrying this pride, God said, “Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come. WHEREFORE let him that thinketh he standeth *take heed lest he fall*” (1 Cor. 10:11-12).

They **did not destroy the nations**, concerning whom the LORD commanded them: But **were mingled among the heathen**, and **learned their works**. And they served their idols: which were a **snare** unto them. Yea, they sacrificed their sons and their daughters unto devils, And shed innocent blood, even the blood of their sons and of their daughters, whom they sacrificed unto the idols of Canaan: and the Land was **polluted** with blood. Thus were they **defiled** with their own works, and went a **whoring** with their own inventions." (Psalm 106:34-39)

The Lord said to Israel, “I am married unto you” (Jer. 3:14), but they did not repent of their adulteries. God’s marriage would not be ended with a divorce even though He did give His wife “a bill of divorce” (Jer. 3:8) via temporary judgment. God promised to redeem Israel in the last days (Jer. 3:14). As the virgin expression of the New Testament Bride does tarry from the holy beautification necessary for marriage with the Bridegroom, I marvel at the rampant adulteries committed! We are altogether ignorant and proud, unknowing that Israel stands as an example to the saints of the Last Days (1 Cor. 10:11-12)! God divorced Israel for adulteries, my reader. “Whereby backsliding Israel committed **adultery** I HAD PUT HER AWAY”, God said (Jer. 3:8). Do you think that no such thing can happen to you, dear saint of God? Dear backslider of Israel? “Know ye not that the friendship of the world is enmity with God” (James 4:4)? It is adultery, my reader, and only God’s people (who are married to God via the Covenant of salvation) are able to commit adultery against the LORD. Heathen sinners cannot commit adultery, only saints can. God’s jealousy that burned in the Old Testament is still alive in the New Testament (see “envy” in James 4:5), my reader, and so is the Divine-right of power to divorce. The long road to this final rejection point starts with “a little leaven” (1 Cor. 5:6).

New Testament Promises of Salvation

- “¹⁴ Be ye not unequally **yoked** together with *unbelievers*: for **what fellowship** hath *righteousness* with *unrighteousness*? and **what communion** hath *light* with *darkness*? ¹⁵ And **what concord** hath *Christ* with *Belial*? or **what part** hath *he that believeth* with *an infidel*? ¹⁶ And **what agreement** hath *the temple of God* with *idols*? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, **I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.** ¹⁷ Wherefore **come out from among them**, and be ye **separate**, saith the Lord, and **touch not the unclean thing**; and **I will receive you**, ¹⁸ And **will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters**, saith the Lord Almighty. ¹ Having therefore **these promises**, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting **holiness** in the fear of God.” – 2 Corinthians 6:14-7:1 [see *Dent. 7:1-16, 18:9-14*]
- “If a man therefore **purge himself** from these, **he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified, and meet for the Master’s use, and prepared unto every good word.**” – 2 Tim. 3:21 [see 1 Cor. 3:16-18]
- “I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye **present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God**, which is your reasonable service. And **be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed** by the renewing of your mind, **that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.**” – Romans 12:1-2 [see *John 7:16-17*]

New Testament Promises of Damnation

- “Be not deceived: **evil communications corrupt good manners.**” – 1 Cor. 15:33 [see 2 Pet. 2:18-21]
- “And ye are **puffed up**, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed might be **taken away from among you**... Your glorying is not good. **Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump? Purge out therefore the old leaven**, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us: Therefore let us **keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.**” – 1 Corinthians 5:2, 6-8 [see *Exodus 12*]
- “**A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.**” – Gal. 5:9 [Matt. 16:6-12, Mark 8:15, Lk. 12:1]
- “Moreover, brethren, **I would not that ye should be ignorant... Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall.**” – 1 Cor. 10:1-12 [see *Jude 3-4*]
- “Take heed, brethren, **lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief in departing from the Living God.** But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day; **lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin**” – Heb. 3:13 [see *Heb. 10:24-29*]

The City of Jerusalem

This City of Jerusalem was the Empire City of the Kingdom of God, therefore it was called “the City of our God” (Ps. 48:1), “the City of the Great King” (Ps. 48:2), and “the City of the LORD of hosts” (Ps. 48:8). What a glory! Dear reader, do you understand what this means?

“Great is the LORD, and greatly to be praised in **the City of our God**, in **the Mountain of His holiness**. Beautiful for situation, the joy of the whole earth, is **Mount Zion**, on the sides of the north, **the City of the great King**. God is known in her palaces for a refuge. For, lo, the kings were assembled, they passed by together. They saw it, and so they marvelled; they were troubled, and hasted away. Fear took hold upon them there, and pain, as of a woman in travail. Thou breakest the ships of Tarshish with an east wind. As we have heard, so have we seen **in the city of the LORD of hosts, in the city of our God**: God will establish it for ever. Selah. We have thought of thy lovingkindness, O God, **in the midst of thy temple**. According to thy name, O God, so is thy praise unto the ends of the earth: thy right hand is full of righteousness. Let mount Zion rejoice, let the daughters of Judah be glad, **because of thy judgments**. Walk about **Zion**, and go round about her: tell the towers thereof. Mark ye well her bulwarks, consider her palaces; that ye may tell it to the generation following. For this God is our God for ever and ever: he will be our guide even unto death.” – Psalm 48:1-14

Aye, my reader, let us behold the wonder of *The City of Jerusalem*! In so many words the psalmist declared, THE LORD IS THERE! And because the LORD was there, **sinners** were not! The people meekly bid the Lord to abide among them, saying, “O when wilt Thou come unto me” (Ps. 101:2), but by *what appeal* and on *what merit* would they make such a request? Only certain environments are fit for Kings and Dignities on earth, and how much more for God Himself, The KING of Kings? The people of Israel *appealed* to and *invited* God to abide among them by preparing the environment in which The Dignitary would potentially grace with His Presence. In preparation for this, for instance, the people of Israel exercised a firm and unwavering hand of “judgment” within the Land and City of Jerusalem. Judgment prepares the scenery for The Judge. Think of it, my reader. How do you make a sin-hating God feel welcome? King David lived-out the answer with his life and songs (see Psalm 101:1-8). David said, “I will early destroy **all the wicked of the Land**; that I may cut off **all wicked doers from the City of the LORD**” (Psalm 101:8). Upon this accomplishment David was emboldened to make the appeal to God, “O when wilt Thou come unto me” (Ps. 101:2).

To understand and agree with *biblical judgment*, one must agree with *the Personality of God*. A sin-hating, sin-stopping, sinner-killing God was welcomed by saintly people who were separated and sold-out to God. In the language of their prayers, you will hear, “Yea, in the way of **Thy judgments**, O LORD, have we waited for Thee; the desire of our soul is to Thy Name, and to the remembrance of Thee” (Isa. 26:8). In the charisma of their songs as well, the people sang, “Let **Mount Zion** rejoice, let the daughters of Judah be glad, because of **Thy judgments**” (Ps. 48:11). These people loved God’s *sinner-killing judgments*! ...does that amaze you? Even in the New Testament, God does not *save a sinner* unless he can *kill the sinner* (Gal. 2:20, Rom. 6:2-6)! The God of the Old Testament **IS** the God of the New Testament, my reader – LITERALLY SPEAKING – therefore He, in the same holy and unapproachable Personality, beckons the otherwise condemned Gentile humanity into everlasting life by a bloody and cruel execution device --- THE CROSS! A sin-killing and self-crucifying CROSS does not make sense to most, especially to those who don’t want any freedom from themselves! Those who love their own way of life know nothing of The Gospel (“*For the preaching of The Cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God*” – 1 Cor. 1:18). Furthermore, also, let it be known and understood: anyone who is happy to dwell among sinners will be miserable among the company of Heaven; anyone who wants to cohabitate with sinners does hate the habitation of Heaven; and anyone who desires a City to be judgment-free will spend a God-less eternity!

Just as Heaven is, *The City of Jerusalem* was patterned. Hallelujah! Therefore the populous of them both is *rebel-free*, according to scripture. The King of Israel said, “I will early destroy all **the wicked of Land**; that I may cut off all **the wicked** doers from **the City of the LORD**” (Ps. 101:8). All the citizens of Israel shouted in agreement with their King because in *this* City, within *these* Gates, the people were commanded to walk in a certain code from whence came peace and truth in the Presence of God, in Whom they dwelt. “Execute the *judgment* of truth and peace **in your Gates**” (Zech.

8:16-19), God Almighty said. In certain times of history when such judgments were successfully accomplished to *the perfection of holiness*, the entire world staggered to behold Jerusalem *beautified* in holiness! There was nothing on earth like it, no, not in all the world! According to God's promise, it was written,

“The LORD shall establish thee an **holy people** unto Himself, as He hath sworn unto thee, if thou shalt keep the commandments of the LORD thy God, and walk in His ways. **And ALL THE PEOPLE OF THE EARTH SHALL SEE that thou art called by the Name of the LORD; and they shall be afraid of thee.**” – Deut. 28:9-10

Oh, my reader! Can you imagine it? Israel was an astonishment to the whole world. As if the world were seated in galleries round-about *The City of Jerusalem*, it was written, “The Kings of the earth, and all the inhabitants of the world, would not have believed that **the adversary** and **the enemy** should have entered into **the Gates of Jerusalem**” (Lam. 4:12)! This is a staggering claim and a staggering fact! The City was **a holy place** which was chosen, defended, and made unconquerable by GOD HIMSELF, and the entire world marveled! A sanctified, separated, and unstoppable City of Jerusalem was, obviously, the signet of salvation adored by the world; but, nevertheless, a defiled, mixed, and invaded City of Jerusalem was the signet of damnation and infamy. Because of this, damnation was lamented in these terms: “O God, **the heathen** are come **into Thine inheritance**; Thy holy Temple they have **defiled**; they have laid **Jerusalem** on heaps” (Ps. 79:1). Do you understand why, my reader? Do you agree? That which was forbidden to happen, transpired, when the holy God of Israel was offended. That which no King or people would have believed, came to pass. Shockingly, “**the adversary** and **the enemy**” entered into the very “**Gates of Jerusalem**” (Lam. 4:12)!

With all scripture heretofore considered, applied, and fulfilled, the inhabitants of *The City of Jerusalem* were not “**the wicked doers**” (Ps. 101:8), “**the adversary**”, or “**the enemy**” (Lam. 4:12). By no means! On the contrary, every citizen was a saint, every sinner they did morally hate (Duet. 23:1-8), and judgment was the filter of the populous who passed through the Gate! This City was the place in which “**the heathen**” would NOT come except in the case when the unholy sons of Adam broke through the boundaries which God had ordained by Law that none should trespass (Ps. 79:1, Isa. 26:1-2, 60:18-19). The walls and Gates of this City were not meant as mere barricades of defense in times of war, oh no! They were meant to be of old what they will finally become in the Consummation: **The Walls and Gates of SALVATION** (Isa. 26:1-2, 60:18-19, Rev. 21:22-22:5, 22:11-15).

Mount Zion

“**Mount Zion** which He loved” – Ps. 78:68

Approaching the scenery of salvation from the pages of biblical history, the psalmist said: “Moreover He refused the tabernacle of Joseph, and chose not the tribe of Ephraim: But chose the tribe of Judah, the **Mount Zion which He loved**. And He built His **Sanctuary** like high palaces, like the earth which He hath established for ever” (Ps. 78:67-68). My reader, do you know what this means? The arena of salvation is, namely, the arena where God's presence abides. Therefore the psalmist declared the wonder that Israel is *the Land*, Jerusalem is *the City*, and Zion is *the Mountain* of GOD's dwelling place!

Israelites, who began as “nourished and brought up children” (Isa. 1:2) before the Lord, and, The City of Jerusalem, which began as a “faithful city” which was “full of judgment” so that “righteousness lodged in it” (Isa. 1:21), all were likened to be as **pure** “silver” and aged “wine” **without mixture** (Isa. 1:22). Nevertheless, eventually, her **purity** and **without mixture** blessedness was defiled! ...and how? She dwelt in harmony and unity with what the Law forbade as inordinate. She continued in this estate **without separation** until finally, she was **without salvation**: she was “overthrown by strangers” (Isa. 1:7). Israel was born alienated and separated from all other peoples, but when she **mixed with strangers** she was overthrown like they were overthrown (“as Sodom”-Isa. 1:9). Therefore Israel, in this

estate, was an insult and profanation to “appear before [God]” and “tread [His] courts”, the Lord said (Isa. 1:12). Sins which were by proximity, before the Lord, were such that are “against the LORD to provoke the eyes of His glory” (Isa. 3:8). As a consequence, a cry of justice rose up to the heaven eliciting a baptism of fire, and this is, namely, God’s FIRE: a furnace of purification to **un-mix** the *holy* from the *unholy*. It is ordained of God that He act in judgment to **separate** the *unholy mixture* by judgments which are comparable to immersing Israel into the flames of a furnace – therein to remain until “**the transgressors**” and “**the sinners**” from among His people were utterly “consumed” (Isa. 1:21-31). By this FIRE, God said, “I will turn My hand upon thee, and **purely purge away thy dross**, and **take away all thy tin**”, so that henceforth, by God’s glorious grace, Israel shall again be called, “The City of righteousness, the faithful City” (Isa. 1:25-26). Let us therefore take note, my reader: This salvation cometh by “judgment” (Isa. 1:27), “when the Lord shall have **washed away** the filth of the daughters of Zion, and shall have **purged** the blood of Jerusalem **from the midst** thereof by **the spirit of judgment**, and by **the spirit of burning**” (Isa. 4:4)! Because of this “burning” which “none shall quench” (Isa. 2:31), and because the Lord “standeth to **judge** the people”, and because He entereth “into **judgment**” with them (Isa. 3:13-14), “the Mountain of the LORD’s House” (Isa. 2:2) is “called **holy**” yet again, and everyone living therein did abide likewise (Isa. 4:3)! Finally, then, at this time, “Mount Zion” and “her assemblies” were acceptable to the Lord (Isa. 4:5), when before they were a troublesome and unbearable weariness (Isa. 1:12-16).

“Zion shall be redeemed **with judgment**, and her converts with righteousness. And the destruction of the **transgressors** and of **the sinners** shall be together, and **they that forsake the LORD** shall be **consumed**.” – Isaiah 1:27-28

Everyone in the city “shall be called **holy**, even every one that is written among the living **in Jerusalem**” (Isa. 4:3)... but how shall the Lord accomplish this thing? It is accomplished “by the **spirit of judgment**, and by the **spirit of burning**” (Isa. 4:4). Such a course as this, just described, is a snap shot of redemptive judgment wrought throughout the ages. What is seen of Israel here, in Isaiah chapters 1-4, is a concentrated rehearsal of what is said by God and done in Israel throughout the ages. This is because Israel is by essence and birth, “a faithful City” (Isa. 1:21), the Land wherein dwells “the Mountain of the LORD’s House” (Isa. 2:2), “Mount Zion” and “her assemblies” (Isa. 4:5), the places and persons which are to be all-holy because they, unlike all others places and persons, “appear before [God]” and “tread [His] courts” (Isa. 1:12). Therefore let us understand how, by characteristic, when Israel existed in this estate, she was arrayed in *the garments of salvation*. Therefore, by necessity, when Israel existed in declension from this estate, she was clothed in *the unclean-rags of damnation*. Thus by acts of judgment comparable to FIRE, **separation** restores **salvation**! “**He that putteth his trust in Me shall possess the Land, and shall inherit My Holy Mountain**” (Isa. 57:13), God said. What a glorious fire! God set forth His annihilating hand to destroy “**the transgressors**” from among His people (Isa. 1:27-28, 57:12-16) so that, afterward (after the Captivities), yet again, those with saving faith (exclusively) would inherit *The Holy Mountain of God*.

“**Who** shall ascend into **The Hill of the LORD**?” – Psalm 24:3

“**Who** shall dwell in **Thy Holy Hill**?” – Psalm 15:1

Of *Mount Zion* it is written, “**WHO** shall ascend” and “**WHO** shall dwell”... but why? For the same reason God said, “**WHO** is this that engaged his heart to approach unto Me? saith the LORD” (Jer. 30:21). My reader, tremble at this: “the LORD dwelleth in Zion” (Joel. 2:17, 21, Isa. 8:18)! This Hill is not just any hill, and the people who *ascend* and *dwell* upon this Hill are not just any people. This Hill is, “The Hill of the LORD” (Ps. 24:3). These people are the holy, beloved, and regenerated “**children of Zion**” (Joel. 2:23, Ps. 149:2)! Be astonished and wonder at the searching question, “WHO”, my reader, because God is talking to YOU! Can you answer God? *Mount Zion* is set-apart by God and consecrated above and beyond the un-touchable holiness of *Mount Sinai* (Ex. 19:9-24), my reader (Heb. 12:18-29). Do you understand the terror of this (Heb. 12:18-21, 25, 28-29)? There is a greater holiness and a more terrifying terribleness to approach Mount Zion! This is because the God of the New Testament is still “A Consuming Fire” (Heb. 12:29), my reader! The instruction of God is to tremble at the fact, “everyone in Zion appeareth BEFORE GOD” (Ps. 84:7)! Zion is for a Greater Covenant, “the Mountain of His **holiness**” (Ps. 48:1), and the people ascending thereto are the people

of His holiness. When looking upon Zion, God said, “My **holy** Mountain” (Isa. 11:9, 57:13, Joel 3:17), and when looking upon the people of Zion, God said, “My people” (Jer. 30:22). Are you one of them?

“Who shall ascend into **The Hill of the LORD**? or who shall stand in His Holy Place? He that hath clean hands, and a pure heart; who hath not lifted up his soul unto vanity, nor sworn deceitfully. He shall receive the blessing from the LORD, and righteousness from the God of his salvation. This is the generation of them that seek him, that seek thy face, O Jacob. Selah.” – Psalm 24:3-6

“LORD, who shall abide in **Thy Tabernacle**? who shall dwell in **Thy Holy Hill**? He that walketh uprightly, and worketh righteousness, and speaketh the truth in his heart. He that backbiteth not with his tongue, nor doeth evil to his neighbour, nor taketh up a reproach against his neighbour. In whose eyes a vile person is contemned; but he honoureth them that fear the LORD. He that sweareth to his own hurt, and changeth not. He that putteth not out his money to usury, nor taketh reward against the innocent. He that **DOETH THESE THINGS** shall never be moved.” – Psalm 15:1-5

Of the blessedness of these people, it was written, “Blessed are the **pure** in heart: for they shall *see God*” (Matt. 5:8). *The revelatory sight of God* upon Zion exceeds that of Sinai, of which it was written, “*they saw God*” (Ex. 24:10-11). Even to “ascend” The Hill and survive it (Ps. 24:1), and furthermore to “dwell” or “abide” upon it (Ps. 15:1), requires a lifestyle of **narrowness**, **hallowedness**, and **cleanness** (as described above in Psalm 24:3-6 & 15:1-5). How happy are such men, my reader! The truth of this only the children of Zion know. Only the children of Zion know the ocean-deep enjoyment of God, the happiness of holiness! It was written for good reason, “children of Zion... rejoice in the LORD your God” (Joel 2:23, Ps. 149:2)!

With all scripture heretofore considered, applied, and fulfilled, the inhabitants and visitors of *Mount Zion* were exclusively: “He that putteth his trust in Me” (Isa. 57:13), he that has “**clean hands**” and a “**pure heart**” who has not “**lifted up his soul unto vanity, nor sword deceitfully**” (Ps. 23:4), He that “**walketh uprightly**” and “**worketh righteousness**” (Ps. 15:2), that “**speaketh truth in his heart**” and “**backbiteth not with his tongue**” (Ps. 15:2-3), He that does not do “**evil to his neighbour**” (Ps. 15:3), He who hates “**a vile person**” and “**honoureth them that fear the LORD**” (Ps. 15:4), “**He that sweareth to his own hurt and changeth not**” (Ps. 15:4), “**He that putteth not out his money to usury nor taketh reward against the innocent**” (Ps. 15:5), even these, and none other, shall “**receive the blessing from the LORD**” which is “**righteousness from the God**” (Ps. 24:5), which is, furthermore, the privilege to circuit Mount Zion and appear before God Almighty! Therefore is Zion remembered by God to be, metaphorically speaking, **pure silver** and **un-mixed wine** (Isa. 1:22). This means that The City of Jerusalem and Mount Zion was a “faithful City” which was “full of judgment” so that “righteousness lodged in it” (Isa. 1:21), before the silver became dross and the wine was mixed with water (Isa. 1:22), and after Mount Zion was defiled, God said: “I will turn My hand upon thee, and **purely purge away thy dross**, and **take away all thy tin**” (Isa. 1:25-26). This metaphorical **purging** and **taking away** is, in other words, the destruction of “**the transgressors**”, “**the sinners**”, and “**they that forsake the LORD**” (Isa. 1:27-28).

In the Consummation – *how it will be*

The Land of Israel & Judah

Israel and Judah were divided since the days of Jeroboam until, thereafter, they were scattered worldwide in two different captivities by Assyria and Babylon – even these two nations will be united once again, according to prophecy, thence to abide forevermore! Hosea foretold the mysterious event, saying,

“Then shall the children of **Judah** and the children of **Israel** be gathered together, and **appoint themselves One Head**, and they shall come up out of the Land: for great shall be the day of Jezreel.” – Hosea 1:11

How shall it once be? Hosea did not immediately expound any further details, but where Hosea left off Jeremiah continued. Jeremiah boldly declared the impossible, saying,

“At the same time, saith the LORD, **will I be the God of ALL THE FAMILIES** of Israel, and they shall be **My people**.” – Jer. 31:1

Look closely at the flow of events which are described from verse 1 to verse 14, my reader. Jeremiah 31:1-14 describes in detail the Regathering and blessing of the two scattered nations and peoples, this is clear. The act of Regathering is not apparently miraculous to the naked eye, so to speak. It involves the preservation of the people, language, and culture throughout the centuries, and then the mass-movement of the multitudes back into The Holy Land. All of this can be accomplished physically speaking; I mean, with no apparent miracle displayed before the world, but their national union under One King with the subsequent result (“*their soul shall be as a watered garden and they shall not sorrow any more at all*” – Jer. 31:12) is an act which involves the invasion of Deity upon humanity! This act is known in prophecy to be accomplished at the **2nd Advent** of Christ, exclusively. Also, let it be noted, the salvation of literal physical Israel is in view here. Therefore as further confirmation, God said, “I will build” (31:4), “and gather” (31:8), unto the location called “the height of Zion” (31:12). Apparently, this is the time when by Regathering and regeneration, God said, “they shall not sorrow ANY MORE AT ALL” (Jer. 31:12), an experience which is impossible until the **2nd Advent** of Christ (see Rev. 21:3-5)! Ezekiel’s prophesying confirms this, saying,

“And I will set up **One Shepherd** over them, and he shall **feed them**, even **My Servant David**; He shall **feed them**, and He shall **be their Shepherd**. And I the LORD will **be their God**, and **My Servant David a Prince among them**; I the LORD have spoken it.” – Ezekiel 34:23-24

“...Son of man, these bones are **THE WHOLE** house of Israel” – Ezek. 37:11, see also 39:25

“...**One King** shall be **King** to them all: and they shall be **no more two Nations**, **neither shall they be divided** into two kingdoms **ANY MORE at all**” – Ezek. 37:22

“**Neither shall they defile themselves ANY MORE with their idols...I will save them...**” – Ezek. 37:23

Upon review of these various chapters of Ezekiel, my reader, the conclusion is apparent. This event describes Divine-acts which are unaccomplished by the **1st Advent** of Christ (even though inferior expressions could be manifested based upon these prophetic words). Furthermore, no potential application for the Gentile Church Age has been specified or cited by the inspired writers of the New Testament. This event is describing (with superiority and entirety) the **2nd Advent** of Christ when divided Israel becomes one Nation and people again without division or transgression “ANY MORE” (Ezek. 37:22-23), and this is accomplished by a single act: David taking the Throne thereto and forevermore (Ezek. 37:25-28). This Throne is not what Peter declared in Acts 2:32-36. That was, very specifically, Christ’s Throne in Heaven. This Throne and Kingdom which Ezekiel describes is not in Heaven alone – abiding behind a veil of clouds – this Throne and Kingdom is in the geographic location of Israel and Judah ON EARTH in real time! Jesus Christ, descending from Heaven, will pierce the skyline with an army fit for the KING of Kings following behind Him (Rev. 19:14), and He – with eyes “as a flame of fire” and arrayed in the royalty of “many crowns” (Rev. 19:12), with “KING of KINGS” written on His thigh and a kingly sash girdled around His paps (Rev. 19:16) – will suddenly appear in Jerusalem to *regenerate, restore, and rule* over the remnant of physical literal Israel and Judah thenceforth and forevermore! In the unfolding events of this time the saying shall be fulfilled,

“And Jesus said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That ye which have followed me, **in the regeneration** when the Son of Man shall sit in the Throne of His glory, ye also shall sit upon twelve thrones, judging **the twelve tribes of Israel**.” – Matthew 19:28

As you can see, the 12 tribes of Israel will be united and ruled over by One King, the Lord Jesus Christ, and His sons and daughters as coheirs of the unfathomable Kingdom! There are distinct and glorious fulfillments of prophecy and promise in the **1st Resurrection** and the **2nd Resurrection**, so we must be careful here. In fulfillment of Ezekiel 20:37-

42, for example, the **1st Resurrection** shall transpire wherein the physical, literal, and earthly Land and Country of Israel will be inhabited by an ALL-holy and ALL-regenerate population of Church Members resurrected from all ages, but at the **2nd Resurrection** the same population (with any additional converts?) shall inherit a heavenly Land, Country, and City of Israel and Jerusalem existing via an extraterrestrial physiology, The New Jerusalem of the New Heaven and Earth!

The restoration prophesied and promised here is, namely, the fulfillment of salvation according to “the bond of the Covenant”, an Israel without **rebels** and without **idolatry**, an Israel where **ALL** of the population in the Land does serve the LORD - this is the fulfillment of what God swore to perform when He lifted up His hand in oath to the Exodus Generation, an oath which generates this last and most glorious work wherein, “all Israel shall be saved” (Rom.11:26)... “And I will cause you to pass under the rod, and I will bring you into **THE BOND OF THE COVENANT**: And I will **purge out** from among you **the rebels**, and **them that transgress** against Me: I will **bring them forth** out of **the Country** where they sojourn, and they shall **not enter** into the Land of Israel: and ye shall know that I am the LORD. As for you, O house of Israel, thus saith the Lord GOD; Go ye, serve ye every one his idols, and hereafter also, if ye will not hearken unto me: but pollute ye My Holy Name no more with your gifts, and with your idols. For in **Mine Holy Mountain**, in **the Mountain of the height of Israel**, saith the Lord GOD, **there shall ALL the House of Israel, ALL of them in the Land, serve Me**: there will I **accept them**, and there will I require your offerings, and the firstfruits of your oblations, with all your holy things. **I will accept you** with your sweet savour, when I bring you out from the people, and gather you out of the countries wherein ye have been scattered; and **I will be sanctified in you** before the heathen. And ye shall know that I am the LORD, when I shall bring you into the Land of Israel, into the country **for the which I LIFTED UP MINE hand to give it to your fathers**.” – Ezekiel 20:37-42

The glorious fulfillments of Covenant, prophecy, and promise existing in the **1st Resurrection** will bloom into a greater glory after the Millennial Reign of Christ is climactically finished in the final and end-all World War against the Satan-inspired remnant of humanity (Rev. 20:1-9). The last standoff will be in “The Beloved City” of Jerusalem in the Land of Judah (Rev. 20:9). Then, at the **2nd Resurrection**, when, shockingly, The New Jerusalem comes out of Heaven from God as a Bride adorned for her Husband (Rev. 21:1-2), the rule and reign of Christ will continue onward into the realms of eternity via a New Heaven and a New Earth! Amen. Come Lord Jesus.

Therefore, in summation, let us identify the people of the Church in the Consummation! According to scripture, the regathered people of Israel and Judah will become one family **by regeneration** (Jer. 31:1-14, Hos. 1:11, Ezek. 34:23-24, 37:11) and, thus, **by conduct**, they will meet **the special criteria** due to the title: “My people” (Jer. 31:1). Not only will the people, **via regeneration, no longer “sorrow ANY MORE AT ALL”** (Jer. 31:12, Rev. 21:3-5), but, also, they will **never again defile themselves by idols** or **backslide from salvation** (Ezek. 37:23). Likewise, as a consequence, the unified families of Israel will **not be divided** into two Kingdoms “ANY MORE at all” (Ezek. 37:22). According to the Gospel of Matthew, all of this is made possible by “**the regeneration**” (Matt. 19:28) – not the regeneration of *the soul*, only, but *the body* and *the rest of creation* will be liberated, also, by a consummating regeneration that has never happened before (Rom. 8:18-23)! – and, because of this, there will be **NO MORE rebels, transgressors, or idolaters in all the Land of Israel & Judah** (which shall be one Land once again and forevermore!), and, notably, **everyone** in the Land will be **servants of the LORD** in Spirit and in Truth (Ezek. 20:37-42)! Hallelujah! Come Lord Jesus.

The Kingdom of God

“the LORD of hosts shall **REIGN in Mount Zion, and in Jerusalem**,
and before His ancients gloriously.” – Isa. 24:23

Kings are arrayed in glory to rule dominions. Kings reign, and they do so upon thrones. Here, in the above scripture, the LORD of armies reigns in Mount Zion and Jerusalem! God forbids the ages of time to continue as they were by usurping the rule and dominion of His enemies. At the **2nd Advent** of Christ – The KING – the Lord descends upon

the fallen angels which have exercised rule in the earth and air for millennia, both they and the earthly kings under their bewitchment. These fallen angels are those who the apostle Paul called, “principalities”, “powers”, “the rulers of the darkness of this world”, and “spiritual wickedness in high places” (Eph. 6:12). In prophecy, the Lord foretold this day through the prophet Isaiah, and the Lord confirmed it again with even more clarity through the apostle John. It was written and confirmed,

“And it shall come to pass in that day, that the LORD shall **PUNISH the host of the high ones that are on high, and the kings of the earth upon the earth.** And they shall be gathered together, as prisoners are gathered in **the pit**, and shall be shut up in **the prison**, and after many days shall they be visited. Then the moon shall be confounded, and the sun ashamed, **when the LORD of hosts shall REIGN in Mount Zion, and in Jerusalem, and before His ancients gloriously.**” – Isaiah 24:21-23

“And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having **the key of the bottomless pit** and **a great chain** in his hand. And he laid hold on **the dragon**, that old serpent, which is **the Devil, and Satan**, and **bound him a thousand years**. And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, **that he should deceive the nations no more**, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season. And I saw **THRONES**, and **they sat upon them**, and **judgment was given unto them**: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and **they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years**. But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the **First Resurrection**. Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the **First Resurrection**: on such the second death hath no power, but **they shall be Priests of God and of Christ, and shall REIGN with him a thousand years.**” – Revelation 20:1-6

This consummating Kingdom will be one “which shall never be destroyed”, namely, in that it “shall not be left to other people, but it shall **break in pieces and consume all these kingdoms**, and it shall stand for ever” (Dan. 2:44). This is the time that, “**the saints** possessed the Kingdom” alongside the Lord Jesus as “joint-heirs” (Dan. 7:22, Rom. 8:17). It is written again, “**the saints** of the Most High shall take the Kingdom, and possess the Kingdom for ever, even for ever and ever... And the Kingdom and dominion, and the greatness of the Kingdom **under the whole heaven**, shall be given to **the people of the saints** of the Most High, whose Kingdom is an everlasting Kingdom, and **all dominions** shall serve and obey Him” (Dan. 7:18, 27). Hallelujah! “And the LORD **shall be KING** over **all the earth**: in that day shall there be one Lord, and His Name one” (Zech. 14:9)!

Dear reader, do you want to be included in what the Lord gave to the apostles, saying, “I appoint **unto you a Kingdom**, as My Father hath appointed unto Me: That ye may eat and drink at My Table in **My Kingdom**...” (Lk. 22:29-30)? The resurrected, ascended, and glorified Christ said, “**To him that overcometh** will I grant to **sit with Me in My Throne**, even as I also overcame, and am set down with My Father in His Throne” (Rev. 3:21). This is a glorious privilege, indeed, to **them** that *overcome*! And *overcome* **we** must! For, it was written, “Many shall be *purified*, and *made white*, and *tried*; but the wicked shall do wickedly: and none of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand” (Dan. 12:10). The *inheritance* of the Kingdom of God is **the consummation of salvation**, my reader. Not just anyone could come in the Gates and “sit down in **the Kingdom of God**” (Luke 13:29), be sure of that! Clarifying this, the Anointed One answered the question: “Are there few that be **saved**?” Here’s the answer:

“Then said one unto him, Lord, **are there few that be saved?** And He said unto them, STRIVE to **enter** in at the strait Gate: for many, I say unto you, will seek to enter in, and *shall not be able*. When once the Master of the House is risen up, and hath shut to the door, and ye begin to **stand without**, and to knock at the door, saying, Lord, Lord, **open unto us**; and he shall answer and say unto you, I know you not whence ye are: Then shall ye begin to say, We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets. But he shall say, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; **depart** from Me, all ye **workers of iniquity**. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see **Abraham**, and **Isaac**, and **Jacob**, and **all the prophets, in the Kingdom of God**, and you **yourselves thrust out**. And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall **sit**

down in the Kingdom of God. And, behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.” – Luke 13:23-30

This is the privileged **inheritance** that the apostles spoke of as *a future event*, as the following scriptures prove. Therefore, just as Christ forewarned how only a *few* men will finally possess **the Kingdom of God** and thereby be **saved**, the apostles detailed the narrow criterion, saying,

“Know ye not that **the unrighteous shall not inherit the Kingdom of God?** Be not deceived: neither **fornicators**, nor **idolaters**, nor **adulterers**, nor **effeminate**, nor **abusers of themselves with mankind**, Nor **thieves**, nor **covetous**, nor **drunkards**, nor **revilers**, nor **extortioners**, **shall inherit the Kingdom of God.**” – 1 Cor. 6:9-10

“But **fornication**, and **all uncleanness**, or **covetousness**, let it not be once *named among you*, as *becometh saints*; Neither **filthiness**, nor **foolish talking**, nor **jesting**, which are not convenient: but rather giving of thanks. For this ye know, that no **whoremonger**, nor **unclean person**, nor **covetous man**, who is **an idolater**, *hath any inheritance in the Kingdom of Christ and of God*. Let no man deceive you with vain words: for *because of these things* cometh the wrath of God upon **the children of disobedience**. Be not ye therefore partakers with **them**.” – Eph. 5:3-7

“Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; **Adultery**, **fornication**, **uncleanness**, **lasciviousness**, **Idolatry**, **witchcraft**, **hatred**, **variance**, **emulations**, **wrath**, **strife**, **seditions**, **heresies**, **Envyings**, **murders**, **drunkenness**, **revellings**, and **such like**: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that **they which do such things shall not inherit the Kingdom of God.**” – Gal. 5:19-21

“He that **overcometh shall inherit all things**; and **I will be his God**, and **he shall be my son**. But **the fearful**, and **unbelieving**, and **the abominable**, and **murderers**, and **whoremongers**, and **sorcerers**, and **idolaters**, and **all liars**, shall have their part in the Lake which burneth with fire and brimstone: which is the second death.” – Rev. 21:7-8

Oh! Can you imagine the Day when that company, *few* in number, will hear the long-awaited declaration of the **King** granting them *entrance* into **the Kingdom of God**! Speaking of this, it was written, “**THEN shall the King say unto them** on His right hand, Come, ye **blessed** of my Father, **inherit the Kingdom prepared for you** from the foundation of the world” (Matt. 25:34)! And, according to apostolic doctrine in the aforementioned scriptures, we know who these people are! In summation, they will be *few* in number like Christ said (Lk. 13:23-30), because, they aren’t **workers of iniquity** (Lk. 13:27). This means that they were “**saints**” (**holy ones**) *inwardly and outwardly* (Dan. 7:18, 22, 27, Rom. 8:17), according to apostolic doctrine. This **holiness** or **separateness** means that they were **overcomers** of the World (Rev. 3:21) by the power of the Cross (Gal. 6:14). Through the Cross – the power of salvific mortification (Rom. 8:1, 13, Gal. 5:24) – this company of **saints** lived up to the name, “**holy one**”, hence they will **inherit the Kingdom of God** (because they exhibited behavior that “*becometh saints*” – Eph. 5:3). Undoubtedly, therefore, all **unrighteous** people will be **EXCLUDED from the Kingdom** (1 Cor. 6:9)! Naming names, this means that all such men are **STRICTLY EXCLUDED FROM THE KINGDOM**: **fornicators**, **idolaters**, **adulterers**, **the effeminate**, **abusers of themselves with mankind**, **thieves**, **covetous people**, **drunkards**, **revilers**, and **extortioners** (1 Cor. 6:9-10), **unclean people**, **filthy people**, **foolish talking people**, **jesting people**, **whoremongers**, and **the children of disobedience** (Eph. 5:3-7), **lascivious people**, **witchcraft users**, **hateful people**, **variant people**, **emulating people**, **wrathful people**, **argumentative people** (those who practice **strife** and **seditions**), **heretical people**, **envious people**, **murderers**, **partiers** (those who practice **revellings**), and **such like people** (Gal. 5:19-21), the **non-overcomers**, the **fearful**, the **unbelieving**, the **abominable**, the **sorcerers**, and **all liars** (Rev. 21:7-8). Glory to the Lamb of God that takes away the sin of the World! “For whatsoever is born of God overcometh the World: and this is the victory that overcometh the World, even our faith” (1 John 5:4).

The City of Jerusalem

“At that time they shall call **Jerusalem** *The Throne* of the LORD; and **all the Nations** shall be gathered unto it, to the Name of the LORD, to **Jerusalem**: neither shall they walk **ANY MORE** after the imagination of their evil heart.” – Jeremiah 3:17

The people of Israel were commanded to pursue God’s promises with perfect hearts, expecting the performance of them in their generational lifetimes. This is why it was commanded, “Speak ye every man the truth to his neighbour; execute the judgment of truth and peace **in your Gates**” (Zech. 8:16). The City of the LORD was meant to be a city of truth, judgment, and peace. The prophets cry was loud and long, sounding like a trumpet in the ears of the people from generation to generation, declaring, “But let judgment run down as waters, and righteousness as a mighty stream” (Amos 5:24)! The hour will come when, finally, what the prophets pursued and God promised... the LORD will accomplish! Speaking of the **1st Resurrection**, it was written, “the name of **the City** from that Day shall be, **THE LORD IS THERE**” (Ezek. 48:35)! And in another place, it was written, “thou shalt call **thy walls** **SALVATION**, and **thy Gates** **PRAISE**” (Isa. 60:18-19)! What does this mean exactly? It was written, furthermore,

“In that day there shall be **A Fountain** opened to the house of David and to the inhabitants of **Jerusalem** *for sin and for uncleanness*. And it shall come to pass in that day, saith the LORD of hosts, that **I will cut off** the names of the idols **out of the Land**, and they shall **NO MORE be remembered**: and also I will cause the prophets and the unclean spirit to **pass out of the Land**.” – Zech. 13:1-2 [see Zech. 14:8]

“In that day shall there be upon **the bells of the horses**, **HOLINESS UNTO THE LORD**; and **the pots in the LORD’S House** shall be like **the bowls before the altar**. Yea, **every pot in Jerusalem and in Judah** shall be **holiness unto the LORD of Hosts**: and all they that sacrifice shall come and take of them, and see the therein: and in that day there shall be **no more the Canaanite in the House of the LORD of hosts**.” – Zech. 14:20-21

Whence and how shall these things be? In the aforementioned scriptures we see: **uncleanness** cleansed, **idols** cut off and expelled from the Land, **unclean spirits** passing away, and, furthermore, household pots in Jerusalem are **holiness** unto the LORD of Hosts! We can be sure that, as the pots are here declared, much more the people shall be! This is because – Glory to God! – The intruding force of Adamic-rebellion, “The Canaanite”, shall no more invade The Holy Land or The House of the LORD of Hosts! Hallelujah! *The Holy Land, holy people, and whole earth* will then be changed from what it is now... it is the **1st Resurrection**! Speaking of what shall be manifest at the **1st Resurrection**, it was written, “And the seventh angel sounded; and there were great voices in Heaven, saying, **The Kingdoms of this World are become the Kingdoms of our Lord, and of His Christ; and HE shall reign for ever and ever**” (Rev. 11:15)! It was written again, “Who shall not fear Thee, O Lord, and glorify Thy Name? For Thou only art **HOLY: for all Nations shall come and worship before Thee**; for Thy judgments are made manifest” (Rev. 15:4)! Shockingly, at this time,

“He [Jesus Christ] shall have dominion also **from sea to sea**, and from the river **unto the ends of the earth**. They that dwell in the wilderness **shall bow before Him**; and **His enemies shall lick the dust**. The kings of Tarshish and of the isles **shall bring presents**: the kings of Sheba and Seba **shall offer gifts**. Yea, **all Kings shall fall down before Him: all nations shall serve Him**.” – Psalm 72:8-11

“Thus saith the LORD of hosts; It shall yet come to pass, that there shall come people, and the inhabitants of many cities: And the inhabitants of one city shall go to another, saying, Let us go speedily to pray before the LORD, and to seek the LORD of hosts: I will go also. Yea, many people and strong nations shall come to seek the LORD of hosts **in Jerusalem**, and to pray before the LORD. Thus saith the LORD of hosts; In those days it shall come to pass, that ten men shall take hold out of *all languages of the nations*, even shall take hold of the skirt of him that is a **Jew**, saying, **We will go with you: for we have heard that God is with you**.” – Zech. 8:20-23

“And it shall come to pass, that every one that is left of all the nations which came against Jerusalem shall even **go up from year to year to worship the KING**, the LORD of hosts, and to keep The Feast of Tabernacles. And it shall be, that whoso will not come up **of all the families of the earth** unto Jerusalem **to worship the KING**, the LORD of hosts, even upon them shall be no rain. And if the family of Egypt go not up, and come not, that have no

rain; there shall be the plague, wherewith the LORD will smite *the heathen* that come not up to keep The Feast of Tabernacles. This shall be the punishment of Egypt, and the punishment of **all nations** that come not up to keep The Feast of Tabernacles.” – Zechariah 14:16-19

“For **the Nation and Kingdom** that will not serve thee shall perish; yea, **those Nations** shall be utterly wasted. The glory of Lebanon shall come unto thee, the fir tree, the pine tree, and the box together, *to beautify the Place of My Sanctuary*; and I will make the place of My feet *glorious*. **The sons also of them that afflicted thee shall come bending unto thee; and all they that despised thee shall bow themselves down at the soles of thy feet; and they shall call thee, The City of the LORD, The Zion of the Holy One of Israel.** Whereas thou hast been forsaken and hated, so that no man went through thee, I will make thee *an eternal excellency*, a joy of many generations. Thou shalt also suck the milk of **the Gentiles**, and shalt suck the breast of **Kings**: and thou shalt know that **I the LORD am thy Saviour and thy Redeemer, the Mighty One of Jacob.** For brass I will bring gold, and for iron I will bring silver, and for wood brass, and for stones iron: I will also make **thy officers peace**, and **thine exactors righteousness**. Violence shall **NO MORE** be heard in **thy Land**, wasting nor destruction within **thy borders**; but thou shalt call **thy walls SALVATION**, and **thy gates PRAISE.**” – Isaiah 60:12-18

Furthermore, in yet another glory of grace and redemption which shall begin after the Millennial Reign is completed, at the dawn of the **2nd Resurrection** – when the New Jerusalem shall come out of Heaven from God to reside in the New Heaven and the New Earth forevermore (Rev. 21:1-2) – The promise of the Lord Jesus Christ shall be fulfilled in full reward: “Him that overcometh will I make **a pillar in The Temple** of My God, and he shall go no more out: and I will write upon him the Name of My God, and **the Name of the City** of My God, which is **New Jerusalem**, which cometh down out of Heaven from My God: and I will write upon him My new Name” (Rev. 3:12). This is mysteriously fulfilled somehow in ways we cannot fathom. I say this because, the apostle John testified, “And there came unto me one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, **I will shew thee the Bride, the Lamb’s wife.** And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high Mountain, and shewed me **that Great City, The Holy Jerusalem**, descending out of Heaven from God, having the glory of God” (Rev. 21:9-11). Yes! And John did further testify,

“And I saw **no Temple** therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are **the Temple** of it. And **the City** had no need of the sun, neither of the moon, to shine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the light thereof. And **the nations of them which are saved** shall walk in the light of it: and **the Kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it.** And **The Gates of it shall not be shut at all by day:** for there shall be no night there. And they shall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it. **And there shall be in no wise enter into it ANY THING THAT DEFILETH, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb’s Book of Life.** And he shewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as crystal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb. In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life, which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for **the healing of the nations.** And there shall be **no more curse:** but **the Throne** of God and of the Lamb shall be in it; and **His servants shall serve Him:** And they shall see His face; and His name shall be in their foreheads. And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and **they shall reign** for ever and ever.” – Revelation 21:22-22:5

Once the exclusivity of this City is fully revealed to the reader, the angel turned to the apostle John, and said, “Seal not the saying of the prophecy of this Book: for the time is at hand” (Rev. 22:10). The angel was signifying how those of the Last Days need to know what is ready to descend upon us in this glorious work of redemption; that, in knowing what shall soon be we might be compelled to prepare for it! Oh, this heavenly scene which shall finally be manifest! Perhaps now, at last, my reader might be compelled to echo the age-old question which exasperated the prophets: “**WHO** shall **ascend** into **the Hill of the LORD?**” “**WHO** shall **dwell** in **Thy Holy Hill** (Ps. 24:3, 15:1)? Indeed, **WHO!**” The angel did further testify, saying,

“He that is **unjust**, let him be **unjust** still: and he which is **filthy**, let him be **filthy** still: and he that is **righteous**, let him be **righteous** still: and he that is **holy**, let him be **holy** still. And, behold, I come quickly; and my reward is with me, to give every man according as his work shall be. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last. **Blessed are they that do his commandments**, that they may have right to the tree of life, and may **enter in through the Gates into the City**. For **without** are **dogs**, and **sorcerers**, and **whoremongers**, and **murderers**, and **idolaters**, and **whosoever loveth and maketh a lie**.” – Revelation 22:11-15

Will it be you, *my reader*? Will you enter in through **the Gates** of this **Holy City**? Follow **holiness**, my reader, “without which no man shall see the Lord” (Heb. 12:14). To enter **the Gates** of this **City** will mean only one thing, my reader --- SALVATION! Can you imagine yourself standing upon the earth in the latter day when, finally, in very deed, you pass through **the Gates** of this **City** once and for all? When, God said, “Violence shall no more be heard in **Thy Land**, wasting nor destruction within **thy borders**; but thou shalt call **thy walls** SALVATION, and **thy Gates** PRAISE” (Isa. 60:18)! What a glorious feeling that will be! “In that day shall this song be sung in **the Land of Judah**; We have a strong **City**; SALVATION will God appoint **for walls** and **bulwarks**. **Open ye the Gates**, that **the righteous nation which keepeth the truth** may **enter in**” (Isaiah 26:1-2)!

Therefore, in summation, let us understand the Church of the Consummation! At this time, not one single man will be able enter the City of Jerusalem unless he or she is **saved**! Explicitly, it was written, **the walls** of **the City** will be called **SALVATION** and **the Gates** PRAISE (Isa. 60:18-19, 26:1-2)! This mean that within this **City** and **Land**, there will be no more **sin**, **uncleanness**, **idolatry**, **false prophets**, or **unclean spirits** (Zech. 13:1-2); no more **unholiness** of any kind and no more **Canaanites** (Zech. 14:20-21); no more “**any thing that defileth**, neither **whatsoever worketh abomination**, or **maketh a lie**”, but only **those persons** whose names “**are written in the Lamb’s Book of Life**” (Rev. 21:22-22:5); only **those persons** who *were, are, and will be the servants of the LORD* (Rev. 22:3), or, “**they that do His commandments**”, will enter into **the City of Jerusalem**, because “**without** are **dogs**, and **sorcerers**, and **whoremongers**, and **murderers**, and **idolaters**, and **whosoever loveth and maketh a lie**” (Rev. 22:11-15); only those persons who make-up a “**righteous nation which keepeth the truth**” will enter into **the City of Jerusalem** (Isa. 26:1-2)!

Mount Zion

The Almighty will sanctify the unsanctified Mountain of God - *Mount Zion* - through a heavy hand of apocalyptic judgments this world has never seen. He will do this leading up into and upon the **2nd Advent** of Christ. Therefore at the **1st Resurrection**, it was written,

“And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the Name of the LORD shall be delivered: for **in Mount Zion** and **in Jerusalem** shall be **DELIVERANCE**, as the LORD hath said, and in the remnant whom the LORD shall call.” - Joel 2:30-32

“The sun and the moon shall be darkened, and the stars shall withdraw their shining. The LORD also shall **ROAR** out of Zion, and utter his voice from Jerusalem; and the heavens and the earth shall shake: but the LORD *will be* the hope of his people, and the strength of the children of Israel. So shall ye know that I am the LORD your **God dwelling in Zion, My holy Mountain**: then shall **Jerusalem** be **holy**, and there shall **no strangers pass through her any more**. And it shall come to pass in that day, *that* the mountains shall drop down new wine, and the hills shall flow with milk, and all the rivers of Judah shall flow with waters, and a fountain shall come forth of the house of the LORD, and shall water the valley of Shittim.” – Joel 3:15-18

God has a holy and jealous prerogative which is supreme over all else, that the world of sinners would stand amazed to finally behold, at last, the people of Israel saved by the **2nd Advent** of Christ... and thereby, God says of literal physical Israel, “So shall ye know that **I am the LORD your God dwelling in Zion**” (Joel 2:17, 21). The Almighty is saying that He will do staggering and fearful things so that, thereby, Judah and Jerusalem will dwell in peace “for ever” “from

generation to generation”, “for the LORD **dwelleth in Zion**” (Joel 3:21). Alas, and, woe to us! For we do not know that “the LORD **dwelleth in Zion**” (Joel 3:21)! We do not see what we need to “know” (Joel 3:17)! You see, my reader, the “Holy Mountain” of God must become holy and stay holy. Holy persons dwell in a Holy Land, therefore, God said, “there shall **no strangers** pass through her ANY MORE” (Joel. 3:17). Every promise and prayer which, like the holiness and fortitude of the Israelite civilization, crumbled into desolation and oblivion throughout the centuries, they will, shockingly, and suddenly, be fulfilled by the strong hand of the Lord! Seemingly impossible promises and prayers like,

“Cast forth lightning, and scatter them: shoot out thine arrows, and **destroy them**. Send thine hand from above; rid me, and deliver me out of great waters, from the hand of **strange children**; Whose mouth speaketh vanity, and their right hand is a right hand of falsehood...Rid me, and deliver me from the hand of **strange children**, whose mouth speaketh vanity, and their right hand is a right hand of falsehood.” – Psalm 144:6-8, 11

Zion is the chosen location wherein salvation was promised to abide; the place where saved people dwell in communion with the Living God. Throughout the long durations of apostasy and wide-spread backsliding, God set watchmen on the walls of Jerusalem for the work of intercession. “I have set watchmen upon thy walls, O Jerusalem, which shall never hold their peace day or night: ye that make mention of the LORD, keep not silence, And give Him no rest, till He establish, and till He make Jerusalem a praise in the earth” (Isa. 62:6-7). What were they watching? What were they looking for? These beloved watchmen were ruined by the prophetic scene which God did open their eyes to behold – a Jerusalem beautified! – a scene which has faded from the memory of most of the Israelite populous who was taken in the devices of their own imaginations. Therefore, these watchmen, standing upon their God-appointed watch, would utter prayers such as: “Will the Lord cast off for ever? And will He be favourable no more? Is His mercy clean gone for ever? Doth His promise fail for evermore” (Ps. 77:7-8)? What God promised God will perform, though it tarries. The event is a fixed date on The Prophetic Calendar, but no man knows the day or the hour. Speaking on this wise, God said, “My salvation shall not tarry: and **I will place salvation in Zion** for Israel My glory” (Isa. 46:13). This event is, with entirety, the **2nd Advent** of Christ. There is no controversy to this... but, my reader, will we recognize salvation *when* it comes, *where* it shall be, and *how* it will manifest in the fullest and most mature form redeemed humanity will ever see!? Oh, my reader! Do you see what God sees? When looking upon the eye of God we see in its apple, *Zion*. My reader, we must understand this! Can the Holy Scripture be any clearer than what was spoken through the prophet Isaiah, saying,

“And in this **Mountain** shall the LORD of hosts make unto all people a feast of fat things, a feast of wines on the lees, of fat things full of marrow, of wines on the lees well refined. And He will destroy **in this Mountain** the face of *the covering* cast over all people, and *the veil* that is spread over all nations. He will swallow up death in victory; and the Lord GOD will wipe away tears from off all faces; and the rebuke of his people shall he take away from off all the earth: for the LORD hath spoken *it*. And it shall be said in that day, Lo, THIS IS OUR GOD; we have waited for Him, and He will save us: this *is* the LORD; we have waited for Him, we will be glad and rejoice in His salvation. For **in this Mountain shall the hand of the LORD rest**, and Moab shall be trodden down under Him, even as straw is trodden down for the dunghill. And He shall spread forth his hands in the midst of them, as he that swimmeth spreadeth forth his hands to swim: and He shall bring down their pride together with the spoils of their hands. And the fortress of the high fort of thy walls shall He bring down, lay low, *and* bring to the ground, *even* to the dust. In that day shall this song be sung in **the Land of Judah**; We have a **strong City**; **SALVATION** will God appoint **for walls** and **bulwarks**. Open ye **the Gates**, that **the righteous nation which keepeth the truth may enter in**.” – Isaiah 25:6-26:2

At the location of “**this Mountain**” (6-7, 10), and, unto the population of people gathered thereupon – so glorious an experience of grace will commence that it will captivate the World with astonishment: namely, the taking away of *the veil*, by the which, at last, “the rebuke of His people shall He take away from off all the earth” (Isa. 26:8) thenceforth and forevermore! Utterly amazing! How exactly will this be accomplished, you wonder? The Lord Jesus Christ shall suddenly appear! Enough said. No other explanation is needed! This is the hour when the GOD-MAN appears! Speaking of the **1st Resurrection**, it was written,

“Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? this same Jesus, which is taken up from you into heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven. Then returned they unto Jerusalem from **the Mount called Olivet**, which is from Jerusalem a sabbath day's journey.” – Acts 1:11-12

“And **then shall appear the sign of the Son of Man in heaven**: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of Man coming in the clouds of heaven WITH POWER AND GREAT GLORY.” – Matthew 24:30

“And His feet shall stand in that day upon **the Mount of Olives**, which is before Jerusalem on the east...” – Zech. 14:4

“And I looked, and, lo, a Lamb stood on **the Mount Sion**, and with him an hundred forty and four thousand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads. And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps: And they sung as it were a new song before the throne, and before the four beasts, and the elders: and no man could learn that song but the hundred and forty and four thousand, which were redeemed from the earth. These are they which were **not defiled with women**; for they are **virgins**. These are they which **follow the Lamb whithersoever He goeth**. These were **redeemed from among men**, being **the firstfruits** unto God and to the Lamb. And **in their mouth was found no guile**: for they are **without fault** before the throne of God.” – Rev. 14:1-5

When the signs of Christ's 2nd coming do multiply and hasten upon the world, will we be ready? My reader, do you meet the criteria? Have you kept **virginity** (2 Cor. 11:2-4) or have you committed **adultery** (James 4:4)? Have you **followed the Lamb whithersoever He goeth** by the a present-continuous *renewing of your mind* that you might be *transformed* from this world and *conformed* to the Living Christ (Rom. 12:1-2)? Or have you, like others, wandered from this pathway of eternal life (John 14:6) because you are weary of the fight that present-continuous *mortification* requires (1 Tim. 6:12, Num. 21:5, Rom. 8:1, 13, Col. 3:5, Gal. 5:24)? Oh, dear saints, “ye have need of patience, that, after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise” (Heb. 10:36)! So that, at last, unlike others (Rev. 2:4, 14, 20, 3:2, 15-16), you might stand *faultless* before the presence of God's glory (Rev. 14:5, Jude 1:24), and hear, “enter thou into the joy of thy Lord” (Matt. 25:21, 23)! Are your hands **clean**? Is your heart **pure** (Ps. 24:4)? Again, I ask, “**WHO**”, “**WHO**”, **WHO**”, “**WHO**” are you (Ps. 15:1, 24:3)? “Blessed are **the pure in heart**: for they shall *see God*” (Matt. 5:8). Even so, Amen.

In the New Testament – *how it is*

The Land of Israel & Judah

The mystery hidden from the foundation of the world has now been manifested to our enrichment! It was written and proven that, “through their fall”, meaning, the Jews, “salvation is come unto the Gentiles” (Rom. 11:11)! The onetime impoverished and God-forsaken heathen have now become, in the Gentile Church Age, the sons and daughters of God. With staggering boldness, the Jewish apostle Paul declared to the Galatians, “if ye **be Christ's then are ye Abraham's seed**, and **heirs according to the promise**” (Galatians 3:29). The promise of Israelite salvation was exclusively given to Abraham's seed, and, thus, only Abraham's seed was the rightful inheritor of the Kingdom of God located in what was mapped-out to be *The Land of Israel & Judah* (see Gen. 15:1-21). This Land was fully inherited, occupied, and ruled by King David, and in subsequent generations it was lost. Generations repeated the same awful course until today, in the Gentile Church Age... the wait continues. What is so profound, though, is that we, The Gentile Church, exist as a manifestation of these promises which were given exclusively to Israel – therefore in the experience of salvation we, the Gentiles, become Israelites! Without entirety, we are partakers of the promises which will eventually save literal physical Israel. The same promises which will save physical Israel do save the Gentiles, in an inferior expression of what is to come.

Though we, The Gentile Church, are reckoned according to all the promises that God gave to literal physical Israel, the performance of the promises are for our salvation via an inferior and exclusively spiritual fulfillment of the age-old promises of God. Redeemed Gentiles are called “*Abraham’s seed*”, spiritually speaking (Gal. 3:29), just as they are said to be *Jews inwardly*, legally speaking (Rom. 2:25-29, 9:6). The Gentiles are even called “the circumcision”, truthfully speaking, over and above the apostate physical circumcision which opposed the true Messiah (Php. 3:1-3). Paul is bold to say this because he knows that, in God’s perspective, “neither **circumcision** availeth any thing, nor **uncircumcision**, but a **new creature**. And as many as walk according to this rule, peace be on them, and mercy, and upon **the Israel of God**” (Gal. 6:15-16). Paul is but an echo of what was prophesied by Hosea, saying,

“Yet the number of **the children of Israel** shall be as the sand of the sea, which cannot be measured nor numbered; and it shall come to pass, that **in the place** where it was said unto them, Ye are not my people, there it shall be said unto them, **Ye are the sons of the living God**.” – Hosea 1:10

God hath spoken and done it, hallelujah! Therefore Paul called mere Gentiles “*the Israel of God*”, in Galatians 6:16, just as he called them *the seed of Abraham* in Galatians 3:29. This truth was not new to the Galatian Church (see Rom. 4:12, 9:6-8), but it was recently called into question by some heretical Judaizers who were infecting the Gentile Churches with the leaven of their hypocrisy. Even Peter, to whom was committed “the apostleship of the circumcision” (Gal. 2:8), wrote to the Gentiles from the location that he called, “the Church that is at Babylon” (1 Pet. 5:13). Peter was compelled to reckon the Gentile Christians as Israelites in spirit and truth, saying,

“But ye [the Gentile Christians] are a **chosen Generation, a Royal Priesthood, an Holy Nation, a peculiar People**; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light: *Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.* Dearly beloved, I beseech you as strangers and pilgrims, abstain from fleshly lusts, which war against the soul” – 1 Peter 2:9-11 [compare with Exodus 19:5]

This is because, in Christ, the two races (the Gentiles and the Jews) have become “one new man” (Eph. 2:15). Both Peter and Paul knew the reasoning behind it all. All mysteries were disclosed and by them, preached! “For through [Christ] we both [the Jews and the Gentiles] have access by one Spirit unto the Father. Now therefore [the Gentiles] are **no more strangers and foreigners**, but **fellowcitizens with the saints**, and **of the Household of God**” (Eph. 2:18-19)! All that being said, the writer of Hebrews is very bold to declare to the Christians of the Gentile Church Age, “**YE ARE COME** unto **Mount Sion**” (Heb. 12:22)! The formerly forbidden race of mankind – the Gentiles – has come unto and ascended upon the Holy Mountain of God, Mount Zion! The same Mountain which was a mystery to the unholy world of Gentile sinners for centuries! The same Mountain which is so *set-apart, holy*, and *glorious*, all who endeavored to venture upon its slopes to ascend thereto were confronted with the searching question, “**Who** shall ascend into **The Hill of the LORD**” and “**Who** shall dwell in **Thy Holy Hill**” (Ps. 24:1, 15:1)! The statement “**YE ARE COME**” is a present-tense reckoning in real time... *but how?*

“For **YE ARE NOT COME** unto *the Mount that might be touched*, and that burned with fire, nor unto blackness, and darkness, and tempest, And the sound of a trumpet, and the voice of words; which voice they that heard intreated that the word should not be spoken to them any more: (For they could not endure that which was commanded, And if so much as a beast touch the mountain, it shall be stoned, or thrust through with a dart: And so terrible was the sight, that Moses said, I exceedingly fear and quake:) But **YE ARE COME** unto **Mount Sion**, and **UNTO The City of the Living God, The Heavenly Jerusalem**, and to an innumerable company of angels, to The General Assembly and Church of The Firstborn, which are written in Heaven, and to God the Judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect, And to Jesus the Mediator of the New Covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling, that speaketh better things than that of Abel.” – Hebrews 12:18-24

The Christians of the Gentile Church Age (both *Jews* and *Gentiles* made Israelites indeed through Christ) are reckoned according to their *spiritual position* in Christ. They are depicted here, in Hebrews 12:22, as those who were presently standing upon *The Mountain of Zion* already, spiritually speaking, simply because they were legally there *right then* in Christ!

They are depicted to have **come** (“*ye are come*” – Heb. 12:22), in real time, at the same place where they are depicted elsewhere to **sit** (“*made is sit together*” – Eph. 2:6). These are affirmations of a **spiritual position** in “*heavenly places*”, my reader (see Eph. 2:6). The Christians of the Gentile Church Age were called with a “heavenly calling” (Heb. 3:1), empowered by “the heavenly gift” (Heb. 6:4), made possible by a Heavenly Man (John 3:31) who made an atonement for the all men via the “heavenly things” (Heb. 8:5), whereabouts, also, Christ stands as Mediator and KING (Heb. 9:23-24, Acts 2:32-36, Eph. 1:20-23). Therefore, we, the Christians of the Gentile Church Age, are citizens of this Heavenly Country called, “The Heavenly Jerusalem” (Heb. 11:16, 12:22, Eph. 2:19), for it is evident in our “affections” and “conversation” (Col. 3:1-3, Php. 3:20) while we abide here on earth. “**Who shall ascend The Hill of the LORD**” (Ps. 24:3)? Evidently the Gentiles Christians do, according to scripture. In and through the vehicle of redemption the Gentiles meet the caricature of holiness. Therefore the Gentiles, with inferiority, dwell in *The Land of Israel & Judah* **right now** (in what Hebrews 11:14-16 & 12:22 called a *Heavenly Country*), notwithstanding we wait for a more superior and entire fulfillment of this reality in physical actuality *on earth* when God turns back to the Jews according to the flesh for the consummation of salvation (see Romans 11:1-36) – a “*salvation ready to be revealed in the Last Time*” (1 Pet. 1:5).

“These all died in faith, not having received the promises, but having seen them afar off, and were persuaded of them, and embraced them, and confessed that **they were strangers and pilgrims on the earth**. For they that say such things declare plainly that they **seek a Country**. And truly, if they had been mindful of **that country from whence they came out**, they might have had opportunity to have returned. But now they desire **a better Country**, that is, **an Heavenly**: wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God: for **He hath prepared for them a City**.” – Hebrews 11:13-16

Until then – the consummation – the Gentile Christians are Abraham’s seed and inward Jews who are Heaven’s Ambassadors and New Jerusalem’s Heralds, for they are the first-fruits of Christ’s glorious beginning as KING (Rom. 8:23). The Gentiles are the New Testament *spies* who were appointed the duty to *search* the Heavenly Country of Christ’s glorious reign so that they, thereafter, return to the audiences of earth-dwellers who wait for the good report. The Gentile Christians, with the *good fruit* of The Promised Land borne by a staff on their backs and fruit in their hands, preach The Good News and reveal The Good Land which is, namely, *the fruit* of Heaven! Just as the spies of Israel were commissioned of old, the Gentile Christians report what they have seen and heard of the Heavenly Country of the Christ’s glorious ascension and enthronement!

“So they went up and **searched the Land**...And they came unto the brook of Eshcol, and cut down from thence a branch with one cluster of grapes, and they bare it between to upon a staff; and they brought of the pomegranates, and of the figs...And they returned from **searching of the Land** after forty days. And they went and came to Moses, and to Aaron, and to all the congregation of the children of Israel, unto the wilderness of Paran, to Kadesh; and **brought back word unto them**, and unto all the congregation, and **shewed them the fruit of the Land**” – Numbers 13:21-26

Only *new creatures* are enabled to survey the Land and Country of the New Jerusalem. Thus only they can declare the glories which are yet to come in the New Heaven and New Earth (2 Cor. 5:17, Heb. 12:22, Gal. 4:26, Rev. 21:1-2). Therefore, my reader, if you bear in your hands the first-fruits of the Kingdom of God in Christ (James 1:18, Gal. 5:22-23), show the world! Show the world how these first-fruits which are begun in us are but the beginning of a vast and innumerable harvest which is to come! Christians must *show the world* how the *new creation* which is begun in us (2 Cor. 5:17) is but the first-fruits of the *New Heaven and New Earth* which is to come (Rev. 21:1-2); *the regeneration* begun in us (Titus 3:5) is but the first-fruits of the *regeneration* to come (Rom. 8:18-21, Php. 3:12-14, Matt. 19:28); *the adoption* begun in us (Rom. 8:15) is but the first-fruits of the *adoption* to come (Rom. 8:23); *the redemption* begun in us (1 Cor. 1:30) is but the first-fruits of the *redemption* to come (Php. 3:14, Rom. 8:23), *the Kingdom* begun in us (Lk. 17:21, Col. 1:13, Eph. 2:6) is but the first-fruits of the *Kingdom* to come (2 Tim. 4:1, Rev. 3:21); *the resurrection* begun in us (Rom. 6:4) is but the first-fruits of the *resurrection* to come (1 Cor. 15:50); *the eternal life* begun in us (1 John 3:15, 5:12-13) is but the first-fruits of the *eternal life* to come (2 Cor. 5:1-4, 1 Tim. 6:12); *the overcoming power* begun in us (Eph. 2:5, 1 John 5:4) is but the first-fruits of the *overcoming power* to come (1 Cor. 15:54-57); *the defeat of death* begun in us (Rom. 8:2-6, Eph. 2:5) is but the

first-fruits of the *defeat of death* to come (1 Cor. 15:54-57); *the light* begun in us (Eph. 5:8) is but the first-fruits of the *light* which is to come (Prov. 4:18, 2 Pet. 1:19, Rev. 21:23-25); *the revelatory sight* of God which is revealed now to us (2 Cor. 3:17-18, 1 Cor. 13:12, Heb. 11:27) is but the first-fruits of the *revelatory sight* of God which is to come (1 John 3:2); *the knowing of God* which is begun in us (1 John 2:4, John 17:3) is but the first-fruits of the *knowing of God* which is to come (1 Cor. 13:12); *the conformity to the Person of Christ* “as He is” right now which has begun in us (1 John 2:4-6, 4:17) is but the first-fruits of the *conformity to the Person of Christ* “as He is” in the glory which is to come (1 John 3:2, Rev. 2:27). Upon showing this to the world, our mission is complete. Those who are granted ears to hear will understand *the Country* from which we have come and to which we are going. They will then, as the prophecy foretold (Zech. 8:23), believe in the gospel and join with us in our venture! Upon seeing that *the fruit* is good, *the Land* is to be desired, *the KING* is matchless and inexpressible in beauty and power - *the Gospel* is realized and believed!

In conclusion via all the aforementioned truths: the population of people who are inhabitants of The Land of Israel & Judah are *the regenerate*: *Jews* and *Gentiles* by flesh who have been inwardly regenerated into Israelites in Spirit and in Truth! For this reason, Paul said to the Gentiles, “if ye *be Christ’s* then are ye *Abraham’s seed*” (Gal. 3:29). By the indwelling of Christ via *regeneration*, every race of man does become *Abraham’s seed* spiritually speaking, *inward Jews* legally speaking, and “*the circumcision*” truthfully speaking (Gal. 3:29, Rom. 2:25-29, 9:6, Php. 3:1-3) – therefore they are, rightly called, “*the Israel of God*” (Gal. 6:15-16). They are, furthermore, “a *chosen Generation*, a *Royal Priesthood*, an *Holy Nation*, a *peculiar People*” (1 Pet. 2:9-11, Ex. 19:5), which means that they are “*fellowcitizens with the saints*” of the Old Testament and they are, now, “*of the Household of God*” (Eph. 2:18-19). By *the 2nd birth*, Christians of all fleshly races are made into *natives* and *ambassadors* of the Nation of Israel. By *spiritual position*, Christians have *come* (Heb. 12:22) to the same place which they have been made to *sit* (Eph. 2:6) - the Land of Israel & Judah (the Heavenly Country), the Mountain of Zion, the Heavenly Jerusalem, unto Join-Heir Thrones to rule and reign with Christ (Heb. 11:14-16, 12:22, Eph. 2:19, Rom. 8:17). All the aforementioned details of identity are true via the inner-workings of redemption which are, in summation: *the regeneration* (Titus 3:5), *the adoption* (Rom. 8:15), *the Kingdom* (Lk. 17:21, Col. 1:13, Eph. 2:6), *the resurrection* (Rom. 6:4), *eternal life* (1 Jn. 3:15, 5:12-13), *overcoming power* (Eph. 2:5, 1 Jn. 5:4), *the defeat of death* (Rom. 8:2-6, Eph. 2:5), *the light* (Eph. 5:8), *the revelatory sight* (2 Cor. 3:17-18, 1 Cor. 13:12, Heb. 11:27), *knowing God* (1 Jn. 2:4, Jn. 17:3), *conformity to Christ* (1 Jn. 2:4-6, 4:17). Therefore, at last! Let us understand *the New Testament* in *perfect harmony* with *the Old Testament* and *the Consummation*, in that, unconverted “*strangers*” and “*foreigners*” are forbidden entrance to the Church (Eph. 2:18-19); for, who else would dare drawn near (Heb. 10:19-23)!? And, who else even could draw near!

The Kingdom of God

Heralded from the mouth of fishermen came the words, “*The Kingdom of Heaven* is at hand” (Matt. 10:7). Had their proclamation been *mere words* then society could have hushed their lunacy by a frown of disapproval, and that’s the end of it. This frown of disapproval, society gave, but the proclamation went forth to shake the very pillars upon which heathen society boasted in the pomp of false-supremacy! What the apostle Paul did later explain, all the world felt: “*The Kingdom of God* is not in word, but IN POWER” (1 Cor. 4:20)! All the arms of heathen society were aggravated into a frenzy of Satan’s masterful design to suppress a people, a message, and a movement, but to no avail. This KING and Kingdom which the apostles proclaimed, proved unconquerable. This is because He and it were not afar off and irrelevant, but “at hand” and “in their midst”! The heralded proclamation was proven statement of fact! This means that the populous was not fighting against *a message* but *a Man*! More specifically, an incarnated, one-time deceased, later resurrected, finally ascended, and gloriously enthroned, everlasting Man! – This is *the Gospel*.

All who were granted ears to hear were redeemed from this ungodly world by faith in the Gospel. All those who believed in *the good news* of the God-Man got possessed. God-forsaken Gentile humanity became God-indwelt (Acts 8:12, 14:22, 19:8, 20:25, 28:23, 28:31): They staggered long in the world’s dark plight (2 Cor. 4:4), serving Satan who ruled the spiritual night (Eph. 2:2-3), never to know the God who dwells in unapproachable Light (1 Tim. 6:16) ...until the word

was heard sounding through the highways and byways of Gentile humanity, “The Kingdom of God is at hand!” *What did it mean?*

The KING *of the Jews* became the KING *of the world* on the cross of Calvary. Jesus Christ did, by His own blood, purchase the uttermost parts of the world as His dominion. This was prophesied of old in the words, “I will declare the decree: the LORD hath said unto me, Thou art My Son; this day have I begotten Thee. Ask of Me, and I shall give Thee *the heathen* for **Thine inheritance**, and *the uttermost parts of the earth* for **Thy possession**” (Ps. 2:7-8; John 17:20). What a glory! By Jesus’ *death* came *life*, and through the KING’s seeming extermination The Cornerstone was laid for the Kingdom’s building and progressive manifestation (Ps. 118:22-23, Isa. 28:16, Matt. 21:42, Mark 12:10, Lk. 10:17, Acts 4:11, Rom. 9:33, Eph. 2:20, 1 Pet. 2:4-8)! This Jesus, who said, “My Kingdom is not of this world” (John 18:36), became The Ruler of the world! The heathen of the earth do object to this mystery, albeit, it is because they cannot fathom how and in what way *The Kingdom of God* is manifest.

#1) Kings rule a people, thus God had an earthly Throne in the midst of His people Israel.

The Messiah, “the anointed One”, does rule a people on earth even still, though it be in the Gentile Church Age. Shockingly, there exists an earthly Throne in the midst of the people *Israel* right now! Do you know where it is? One Gentile-Israelite Christian saw the mystery, and wrote,

“The Holy Ghost is here,
Where saints in prayer agree,
As Jesus’ parting gift is near
Each pleading company.

Not far away is He,
To be by prayer brought nigh,
But here **in present majesty**,
As in His courts on high.

He dwells within our soul,
An ever welcome guest;
He reigns with absolute control,
As monarch in the breast.

Obedient to Thy will,
We wait to feel Thy power;
O Lord of life, our hopes fulfill,
And bless this hallowed hour.” – C.H. Spurgeon

In the mystery of God’s unsearchable wisdom (Rom. 11:33), the Lord said, “**Behold**, *The Kingdom of God* is **within you**” (Lk. 17:21). What about you, my reader? **Can you see** *The Kingdom of God*? The Lord Jesus said, “BEHOLD!” Which means, “LOOK!” Can you see it? The Lord Jesus also said, “Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, **he cannot see** *The Kingdom of God*” (John 3:3). A man cannot enter into a Kingdom which he cannot see. Truthfully, truthfully, the Lord Jesus repeated: “Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, **he cannot enter** into *The Kingdom of God*” (John 3:5).

#2) Kings rule territories, thus God had a Land over which He ruled.

John the Baptist prophesied of the imminent arrival of the Messiah, by saying, “Repent yet: for *The Kingdom of Heaven* is at hand” (Matt. 3:2). The Messiah Himself preached at the onset of His ministry, “Repent: for *The Kingdom of Heaven* is at hand” (Matt. 4:17). The chosen and consecrated apostles, being sent to preach to the people of Israel for the first time, were commissioned, “And as ye go, preach, saying, *The Kingdom of Heaven* is at hand” (Matt. 10:7). To whom were the apostles sent? They were sent to *the people of Israel* who were scattered all throughout The Promised Land, but upon their

overwhelming rejection of the Messiah, the Lord Jesus testified, “*The Kingdom of God* shall be **taken from you**, and **given to a nation** bringing forth the fruits thereof” (Matt. 21:43). Illustrating this, consider the historical account written in The Gospel of Matthew.

As the Lord Jesus was increasingly astonished at faith-less and rebellious Israel, He encountered a Gentile who had great faith. Upon this encounter, the Lord said, “Verily I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, no, *not in Israel*. And I say unto you, that **many shall come from the East and West, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in The Kingdom of Heaven**. But *the children of The Kingdom* shall be **cast out into outer darkness**: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth” (Matt. 8:10-12). Shockingly, the Gentiles are foretold to be sitting down beside Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob in *The Kingdom of God*! And, furthermore, those to whom The Kingdom of God was originally promised, the Jews (here called, “*the children of The Kingdom*”) were cast out into the everlasting torments which did formerly belong to the heathen! When the long-awaited Messiah did finally arrive in Israel, the terms were clear. This nation-wide rejection of physical Israel was forewarned already by the prophet John the Baptist (“*he shall prepare the way*” – Mal. 3:1). John endeavored to prepare the people of Israel for what they did not expect, if they did not repent and bring forth fruits worthy of *The Kingdom of God*. It was written of John,

“But when he [John] saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come? Bring forth therefore fruits meet for repentance: And THINK NOT TO SAY within yourselves, We have Abraham to our father: for I say unto you, that **God is able of these stones to raise up children unto Abraham**. And now also **the axe is laid unto the root of the trees**: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire.” – Matt. 3:7-10

The security of Israel’s citizenship in *The Kingdom of God* was illustrated by John the Baptist, saying, “the axe is laid unto the root of the trees: therefore every tree which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and cast into the fire” (Matt. 3:7-10). This is an alarming message for *physical Israel*! As you can see, Israel expected to sit down with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob in *The Kingdom of God*. John decried their presumption and pride, saying, “God is able of these stone to raise up children unto Abraham” (Matt. 3:7-10). If God is able to make stones and rocks miraculously turn into the sons and daughters of Abraham, God can turn *the Gentiles* into Abraham’s seed. Stones and rocks have no father or mother! They have no body and they are nobody! And yet, shockingly, these inanimate objects can become the people and lineage of Abraham to whom was promised salvation in the Messiah! No wonder, then, how God accomplished this miracle in *the Gentiles*.

#3) Kings rule by Law, thus God had a Government to enforce what was written.

#4) Kings invade, conquer, and defend, thus God had armies of sword-drawn men to command.

#5) Kings fight battles, thus God went out with the forces of Israel to war.

However difficult it may be for some, we must identify the numerical statements above in how they exist in the Gentile Church Age, according to the scriptures. *The Kingdom of God* in the Old Testament was inextricably connected to a sophisticated Government established through literal sword-to-sword combat in War. It is impossible to understand *The Kingdom of God* outside of these terms, thus we need to identify them in the New Testament. Therefore, my reader, consider **the invisible background** which *contextualizes* biblical and scriptural Christianity during the Gentile Church Age, and in so doing, God willing, you will understand *The Kingdom of God* as it is manifested right now! It was written,

“And there appeared a great wonder in Heaven; a Woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered. And there appeared another wonder in Heaven; and behold a great red Dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and **the Dragon stood before the Woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born**. And **she brought forth a Man Child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her Child was caught up unto God, and to His Throne**. And the woman fled into the wilderness,

where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days. And there was **WAR in HEAVEN**: Michael and his angels *fought* against the Dragon; and the Dragon *fought* and his angels, And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in Heaven. And the great Dragon was cast out, that Old Serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.

And I heard a loud voice saying in Heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and *The Kingdom of our God*, and the power of His Christ: for the Accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.

Therefore rejoice, ye Heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the Devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time. And when the Dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, **he persecuted the Woman which brought forth the an Child**. And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the Serpent. And the Serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the Woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the Dragon cast out of his mouth. **And the Dragon was wroth with the Woman, and went to MAKE WAR with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ.**” – Revelation 12:1-17

Jesus Christ, who fought Israelite battles and commissioned the old-time wars, who was depicted as The Captain of the Host **with a sword drawn in His hand** (Josh. 5:13), did, by Himself, invade the wide expanse of Satan’s Kingdom to fight for those who could not fight for themselves (Isa. 11:4, 49:2, Rom. 11:20, Isa. 65:1). Before Jesus Christ’s incarnation He predestinated **the battle** to wit, finally, He would accomplish human redemption. Looking down from the Sanctuary of Heaven to see earth-dwelling mankind as CAPTIVES, He came for **War** (1 Jn. 3:8). They were captives and slaves to sin, fast-bound behind The Gates of Hell in blind-servitude to a cruel Tyrant (Matt. 16:18, 23:15, 2 Cor. 4:3-4). Moved with jealousy and passion, Jesus descended. In unfathomable compassion God Almighty chose the incarnation (Php. 2:5-11). It was written and prophesied of Christ,

“He that **committeth sin** is of the Devil; for the Devil **sinneth** from the beginning. For *this purpose* the Son of God was manifested, **that He might destroy the works of the Devil.**” – 1 John 3:8

“Behold, this Child is set for **the fall and rising again of many in Israel**; and for **a sign** which shall be *spoken against*; (Yea, **A SWORD shall pierce through thy own soul also**;) **that the thoughts of many hearts may be revealed.**” – Luke 2:34-35 (Simeon speaking to Mary)

Through a sinless life and a sacrificial mediation, Jesus trod the valley of pain and humiliation: the Man, Jesus, wrought the victory!

“He is despised and rejected of men; a Man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from Him; He was despised, and we esteemed Him not. Surely He hath borne our griefs, and carried our sorrows: yet we esteem him stricken, smitten of God, and afflicted. But He was wounded for our transgressions, He was bruised for our iniquities: the chastisement of our peace was upon Him; and with His stripes we are healed.” – Isaiah 53:3-5

It was written that Jesus Christ was manifest so that, very specifically, “He might destroy the works of the Devil” (1 Jn. 3:8), and this is, in other words, “to take away our sins; and in Him is no sin” (1 Jn. 3:5). Jesus Christ freed Satan’s captivity and led them heaven-ward into glory (“*He led captivity captive and gave gifts to men*”-Eph. 4:8-10, Judges 5:12, Ps. 68:18, Rom. 5:21)! Jesus Christ opened blind eyes and turned men from darkness to light, from the power of Satan unto God via translation into an everlasting Kingdom (Acts 26:18, Col. 1:13). The Man, Jesus, tasted death for every man and

overthrew him who had the power of death (Heb. 2:14-16, Eph. 2:2-3); Jesus did, thereby, spoil principalities and powers and retrieve the keys of death and hell (Col. 2:15, Rev. 1:18) – Jesus triumphed! After publically triumphing over Satan and the fallen angels of darkness, after treading upon serpents and scorpions and over all the power of the enemy while remaining untouched and unharmed by the poison of sin (Lk. 10:18-20, 1 Jn. 3:8), He took on the same Image in ascended glory which Simeon illustrated in reference to His incarnation: “He had in His right hand seven stars: and out of His mouth went **a sharp twoedged sword**: and His countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength” (Rev. 1:16). Earth was the battle-ground in which Jesus stood and preached to vanquish and eradicate the works of the Devil which are sin. Heaven is the exalted position by which now, through the Christians, the fight rages onward. Jesus Christ unashamedly contested the peaceful personality of unsaved men who dwelt in friendship with the Devil’s world, and this is, moreover, the personality and image in which Christians do live and shine today! It was written,

“Think not that I am come to **send peace** on earth: **I came not to send peace, but a sword.**” – Matt. 10:34

“Finally, my brethren, be strong **in the Lord**, and in the power **of His might**. Put on **the whole armour of God**, *that ye may be able to stand against **the wiles of the devil***. For we *wrestle* not against flesh and blood, but against principalities, against powers, against the rulers of the darkness of this world, against spiritual wickedness in high places. Wherefore take unto you **the whole armour of God**, that ye may be able to withstand in the evil day, and having done all, to stand. Stand therefore, having your **loins girt** about with truth, and having on **the breastplate** of righteousness; And your **feet shod** with the preparation of the gospel of peace; Above all, taking **the shield of faith**, wherewith ye shall be able to **quench all the fiery darts** of the wicked. And take **the helmet** of salvation, and **the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God**.” – Ephesians 6:10-17

This KING did invade and conquer: He *fought alone* and *stood alone*, for condemned mankind *to-atone*. He descended into the earth and joined humanity as one man (Rom. 8:3, Heb. 2:17), He resurrected into a glorification so that He, not-alone-would-stand (John 17:22-24), **sword in hand**! My reader, do you understand this plan? Apparently here, in Ephesians 6:10-17, the Gentile Christians are commanded to gear-up for War against the same ancient foe, the Devil. The place of victory is found, “in the Lord”, the text states. This position is very specifically illustrated to us that we might understand what the Lord Jesus is doing right now in the Body of Christians in the Gentile Church Age: Christians are clad in the whole armor which pertained to Christ’s strength and might, the same armor which, evidently, wrought for Christ the victory against Satan and sin during the days of His incarnation. Therefore, this is the armor which was worn by Christ to win the battle (the armor which belongs to God, fitly called: “*the whole armour of God*”) – and it is given to us *in Christ* that we might fight in a combat against angelic beings and win! Look, my reader, Gentile Christians are commanded to *put it on*! “**Put on the whole armour of God**”, the text commanded!

At the election of each person of Gentile humanity, each one became His Temple Sanctuary (1 Cor. 3:16, 6:19); their hearts did, furthermore, become the Throne by which He rules every individual Christians *body* (Eph. 3:17, Rom. 5:21). Collectively, all of them have become a Christ-possessed *army*... therefore, corporately speaking, they exist for Jesus Christ as a *Body* (Col. 1:18) so that, thereby, the Lord Jesus resides as General, Captain, and KING of the Christian Church Militant. God the Father “set [Christ] at His own right hand in the heavenly places, far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: and hath put all things under His feet, and gave Him to be **the Head** over all things to **the Church**, which is **His Body**, *the fullness of Him that filleth all in all*” (Eph. 1:20-23)! He is “the Head” of redeemed Gentile humanity both individually and corporately, and, thus, they are rightly called “*His Body*”. To be called “the Head” means, in other words, *The Master*: but, mysteriously and gloriously, His Headship exists by a spiritual union which is comparable to the biological interconnectedness of living organisms on earth (Eph. 4:15-16, 1 Cor. 12:12-28, Col. 2:19, John 15:5)! Therefore, now, and henceforth, all Christians are Christ’s servants and soldiers which are clad in the whole armor of God to follow Him into battle (1 Cor. 7:22, Eph. 6:10-17, Rom. 13:11-14). The battle remains as long as sinners stand in need of salvation, and The Church joins with the Lord in the ongoing battle for souls (2 Cor. 6:1, 1 Cor. 3:9, Mk. 16:15, 2 Cor. 5:20, 2 Tim. 2:3).

The Lord Jesus invaded and spoiled the Kingdom of Satan of its captives, as many as He did choose (Jn. 17:12). Jesus did, thereby, begin a War in which all Christians are made to join the fight! He did, thereby, birth a nation of Gentile Church Israelites over which He does presently and progressively rule and govern as a King and Commander over His people – going out with them into the battle and fighting in every War! Swords are drawn to defend lords: their properties, familial inheritances, and geographic Kingdoms; only now in the New Testament, Gentile Christians have become the enforcement of Christ's Government via sword-drawn men (Eph. 6:17)! Graciously, also, the Lord Jesus rules us by a Law,

“For *the Law of the Spirit of Life* in Christ Jesus hath MADE ME FREE from *the Law of sin and death*. For what the Law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: **That the righteousness of the Law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.**” – Romans 8:2-4

Through an impeccable monarchy, the Lord governs all of redeemed humanity by Force, Freedom, and Law: “the Law of the Spirit of Life in Christ Jesus” (Rom. 8:2). To every penitent soul who is captive underneath the Tyrannical reign of Satan, Jesus Christ said, “sin shall not have dominion over you” (Rom. 6:14). By invasion and through regeneration, the governing force of Satan (“*the Law of sin*” – Rom. 7:23) was overthrown. The Tyrannical Lawmaker of sin and death was attacked, its government was overthrown, and its Law reversed according to a new dominion: *The Kingdom of God* which is righteousness, peace, and joy in the Holy Ghost (Rom. 14:17)! The cruel and deadly rule of Satan, who had place to reign via carnality (Eph. 2:2-3), is replaced by a new government via Spirituality (Rom. 8:5-8): “That the blessing of *Abraham* might come on *the Gentiles* through Jesus Christ; that we might receive **the promise of the Spirit** through faith” (Gal. 3:14). We do therefore have souls to fight for, sacrifices to make, an Image of conformity to reveal, and a world to hate, hallelujah!

The place in which sin resides, *Christ crucified*
 The flesh which killed Christ must now *be mortified*
 The cross which Christians adore & preach *kills mankind*
 That by way of personal execution men are finally *made alive!*

The sons of Adam must see their birthright as *Satan's pride*
 The philosophy of life that they love and follow as *Satan's lie*
 The way of life they choose to follow as *a battle-line*
 Their words and deeds as combat against *the Crucified!*

The apostle Paul was an example-saint for all Christians (1 Tim. 1:16). He was a soldier of the cross and a sword-in-hand fighter: “*the sword of the Spirit, which is the word of God*” (Eph. 6:17). At the end of Paul's enlistment in the army of the Lord Jesus, he said, “**I fought** a good **fight**” (2 Tim. 4:7). Paul was engaged in the battle for which Jesus Christ lived to fight and died to win! – So that Paul, in Christ, might overcome the world like his Master's example (Rev. 3:21).

Jesus Christ's Example

Of Courage: Jesus Christ held firm the face and demeanor of victory during his sojourning on earth. He was **unwavering in fearlessness and undaunted in confidence**, like Israel of old was required to be in battle against the Canaanites.

Of Moral Hatred: When standing before the enemy host of Satan's army – the sons of Adam – he maintained **a burning sense of justice to kill and spare not, to hate what God hates, to kill what God kills, to tirelessly execute judgment until all is accomplished in denial of self-gain and worldly wisdom.**

In the battle for souls, Jesus Christ had the **faith** and **moral hatred** required for the battle... but so did Paul. The apostle Paul said, “For me to live is Christ, and to die is gain” (Php. 1:21); a confession that every Christian MUST

MAKE! Paul waged war by the preaching of *The Cross*; a war to mercilessly kill the sons of Adams by *the sword of the Spirit*. Standing in opposition to all the world, Paul said, “God forbid *that I should glory, save in the cross of our Lord Jesus Christ*, by whom **the world is crucified to me, and I unto the world**” (Gal. 6:14). You see, my reader? The message of death and condemnation to self and sin, Paul loved, and the cross freed him from himself! Paul confessed, “*I am crucified with Christ*: nevertheless I live; *yet not I, but Christ liveth in me*: and the life which I now live in the flesh I live by faith in the Son of God, who loved me, and gave Himself for me” (Gal. 2:20)! Paul’s life was a manifestation of the resurrected Christ which mankind thought to exterminate from memory, and as a soldier in arms he followed his Master into the War. Like Jesus Christ, Paul condemned flesh and glamorized the crucified, compelling all men to die the death which would give them life.

As every faithful Israelite of old did swear-to-it that ALL CANAANITES MUST DIE, Christians swear-to-it that ALL FLESH MUST BE CRUCIFIED! “For this I say, brethren, that **flesh and blood cannot inherit *The Kingdom of God***; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption” (1 Cor. 15:50). Therefore, the saints, with “*the sword of the Spirit* which is the word of God” (Eph. 6:17), fight in the battle begun by our Lord: We, The Gentiles, in “the righteousness of the Law” (Rom. 8:4), attempt the total annihilation of a race of men (the sons of Adam) which we do **morally hate** (Lk. 14:26, Jn. 12:25). As The Gentile Church, we **love *personal mortification*** for the inheritance of Heaven like as Israel **loved a *Canaanite annihilation*** for the possession of The Promised Land (Rom. 8:13, Col. 3:5, Gal. 2:20, 5:24). Now, typologically speaking, Heaven is our New Testament Promised Land (“*The Rest*”)! Heaven is our “rest” which we have yet to inherit, which, furthermore, we must fight and labor to possess, according to Hebrews 4:11. This “Rest” has been the battle of salvation in centuries past: **Firstly**, God’s rest is exemplified and memorialized for us as a paradise of salvation in Heb. 4:4 [Gen. 8:9]. **Secondarily**, Joshua’s generation was upbraided for not laying hold of the promised rest given to them in Josh 18:13 [see Deut. 3:20, 12:9-12, 25:17-19, Heb. 4:8]. **Thirdly**, David’s generation looked back at the fallen generations and sought to lay hold upon the same rest in their day, spoken in Ps. 95:7-11 (see Heb. 4:5). **Fourthly**, this rest is laid before us as an inheritance we must labor to gain and fight to win (see Heb. 4:11, 2 Cor. 5:8-11). Only the true sons and daughters of God will inherit *The Kingdom of God* (Gal. 4:6-7); thus, do you remember how many times the New Testament writers warned of Heaven and Hell on these terms: “the unrighteous shall not *inherit the Kingdom of God*” (1 Cor. 6:9-10, Gal. 5:19-21, Eph. 5:5)?

Therefore, let us understand that our BATTLE is: *Heaven* against *Earth* (Col. 3:5, Rom. 8:13, Php. 3:19, Col. 3:1-3), *Light* against *Darkness* (Rom. 13:12, Col. 1:12, Eph. 5:8, 6:12, 2 Cor. 6:14), *the Spirit* against *the Flesh* (Rom. 8:1, 4, 6, Gal. 5:16, 24-25, Jn. 1:12-13, 2 Cor. 7:1), *the sons of God* against *the sons of Adam* (Gen. 6:2, 1 Cor. 15:22, Rom. 5:12, Gal. 4:29, Rom. 8:7), *the family of God* against *the family of Satan* (1 Jn. 3:10, Matt. 10:25, 2 Cor. 6:17-18), and *the twice-born* against *the once-born* (John 3:3, 5, 1 Cor. 2:14, Eph. 2:2-3). The CODE in which we live and for which we fight is: *the Holy* against *the Unclean* and *Virginity* against *Adultery* (2 Cor. 11:2, James 4:4, Rev. 14:4). Seeing that this is our battle... **what happens if we fail?**

What if we fail to win the victory of **total annihilation** like as Israel failed to kill and dispossess **all Canaanites** from The Promised Land? Like Israel was **snared, trapped, pricked, thorned, scourged, and cursed...** **can we be?** Are there any **promises of damnation** given to the Gentile Church Army so that we, like Israel, would be turned away from following the LORD (Duet. 7:4), made to sin (Ex. 23:33), and allured into the teaching of abominable customs (Deut. 20:18)? The answers to these questions can be easily detected through the following scriptural parallels, my reader.

Mercilessness & Pitilessness unto Death

“Thou shalt not consent unto him, nor hearken unto him; **neither shall thine eye pity him, neither shalt thou spare, neither shalt thou conceal him: But thou shalt surely kill him...** **And all Israel shall hear, and fear, and shall do no more any such wickedness as this is among you.**” – Duet. 13:8-9, 11

Congregation-wide Holiness & Purity

“So shalt thou put the evil way from **the midst of thee.**” – Deut. 13:5

“So thou shalt put the evil away from **among you**” – Deut. 17:7

“thou shalt put away the evil **from Israel**” – Duet. 17:12

“Therefore put way from **among yourselves** that wicked person” – 1 Cor. 5:13

Perfected Holiness

“There shall not be found **among you** any one...

Thou shalt be **perfect** with the LORD Thy God”

– Deut. 18:10, 13

“Wherefore come out from **among them**, and be ye **separate**...

perfecting holiness in the fear of God”

– 2 Cor. 6:17, 7:1

In Israel, *small compromises* led to *nationwide apostasy*! A little leaven of sinners did permeate and overcome the righteousness of the saints *nationwide*! Israel was too proud to believe that a total annihilation of the Canaanites was necessary for their perseverance in salvation, thus they did not “utterly overthrow”, “drive out all”, “destroy all”, “utterly destroy”, saving nothing alive, and showing no mercy (Ex. 23:23-24, 31-33, Duet. 7:1-6, 16-21, 25-26, Ex. 34:11-17, Duet. 12:1-4, 29-32, Deut. 20:16-18, Num. 33:51-56, Joshua 23:1-16). All in context to commandments which pertain to Church Purity in New Testament terms, there are **promises of salvation** to fight for and obtain, and there are **promises of damnation** to avoid.

New Testament Promises of Salvation

- “¹⁴ Be ye not unequally **yoked together** with *unbelievers*: for **what fellowship** hath *righteousness* with *unrighteousness*? and **what communion** hath *light* with *darkness*? ¹⁵ And **what concord** hath *Christ* with *Belial*? or **what part** hath *he that believeth* with *an infidel*? ¹⁶ And **what agreement** hath *the temple of God* with *idols*? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, **I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.** ¹⁷ Wherefore **come out from among them**, and be ye **separate**, saith the Lord, and **touch not the unclean thing**; and **I will receive you,** ¹⁸ **And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters,** saith the Lord Almighty. ¹ Having therefore **these promises**, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting **holiness** in the fear of God.” – 2 Corinthians 6:14-7:1 [see Deut. 7:1-16, 18:9-14]
- “If a man therefore **purge himself** from these, **he shall be a vessel unto honour, sanctified, and meet for the Master’s use, and prepared unto every good word.**” – 2 Tim. 3:21 [see 1 Cor. 3:16-18]
- “I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye **present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.**” – Romans 12:1-2 [see John 7:16-17]

On the basis that Gentile Christians, with undaunted courage, perform the above commandments of Church Purity: they will be received by God as a congregation and assembly, as sons and daughters before a Heavenly Father (2 Cor. 6:17-18), they will be received as a vessel unto honor in God’s sight (2 Tim. 3:21), and because of the provisional favor which this reception establishes, they are enabled to understand and do what is the good, acceptable, and perfect will of God (Rom. 12:1-2). On the other hand, if Church purity is defied: their congregation and assembly will become an abhorrence to God like an unclean thing, and, thus, their standing as sons and daughters will be forfeited (2 Cor. 6:14-7:1), they will become abominable and unsanctified vessels which are unusable to a Holy God (2 Tim. 3:21), and, thus, consequentially, by the delusion of a God-sent deception, they will be rendered unable to discern or understand what is the good, acceptable, and perfect will of God (Rom. 12:1-2).

New Testament Promises of Damnation

- “Be not deceived: **evil communications corrupt good manners.**”—1Cor. 15:33 [*see 2 Pet. 2:18-21*]
- "And ye are **puffed up**, and have not rather mourned, that he that hath done this deed might be **taken away from among you**... Your glorying is not good. **Know ye not that a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump? Purge out therefore the old leaven**, that ye may be a new lump, as ye are unleavened. For even Christ our passover is sacrificed for us: Therefore let us **keep the feast, not with old leaven, neither with the leaven of malice and wickedness; but with the unleavened bread of sincerity and truth.**" - 1 Corinthians 5:2, 6-8 [*see Exodus 12*]
- “**A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.**”— Gal. 5:9 [*Matt. 16:6-12, Mark 8:15, Lk. 12:1*]
- “Moreover, brethren, **I would not that ye should be ignorant... Wherefore let him that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall.**”— 1 Cor. 10:1-12 [*see Jude 3-4*]
- “Take heed, brethren, **lest there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief in departing from the Living God.** But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day; **lest any of you be hardened through the deceitfulness of sin**”— Heb. 3:13 [*see Heb. 10:24-29*]

On the basis that Gentile Christians fail to perform the commandments of Church Purity listed above, they will experience the promises of damnation. By lacking a *furious hatred* for what God declares to be unholy, Church Purity is compromised. By pride, men inordinately cleave to *the promises of salvation* and deny **the promises of damnation**. They say in their heart, contrary to the promise of God for damnation, “My good manners cannot be corrupted” (see the contrary in 1 Cor. 15:33), “My Church and myself cannot ever be overcome by leaven” (see the contrary in 1 Cor. 5:2-8 & Gal. 5:9), “My brothers and sisters cannot ever fall” (see the contrary in 1 Cor. 10:1-12), and, finally, “My heart cannot be hardened against God nor will I ever depart from Him” (see the contrary Heb. 3:12-13). Therefore, and, inevitably, the Gentile Christians will be corrupted from good manners (1 Cor. 15:33), leavened by mixed-in sinners (1 Cor. 5:2-8), fallen like backslidden Israel (1 Cor. 10:1-12), and hardened against the God they once served and loved in the beauties of holiness (Heb. 3:12-13, 12:14-15).

According to 2 Corinthians 6:14-7:1, the Gospel call to **holiness** is a conditional command bound with **promises**. The call is a break of **yoke**! Why? The power of the Gospel establishes this purpose of God through regeneration, which is a supernatural severing from unbelievers. The break of **yoke** is a break of **fellowship, communion, concord, and agreement**, and this can be understood when a man understands the work of salvation as a transformation and **separation** from the world. A “divine nature” **segregates fellowship, voids commonality**, and establishes **spiritual enmity** with all unbelievers and this world (2 Peter 1:4). Reception of this Gospel is a reception of “**come out from among them,**” and so we become children of Abraham who did obey his Gospel, “**get thee out**” (Gen. 12:1, Heb. 11:8). If you receive this Gospel, a Gospel that is, in this way, a Gospel of **holiness**, you are received by God and He becomes your new spiritual **Father**, being born again His **son** or **daughter** (2 Cor. 6:18). This is the unavoidable purpose of God in the Gospel: past, present, and forever. Such an *imputation* of holiness as this, causes holy living! When He – the Holy Ghost – indwells unholy humanity, the indwelling is a regenerating, and this begets holy living in *deed* as the manifest qualities of God and Abraham’s seed.

In Israel, God emphatically warned that a *tributary covenant* (or agreement) with the Canaanites would be “a **snare**” (Ex. 34:12) BECAUSE the mixed-in-presence of the Canaanites would certainly compel Israel to sin and apostasy. The Old Testament saints who believed that they *could not* be snared, were snared. The Old Testament saints who believed that they *could not* be made to sin, were made to sin. This snare was wrought by the cohabitation of the people in bodily presence, by the nearness of proximity, and by any relational interaction or communion which would be had thereby, according to the scriptures. This very same snare is emphatically warned against in the New Testament (here in metaphorical language), saying, “a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump” (1 Cor. 5:6). What God said through the Spirit of Inspiration, God meant! When He said, “a little leaven leaveneth” (1 Cor. 5:6), He meant, “a little leaven leaveneth THE WHOLE LUMP”! In context and with the correct interpretation and application, this means that *one sinner* turns *the whole Church* of saints into sinners! That which was *Nation-ending* in the Old Testament is *Church-ending* in the New

Testament! This was the contextual and historical situation warned against in 1st century Corinth (see 1 Corinthians Chapter 5). Therefore, we, like Old Testament Israel, must “put away from **among [ourselves]** that wicked person” (1 Cor. 5:13)! Like Old Testament Israel, we must refuse to be “yoked” in “fellowship”, “communion”, “concord”, “part”, and “agreement” with those whom God commands separation from (2 Cor. 6:14-7:1)! Or else like Old Testament Israel, we will be infected, undone, and doomed! Oh, my reader, we DO have **promises of salvation** to obtain and **promises of damnation** to avoid, and every one of them will prove true in our lives!

As the Canaanites did “dwell in the Land” with Manassah (Judges 1:27-28), are unbelievers *yoked* to believers in the Church (2 Cor. 6:14)? As the Canaanites “dwelt among” Zebulun (Judges 1:30), do the unrighteous *fellowship* with the righteous in the Church (2 Cor. 6:14)? As the Canaanites “dwelt among” Naphtali (Judges 1:32), does darkness *commune* with light in the Church of God in Christ (2 Cor. 6:14)? As Israel entered into tributary agreements with the Canaanites, are we in *concord* with Belial, having *part* with infidels, in *agreement* with idols, even though we are the very Temple of God itself (2 Cor. 6:15-16)? While having uncleanness in the war-camp and congregation, do we expect that God will operate in a revival and win the War against Satan and sin (Deut. 23:9-14, 2 Cor. 6:17-18)? While that which “beareth gall and wormwood” (Deut. 29:18) still exists in the New Covenant, do we think that we will persevere in Christ undefiled and un-poisoned (Heb. 12:14-15)? Of a truth, my reader, *The Kingdom of God* does operate in the New Testament paralleling Old Testament Israel because, evidently, Gentiles have become Israelites! In a situation of mass defection (saints turning to sinners), Moses commanded,

“slay every man his **brother**, and every man his **companion**,
and every man his neighbor” – Ex. 32:27

Those brothers and friends, no matter how dear, when they conflict with the purposes of God’s Church in the local assembly, they must be dealt with severely, my reader, as a thrusting sword against a fighting body. These are soldier-like death penalties to Church-army defectors. Our Divine-Captain, sword-in-hand (Josh. 5:13), commands that we “slay every man [our] brother” who is a defector. Every Spirit-filled saint, sword-in-hand, slays and slays – killing sin – or sin will be killing him. It is written, “Cursed be he that doeth the work of the LORD deceitfully, and cursed be he that **keepeth back his sword** from blood” (Jer. 48:10) ...even so, my reader, are you cursed? If we do not follow our sword-drawn Commander into the battle, our Commander – Jesus Christ – will turn His sword upon us! If we do not slay with our God-given sword, “the sword of the Spirit which is the word of God” (Eph. 6), then Christ will slay us with His sword (Rev. 2:16)! If you run not with Him in His charge, He will turn, change direction, and run after you! Do you know Him who foretold the event, saying, “He that is not with Me is against Me; and he that gathereth not with Me scattereth abroad” (Matt. 12:30)? Do you know Him who commanded, “SMITE: let not your eye spare, neither have ye pity: SLAY UTTERLY old and young, both maids, and little children, and women...and BEGIN at My Sanctuary” (Ezek. 9:5-6)? Do you know Him who said, “Judgment must begin at the House of God” (1 Pet. 4:17)? Do you know Him who threatens “His people”, *first of all*, with judgment and vengeance (Heb. 10:30-31)? Christ, personally offended and vengeful, forewarns His regenerate people of a sword-battle in which He will FIGHT, SLAY, and KILL rebels from His army ranks – sinning saints! Oh, my reader! He said, “Repent; or else I WILL COME unto thee quickly, and will FIGHT against them with the sword of My mouth” (Rev. 2:16)! “All sinners of My people shall die by the sword, which say, The evil shall not overtake nor prevent us” (Amos 9:10)! “These things saith He which hath the sharp sword with two edges” (Rev. 2:12)! Is this your *Jesus*?

“And out of His mouth goeth a **sharp sword**, that with it He should **smite the nations**: and He shall rule them with a rod of iron: and He treadeth the winepress of the fierceness and wrath of Almighty God.” - Revelation 19:15

“And the remnant were **slain with the sword** of Him that sat upon the horse, which **sword proceeded out of His mouth**: and all the fowls were filled with their flesh.” - Revelation 19:21

“But with righteousness shall He judge the poor, and reprove with equity for the meek of the earth: and He shall **smite the earth with the rod of His mouth**, and with the breath of his lips shall he slay the wicked.” - Isaiah 11:4

“And He hath made my mouth **like a sharp sword**; in the shadow of His hand hath He hid Me, and made me a polished shaft; in His quiver hath He hid Me;” - Isaiah 49:2

“And He had in his right hand seven stars: and **out of His mouth went a sharp twoedged sword**: and His countenance was as the sun shineth in his strength.” – Rev. 1:16

Brethren, it is written, “slay every man his brother, and every man his companion” (Ex. 32:27), to the end that we, in the New Testament sense, disallow the House of God from becoming, by our lack of judgment (1 Cor. 5:13), “a den of thieves”, a habitation which we would be commanded to “enter not”, “go not”, “avoid it”, “pass not by”, “turn from”, and “pass away” (Prov. 4:13-16), because it remains unpurged. Walking, standing, and sitting, my reader, **WHO** are we? Are we those who, in a New Testament sense, “walketh not”, “nor standeth in the way”, “nor sitteth in the seat” (Psalm 1:1)? “It is written, My House shall be called the House of Prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves” (Matt. 21:13)! WOE to us, if we live in a generation where God has left the professing Church, the so called “House of God”, for it has become a House of Sinners. This House of Sinners is a slaughterhouse of saints! Saints who should have, like Jeremiah, “sat alone” (Jer. 15:17), but instead they assembled with the mockers. Oh! The prophetic WOE is upon us! The “strong delusion”, the generation-wide “FALLING AWAY”, alas, our Church *congregants* are mostly *castaways*! My reader, the time is now! The Church on the corner is made up of strongly deluded people who have “pleasure in unrighteousness”, who are from God, fallen away! Will these “Christian” assemblies of habitual-sinners obtain the blessed promise of God, “I will receive you” (2 Cor. 6:17-18)? No, my reader. God will say to them what He said of old: “When ye come to appear before Me, who hath required this at your hand, to tread My courts...the calling of assemblies, I cannot away with; it is iniquity, even the solemn meeting” (Isa. 1:12-13)! In such a generation, Jeremiah said, “I sat not in the assembly of the mockers, nor rejoiced; I sat alone because of Thy hand: for Thou hast filled me with indignation” (Jer. 15:17). What about you? Will you learn to “**put a difference**” in those things which God commands **differentiation**? Will you “**put away** from **among yourselves** that **wicked person**” (1 Cor. 5:13)? Or will you follow the abominable hypocrisy of former generations, of whom it was written, “But unto **the wicked** God saith, What hast thou to do **to declare My statutes**, or that thou shouldest **take My Covenant in thy mouth**? Seeing thou hatest instruction, and castest My words behind thee” (Ps. 50:16-17)?

The Image of Sword-Drawn-Fury, Going Forth to War

As terrifying as this image may seem (see in Josh. 5:13-15, for example), it should communicate mercy to genuine believers of the Gentile Church Age. With God’s people fixated in amazement at their sword-drawn Master, courage rises! They are empowered to sally forth and *seize the promises of God* as the spoilers after a War in which they did not fight! Remember the context of old, my reader: When the sword-drawn Captain went forth to war against Canaan, He drew His sword to **slay until every promise was possessed by God’s people, until every force of enmity was slain under the blade of His merciless fury!** The fury which compelled him to unsheathe the sword and slay, was *a saving fury* which won salvation for God’s people; and speaking on this wise, it was written, “Cursed be he that doeth the work of the LORD deceitfully, and **cursed be he that keepeth back his sword from blood**” (Jer. 48:10).

All of this fearful and glorious imagery exists to personalize the experience of New Covenant salvation in the richness of Old Testament history and typology. You see, the act of judgment was killing the Canaanites (because this was the judgment of God against sin –Ezek. 18:4), and what was shocking is how, historically speaking, the acts in which God destroyed and damned men (the Canaanites) - being infuriated in wrath thereto - are the very same acts by which God saves men in the New Covenant! This reveals to all men the same God existing in both Testaments, contrary to popular opinion. Because saving mercy is taught and preached in this way, the recipients of mercy are made to understand the true meaning of **GRACE**: *by grace* they are made accepted but their person is utterly unacceptable; *by grace* they are an object of God’s delight but their person is an object of God’s fury; *by grace* they are loved by God but their person is abhorrent to God; *by grace* they are forgiven of their sin because their person, which was the source of all sin, was uprooted, eradicated, and killed; *by grace* they are welcomed into Heaven because they underwent the self-annihilation of a crucifixion! Hallelujah!

The City of Jerusalem

“Let us go forth therefore unto Him without the camp, bearing His reproach. For here have we no continuing **City**, but we seek **One** to come.”– Hebrews 13:13-14

All children of God in the New Testament are citizens and children of *The City of Jerusalem*. The apostle Paul claimed that salvation originated from *this location* **exclusively**, in Galatians 4:21-31; behold, my reader, he called the City, “**Jerusalem** which now is” or “**Jerusalem** which is above” (Gal. 4:25, 26). All citizens of this City gain their status by birth, thus Paul affirmed them to be “**born after the Spirit**” (Gal. 4:29). Make no mistake about it, my reader, the apostle Paul goes so far to say that *The City of Jerusalem* is, furthermore, “the mother of us all” (Gal. 4:26), speaking in reference to the family of God in Christ; these are no uncertain terms! Nevertheless, my reader, what does Paul mean when he calls Jerusalem, “Jerusalem which is above” (Gal. 4:26)?

This **Jerusalem** is not of flesh, of the earth, or of the natural man, thus it cannot be perceived by mankind in of themselves. Apart from the influence of the Spirit of God, whereby men become born again, humanity cannot see the Kingdom of God (John 3:3). It is an alien place, an otherworldly place, but not to Christians! To them, the writer of Hebrews said, “**ye are come** unto...**the Heavenly Jerusalem**” (Heb. 12:22) ...but how? Christians have already come to the Heavenly Jerusalem *spiritually* and *legally* speaking, but they wait for the manifestation of their Homeland to come down out of Heaven from God *physically* speaking (Rev. 21:1-2). Until then, Christians are foreigners on earth who are native to Heaven and abide by its customs... therefore they are **strangers**.

Christians are strangers on earth because **GOD IS A STRANGER** – He is an enemy and alien to this world, and when we walk in Him we will be “as He is” (1 Jn. 2:6). God is otherworldly because He is not of this world. Why? It is written, “The whole world lieth in wickedness” (1 John 5:19). Contradicting this world are those twice-born Christians who were born of another world. Therefore, they are not “**of the world**” (1 John 2:16, 4:5). They are free from the “pollutions of the world” (2 Peter 2:20), and this is because they are “**of God**” (1 John 5:19), or, “**of the Father**” (1 John 2:16). To be a **stranger** is to be *born from another origin* than that of this world’s natives who are countrymen of carnality. They are natural men, born “of blood”, and they need to be born into a family of lineage that is “**of God**” (1 John 1:13), thus it is written that we are **hated**, **otherworldly strangers**, **suffering in this world** but **ruling in “the world to come”** (Mark. 10:30, Lk. 18:30, Heb. 2:5, 6:5). To be a stranger is to be a man in a foreign land, far away from what is called home. A traveler is not a treasurer. They are far away from what they call “treasure” (Matt. 6:21). All their time here on earth is but “**sojourning**” (1 Pet. 1:17) – “this world is not my home, I’m just a-passing through, my treasures are laid up somewhere beyond the blue” (“This World is Not My Home”, Jim Reeves).

If you are rejected by this world, then you are worthy to be received by God (2 Thess. 1:4-5). If you can be “heard” by this world, and you “hear” them, then you cannot “hear” God or His people, comparatively as if you and they speak a different language or a foreign tongue, and everything is rendered strange. If you are ashamed of God, then He will be ashamed of you, but if you confess, live in, and preach God, then this world will be ashamed of you. Christians “desire a better country” than this world and do therefore confess the Lord, “wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God” (Matt. 10:32-40, Heb. 11:16). To be “**godly** in this present world” (Titus 2:11-14) is to be anti-god against “the god of this world” (2 Cor. 4:4) – “as **lights** in the world” (Php 2:15) against the “rulers of the darkness of this world” (Eph. 6:12).

For this reason, if we walk in the flesh by denying the gospel call (Gal. 5:24-25, 6:14), then we become **friends with the world**, and also, **enemies** and **adulterers** to God (James 4:4). We must not be friends with the devil, who is “the god of this world” (2 Cor. 4:4), who also is called the “prince of the power of the air” (Eph. 2:2). If we make friends with him, then the devil’s spirit will work in us. Then, we are not “**obedient children**” of 1 Peter 1:14, but rather, we are the “**disobedient children**” of Ephesians 2:2. If we are **friends with God**, we are **enemies of the devil**, and if the devil’s spirit rules in this world, therefore is the world full of the chaos of carnality, while we, the anarchists against the devil’s

tyranny, are those **holy ones** who are not “taken captive by him at his will” (2 Tim. 2:26). As for the devil’s sinful world, love it not, or else it is adultery to God (Jas. 4:4)! A **stranger** does therefore know no man, as chaste “**virgins**” (2 Cor. 11:2-4, Rev. 14:4), for we are preserved for heaven’s Bridegroom. All those that indulge in carnality rather than spirituality will die (Rom. 8:13). Strangers are those that do not – this is our “**strangeness**” (1 Pet. 4:1-4) – that we “abstain from fleshly lusts”, because “God is Spirit” (John 4:24) and not flesh! “No flesh should glory in His presence” (1 Cor. 1:29). “We are the circumcision which **worship God in the Spirit**, and rejoice in Christ Jesus, and have no confidence in the flesh” (Php. 3:3), the “**true worshippers**” of God (John 5:23).

New creatures (2 Cor. 5:17) walk in the “**new man**” (Col. 3:10), which is “**newness of life**” (Rom. 6:4) in Jesus’ living Person and “**name**” (Col. 3:17), therefore all such persons are strangers in a world of fallen men. New men belong to a new world, the “**New Jerusalem**” (Rev. 21:2), the “new Heaven and a new Earth” (Rev. 21:1), where dwelleth Him Who said, “Behold, I make all things new” (Rev. 21:5). God is “**HOLY, HOLY, HOLY**” (Rev. 4:8), His Spirit is a “Holy Spirit” (1 Thess. 4:8), and those that walk in Him are “**holy**” (Heb. 12:48), therefore they are not strangers, but citizens and friends of “**the Holy City**” (Rev. 21:2), for none other “may enter in through **the Gates** into **the City**” (Rev. 22:14). “There shall in no wise enter into it any thing that **defileth**” (Rev. 21:27). God is a Holy Spirit, The Stranger of this unholy world, and so are all those that live and move in Him. Therefore the world does “think it strange that” we “run not with them to the same excess of riot, speaking evil” (1 Peter 4:4), but this is no surprise! We should “think it not strange” (1 Peter 4:12) that they are offended at our strangeness. Christian, the world is “where thou dwellest, even where Satan’s seat is” (Rev. 2:13), but you are “made” to “sit together” with Christ (Eph. 2:6) “far above all principality and power” (Eph. 1:21), therefore you must walk according to another King’s Reigning Rule – “that as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord” (Rom. 5:21). If we “walk as men” (1 Cor. 3:3), then we do walk in sin, but if we “walk in Him” (Col. 2:6), then we will walk contrary to every earthly rule (Php. 3:16-21). Therefore a Christian has “a desire to depart” rather than stay on earth (Php. 1:23), because, to look to God is to look away from this world, and again, to look for the world to come “wherein dwelleth righteousness” is to look away from this world wherein dwelleth sin (2 Peter 3:13).

God is a stranger, so that the world knows Him not (1 John 3:1). If you are saved, it is because you have come to know Him who the world does not know (1 John 2:4). Oh, my reader, how many false Christians will come before the Gates of God’s eternal Kingdom and boldly declare, “Open up the doors of entrance for me!” Why? The Kingdom of God is what they sang about, stood praying unto their entire lives, and then, at last, they think that they shall arise to claim the crown of eternal life as their own. Shockingly, this interaction is prophetically recorded for us in inspired scripture.

“**Strive** to **enter in** at **The Strait Gate**: for many, I say unto you, will **seek to enter in**, and **shall not be able**. When once the Master of the House is risen up, and hath **shut to the door**, and ye begin to **stand without**, and to **knock at the door**, saying, *Lord, Lord, open unto us*; and He shall answer and say unto you, **I know you not whence ye are**: Then shall ye begin to say, *We have eaten and drunk in thy presence, and thou hast taught in our streets*. But He shall say, **I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye workers of iniquity**. There shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth, when ye shall see Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, and all the prophets, **in The Kingdom of God**, and you yourselves **thrust out**. And they shall come from the east, and from the west, and from the north, and from the south, and shall **sit down in The Kingdom of God**. And, behold, there are last which shall be first, and there are first which shall be last.” – Luke 13:24-30

Imagine it, my reader! These are **earthly men** pounding on **Heaven’s Gates**, demanding entrance into *The Heavenly Land*. With what contortion of face would the Lord of that Land disdain the nation from whence these people came? With what furious denouncement would He reject their person? With what arguments would He make known to them how unacceptable they are (by their *race, skin color, and language*, and by their *familial and nationalistic alliances* which are at enmity against the Lord of Heaven – Rom. 8:1-13)? With what contortion of face does a foreigner listen to the garbled tongue of another nation... even so, these men are strangers to God – and look! – He is contorted and astonished in displeasure at their boldness before His **Gates**. What unfounded and unacceptable boldness!? When an **earthly man** pounds on **the Gates** of **The Heavenly City**, Heaven’s Porters, looking down, wonder how the man is demented. With

contorted faces of holy-disgust, they would say, 'Heaven is for **heaven-born men**, men who walk according to the rule and Law of a **heavenly citizen**, but you are **an earth-born earthly-man**! You, oh man, are a stranger to this Holy Land! You are a foreigner to God and a native to fallen man. Don't you know that behind these **Gates**, "there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that **defileth**, neither **whatsoever worketh abomination**, or **maketh a lie**: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life'" (Rev. 21:27). Upon hearing this the earthly man would cease from pounding upon **the Gates** like as it was written, "he was speechless" (Matt. 22:12). The man would stand still and wonder, being utterly aloof. He would be dumbfounded because he is unknowledgeable of the truth. What truth?

The "Language" Barrier: 1 John 4:5-6, Luke 10:16, John 6:63, 7:16-17, 8:37, 43, 47, 1 Corinthians 2:14

Heaven-Born Citizens Belong to Heaven's Country: John 3:3, Ephesians 2:18-19, 1 Peter 2:9-11, 1 Corinthians 8:3, 1 Corinthians 3:22-23, Hebrews 11:13-16, 13:13-14

Heaven's principles and affections cannot be *comprehended* by earthly men (John 1:5). Yes, therefore did Heaven's Porters speak a *different language* than the earthly man; this is the reason that he could not *understand*. You see, spiritual words can only be understood by a spiritual man, but this man was an earthly man. To vindicate the righteousness and true holiness of God, it was written, "Blessed are **they** that **do His commandments**, that they may have right to the Tree of Life, and **may enter in through the Gates of the City**. For **without** are **dogs**, and **sorcerers**, and **whoremongers**, and **murderers**, and **idolaters**, and **whosoever loveth and maketh a lie**" (Rev. 22:14-15). All earthly men will be irrevocably "thrust out" (Lk. 13:28) of this **City & Kingdom**. They will begin to shout to the Lord who dwells beyond the **City Gates**, saying, "Lord, Lord, open unto us" (Lk. 13:25)! But the Lord of that **City** will say unto them, "I know you not whence ye are" (Lk. 13:25)! This means, by interpretation, "I know not where you are from!" You see, this man was an unrecognizable person from an unrecognizable race, a place that is foreign to the **Land, Country, and City of Heaven** (Heb. 11:13-16, 13:13-14, Jn. 14:2-6, 1 Pet. 2:9-11, 2 Pet. 3:10-14, Rev. 2:26-28, 3:4-5, 12, 20-21). But then the earthly men will reply, "We have eaten and drunk in Thy presence, and Thou hast taught in our streets" (Lk. 13:26)! Yet again, the Lord of Heaven will say, "I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye **workers of iniquity**" (Lk. 13:27)! The Lord Jesus has told us before what would happen so that we might take heed. All those who expect to be crowned as a joint-heir with Christ in **the New Jerusalem** need to take heed to what the Lord Jesus did forewarn, saying,

"Behold, I come quickly: **hold that fast which thou hast, that no man take thy crown**. Him that **overcometh** will I make **a pillar in the Temple of my God**, and he shall **go no more out**: and I will write upon him the Name of My God, and the Name of **the City of my God**, which is **New Jerusalem**, which cometh down out of Heaven from my God: and I will write upon him My New Name. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the Churches." – Rev. 3:11-13

In summation of all the aforementioned scriptures, the identity of the children of **The City of Jerusalem** in the New Testament are: **saved** (Gal. 4:25-26, Heb. 12:22), **persecuted** (Heb. 13:13-14, 2 Thess. 1:4-5), **strangers to the earth** (1 Jn. 2:6, 16, 4:5, 5:19, Titus 2:11-14), **lights in the world** (Php. 2:15), and **rulers in the world to come** (Mk. 10:30, Lk. 18:30, Heb. 2:5, 6:5). In harmony with this identity, and notably, the entire lifespan of these individuals on earth is called **sojourning**, *mere* sojourning! They *are* **sojourners**! Rightly said, because these people are **citizens of the Heavenly City, Jerusalem** (1 Pet. 1:17, Heb. 12:22, Mk. 6:21), the place where they long to be (Ps. 137:1-9, Isa. 62:6)! You see, they "**desire** a better country", "wherefore God is not ashamed to be called **their God**" (Matt. 10:32-40, Heb. 11:16). Let us remember! They are **godly** because they are *born* of **the City of God** (Ps. 48:1, 8), and **sinners** are **worldly** because they are *born* of **the World** (1 Jn. 4:5-6, 2 Cor. 4:4, Eph. 6:12). **New men** belong to a New World, the "**New Jerusalem**" (**Rev. 21:2**), the "New Heaven and a New Earth" (**Rev. 21:1**), where dwelleth Him Who said, "Behold, I make all things new" (**Rev. 21:5**). Let us remember! God is "HOLY, HOLY, HOLY" (**Rev. 4:8**), His Spirit is a "Holy Spirit" (**1 Thess. 4:8**), and those that *walk in Him* are "**holy**" (**Heb. 12:48**), therefore they are not strangers, but **citizens** and **friends** of "**the Holy City**" (**Rev. 21:2**). None other "may enter in through **the Gates** into **the City**" (**Rev. 22:14**)! This **holy people**, they are *not* **friends of the World** nor are they **adulterers against God** (Jas. 4:4, 2 Cor. 11:2-4, Rev. 14:4), like all the **disobedient children** are (Eph. 2:2). They are, rather, **friends of God** and **enemies of the devil** (Jas. 2:23), and this is their **strangeness** (1 Pet. 4:1-4). They are "**true worshippers**" of God, having **died to flesh and sin** (2 Cor. Jn. 5:23, Php. 3:3,

Rom. 8:13, 1 Cor. 1:29). These are **heaven-born men** and **heavenly citizens** who are **free from iniquity**! Therefore, they are **recognizable men** who are welcomed into **the Heavenly Gates of the Jerusalem** (Lk. 13:24-30, Rev. 3:11-13). “**Blessed**” are these men, because they “**do His commandments**” (Rev. 22:14-15)! All other men are **foreigners** and **aliens**, *unrecognizable* to God and *unwelcomed* into **the City of Jerusalem** both now and at the Consummation, understandably so!

Mount Zion

“The sun and the moon shall be darkened, and the stars shall withdraw their shining. **The LORD also shall ROAR out of Zion**, and **utter His VOICE from Jerusalem**; and **the heavens and the earth shall shake**: but the LORD will be the hope of His people, and the strength of the children of Israel. So shall ye know that I am the LORD your God **dwelling in Zion, My Holy Mountain**: then shall Jerusalem **be holy**, and there shall **no strangers pass through her any more**.” – Joel 3:15-17

It was never Lawful that strangers would pass through and defile *Mount Zion*. According to scripture, it is a holy, sanctified, and separated *Mountain* (exhaustively addressed formerly). In the New Covenant, the inspired writers gave specific focus to salvation in terms of Mount Zion, saying, “**Ye are come** unto *Mount Zion*”. How can Gentile-Christians (who are **strangers** according to the flesh) ascend up and come unto *Mount Zion*? The apostle Paul declared of them, “ye are **no more strangers** and **foreigners**, but **fellowcitizens** with **the saints**, and of **the Household of God**” (Eph. 2:19). By the merit of Christ’s blood the Gentiles are sanctified and indwelt by the Holy Spirit (“*For though Him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father*” – Eph. 2:18), thus they are holy. They have become a part of the populous that can answer well to the ancient question, “**Who shall ascend The Hill of the LORD**” (Ps. 24:3)?

“**Ye are come** unto **Mount Zion**” – Hebrews 12:22

This Mountain is argued to stand-apart from all others, as a *holier* and *greater* Mountain than Sinai; meaning that it is *more* unapproachable, set-apart, and guarded than Sinai (see Heb. 12:18-29). This is because Mount Zion does mount-up a greater Prophet and Mediator than Moses, for a greater Covenant than the Old Covenant: “Jesus the Mediator of the New Covenant” (Heb. 12:24). In the light of these *superior attributes* of Zion - the Mountain of a greater Prophet and Covenant - we are warned to keep-up a *greater* obedience to the voice which comes from Zion. It was written, “See that ye refuse not Him that speaketh. For if they escaped not who refused him that spake on earth, *much more* shall not we escape, if we turn away from Him that speaketh from Heaven” (Heb. 12:25). When the writer of Hebrews was declaring all the superior characteristics of Mount Zion in comparison to Mount Sinai (in Hebrews 12:22-24), he was not arguing away the fact that upon Zion speaks a greater Voice from a more furious Fire than Sinai’s terrifying display which Moses quaked to behold. It was prophesied of old that “the LORD also shall ROAR out of **Zion**”, not out of Sinai (Joel 3:15-17). The writer of Hebrews argues that the voice out of **Zion** is more inescapable and more powerful than the voice which was out of Sinai; for then, only Sinai quaked, but the voice out of Zion will SHAKE THE WHOLE WORLD! All these points considered (Heb. 12:25-29), the Christians of the New Testament are instructed to abide in a certain *spiritual frame* before the Almighty. The writer of Hebrews postures himself into the frame, saying, “let us have grace, whereby we may serve God acceptably with *reverence* and *godly fear*. For our God is **A Consuming Fire**” (Heb. 12:28-29)! Let it shock you, my reader, that the God of the New Testament is still **A Consuming Fire**! [For a more thorough study of this, see “[Holy Mount Sinai](#)”, “[The Call, Mount, and Fear of the Prophet Like Unto Moses – Jesus Christ](#)”, and “[Zion is the Mountain of our Covenant](#)”].

“And Moses took the blood, and sprinkled it on the people, and said, Behold the blood of the Covenant, which the LORD hath made with you concerning all these words. Then **went up** Moses, and Aaron, Nadab, and Abihu, and seventy of the elders of Israel: And **they saw the God of Israel**: and there was under His feet as it were a paved work of a sapphire stone, and as it were the body of heaven in his clearness. And upon the nobles of the children of Israel he laid not his hand: **also they saw God, and did eat and drink**.” – Exodus 24:8-11

The privileges of those who ascended Mount Sinai were apparent: “they *saw* God and did *eat* and *drink*”. What a staggering experience! But how *much more* is this the experience of those who have ascended up Mount Zion (Matt. 18:20, Heb. 12:22), henceforth to be exercised by the voice and power of the world to come (Heb. 6:4-5), eating and drinking in His presence and glory (Matt. 4:4, John 6:53-56, Matt. 22:1-14; Lk. 22:16-18, 30, Lk. 12:37, Lk. 14:15, Matt. 8:11, Rev. 19:9)!

CHAPTER #17

The Temple, Tabernacle, House, & Sanctuary of God

Section #1: In The Old Testament – *how it was*

Section #2: In The New Testament & in The Consummation – *how it is & how it will be*

Section #3: In Conclusion to Chapters 15, 16, & 17

Seeing that *The Temple, Tabernacle, House, & Sanctuary of God* all speak of the same place but in different stages of time, while the former section spoke of different places and locations, this section will not be delineated in subject categories like the former was. These four different stages of the same place will be surveyed interchangeably to enlarge our understanding of this one single location – The Most Holy Place. Our study of this place will include two major sections instead of three: *how it was* in the Old Testament and *how it is* in the New Testament. For the sake of fluidity and simplicity in our study, the third section (*how it will be* in the Consummation) is generally interwoven throughout the other two sections but primarily addressed in the second section.

In The Old Testament – *how it was*

Hitherto, let us look at the most segregated kind of *congregation* or *assembly* that existed in the Land of Israel, gatherings before or within *The Temple, Tabernacle, House, or Sanctuary of God*. Remembering, my reader, that there are more and less holy places, and seeing that the House of God is *most holy*, we can understand that the gatherings before or within this place are regulated with the utmost strictness, beyond all other places.

Under holy apparitions the psalmist exclaimed, “How **amiable** are Thy Tabernacles, O LORD of hosts” (Ps. 84:1)! My reader, do you know it? Do you know “how **amiable**”? If you knew it, then you too, like David, would have “**one thing**” as your life-long goal. David said, “**One thing** have I desired of the LORD, that will I seek after; that I may dwell in the House of the LORD all the days of my life, to **behold the beauty of the LORD**, and to enquire in His Temple” (Ps. 27:4)! Do you know the experience? Are you amazed at the reality? That in God’s House, God is! Have you seen “the beauty of the LORD” (Ps. 27:4)?! Oh, how happy is the man that can say, “LORD, I have loved **the habitation** of Thy House, and **the place** where Thine honour dwelleth” (Ps. 26:8)! *The place* is for *the Person* – God Almighty – and seeing that this place is physically “before Him”, the preciousness of the materials used, the beauty and perfection of human craftsmanship involved, and the specific design of its size, organization, and all were of specific regulation and command. For good reason the scripture declared, “Honour and majesty are **before Him**: strength and beauty are in **His Sanctuary**” (Ps. 96:6). With strict and specific instruction God designed the structure of inanimate objects which would be arrayed “BEFORE HIM”, for these things housed Him! This is understandable, these are God’s *chosen objects*, but how much more His *chosen people*? If the objects which were before Him were so designated, chosen, and specified, how much more the people who stand before Him? Like the place, the inanimate objects and materials, so it is with the persons who appear before God, they all, by requirement, must “worship the LORD in the beauty of holiness”

(Ps. 96:9, 29:2)! God, “whose Name is Holy” (Isa. 57:15), requires that the *place* and *persons* which are before Him be **holy**. Wake up my reader! Is it still a light matter for you to stand before God in what you call your *local Church*? I beg you to keep reading, and hear your God!

“**Who** then is able to **stand before Me**?” – GOD Almighty (Job. 41:10)

“**Blessed** is **the man** whom thou **choosest**, and **causest** to **approach unto** Thee, that he may dwell in **Thy courts**: we shall be satisfied with the goodness of **Thy House**, even of **Thy Holy Temple**.” - Ps. 65:4

Is it a small thing for you, my reader, to enter into the gates of the Lords House? God, making a declaration that He is of incomparable fierceness, asked the awful question, “Who then is able to stand before Me” (Job 41:10)? **Judgment** is upon all who, God says, “enter in at **these Gates** to worship the LORD” (Jer. 7:2). These are **the gates** of “the LORD’S House” (Jer. 7:2), “The Temple of the LORD” (Jer. 7:4), whereat God WILL NOT suffer the presence of wicked men! If the wicked “come and stand before Me in this **House** which is **called by My Name**”, God says, He will cast them out of His sight (Jer. 7:10-15)! “Behold, even I have seen it, saith the LORD” (Jer. 7:11), “I will cast you out of My sight” (Jer. 7:15). Therefore, the psalmist declared, “**Blessed** are they that dwell in Thy House”, because all those who are expelled therefrom - **WOE** is upon them (Ps. 84:4)! Heaven has always been populated with the “**blessed**” of humanity, and hell? Hell is humanities “**woe**” (Lk. 6:20-26)! This means that the House of God is for *heaven’s citizens*, *God’s household*, and not for any other nation or family. Those who enjoy the House of God on earth, enjoy it in heaven. Praise God! To approach unto and stand before God ON EARTH, my reader, in His earthly House, this is a Divinely-empowered experience! It is written, “**Blessed** is **the man** whom thou **choosest**, and **causest** to **approach unto** Thee, that he may dwell in Thy courts: we shall be satisfied with the goodness of Thy House, even of Thy Holy Temple” (Ps. 65:4).

The Persons Who Stand Before God – *segregated by sanctification*

“What hath My beloved to do **in Mine House**, seeing she hath wrought lewdness with many” (Jer. 11:15)?

All people who came to stand before God in this place, even those who were not Levites, had to be “**cleansed**” according to the **purification** of the **Sanctuary**” (2 Chron. 30:19). The House of God is, in essence, a contradiction to wickedness, and by location it is at enmity to those persons that “dwell in the tents of wickedness” (Ps. 84:10). The two places and their inhabitants are contrary one to another – as the essence of light to darkness. You may profess that you are beloved of God, and you may be, but what if God said to you and your Church, “What hath my beloved to do in **Mine House**, *seeing* she hath wrought lewdness with many” (Jer. 11:15)? According to God, do you deserve to be in His House? Those that are within God’s House, “they will be still praising [God]” (Ps. 84:4), those that are expelled outside are those to whom God said, “when thou doest evil, then thou rejoicest” (Jer. 11:15). My reader, you pray in God’s **Name**, profess God’s **Name**, speak in God’s **Name**, and gather together with others, as you suppose, in God’s **Name**, but have you ever been terrified to do so? Wonder at this: any inanimate man-made structure or spiritually-built living organism, whether visible or invisible, if it be a place where God has recorded His **Name**, or in other words, it is a place where God’s **Name** resides, one should be careful so as to never approach this place with ungodly simplicity! For, remember, God said of the Angel, “**My Name** is in him” (Ex. 23:20-21). Even so, also, where God’s Name resides God forewarns: “BEWARE OF HIM, and obey his voice; for he will not pardon your **transgressions**: **for My Name is in him**!”

Seeing that God is among the people of Israel, He warns of danger and death. He is the invisible Executioner, the eminent Person and Presence which is to be reckoned with, and with His gaze scanning the horizon, going to and fro, He speaketh on this wise, “I WILL...and WILL”, but my reader, what will He do? Imagine His scanning gaze stopping upon you - oh man! - and do you know what He will say? God said of old, “**I will set my face against that man**, and **will cut him off from among his people**” (Lev. 20:3)! Since the Lord is among Israel, His face readily beholds sin in a manner different from the rest of the nations - what He readily beholds He readily judges! Therefore, because God is in the midst of Israel, what Israel does is before His Face. He is beholding it, and at the experience of certain sins He will turn

His face toward you to **set it against you**, for harm and destruction. When Israel sins, they *do not* sin as heathen nations that are “aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the Covenants of promise, having no hope, and **without God** in the world”, they sin as a Nation that is “**nigh unto God**” (Deut 4:7) and “separated” “from all the people that are upon the face of the earth”. In other words, Israel is with God and God is with them (Ex. 33:16). Since His presence is with them (Ex. 33:14, 16, 34:9-10) in the Sanctuary, when Israel sins they do, God says, “**defile My Sanctuary**” and “profane My holy name” (Lev. 20:3). Seeing that He is in the Sanctuary, God does judgment by **setting his face against men!** God sets his face against men who “bear” their iniquity, iniquity which God forewarned of, because it would offend the Lord’s holiness and defile His Tabernacle! Thus, He said again, “**Sanctify yourselves** therefore, and be ye **holy**: for **I am the LORD your God**. And ye shall keep my statutes, and do them: **I am the LORD which sanctify you**” (Lev. 20:7-8). God commands that there be no wickedness committed, and if any is committed, there must be an atonement made. The death of the guilty can absolve the wrath of God, but if a non-human atonement cannot bear the guilt of the wickedness which men committed, then literally, the wicked persons, the sinners themselves must die! They all must die until, God said, “**there be no wickedness among you**” (Lev. 20:14)!

“Thou shalt bring them in, and plant them in the mountain of thine inheritance, in the place, O LORD, which thou hast made for thee to dwell in, in the **Sanctuary**, O Lord, which thy hands have established.” – Exodus 15:17

“And let them make Me a **Sanctuary**; that I may **dwell among them**.” – Exodus 25:8

“...in all places where I record My Name **I will come unto thee**, and I will bless thee.” – Exodus 20:24

Because the Sanctuary was the place where God was (Ex. 15:17, 25:8), it became a place whereupon God’s name was called, as if the object itself bore the very reputation of God, and what you did to it, you did to God. Seeing that God was therein, the Sanctuary was a place of revelatory, eye-opening experiences where men saw God (Ps. 63:2), His ways, works, and purposes (Ps. 68:24, 77:13), and therefore all men were compelled to look thereto for help from God (Ps. 20:2). With the purity and livelihood of the Sanctuary secured, salvation was secured. When men were assured the Temple was well, they rested assured that their salvation was well (Ezek. 37:26, 28, Dan. 11:31). The inspired writers understood the health and setup of the Sanctuary to be the method and means for Israelite prosperity and peace (Ezek. 37:26). At the happening of Israel’s peace with God, power overflowed beyond their borders until, as it was written, “the heathen shall know that I the LORD do **sanctify** Israel, when My **Sanctuary** shall be in the midst of them for evermore” (Ezek. 37:28). Is it any marvel then why the Sanctuary is called, “the Sanctuary of strength” (Dan. 11:31)?

So many people have burden and zeal to pray for and evangelize sinners, but they do not understand that, if we were rightly related to God – His House – then God would break forth upon sinners with unfathomable power. Instead, all our prayers that we pray are usually *below* we can ask or imagine, and furthermore, all the unction and efficacy in which we labor in evangelism is *weak, powerless, and shameful* when compared to the New Testament witness. How is it that we can be so fallen, so far removed from our God that did, that does, that will do “exceedingly abundantly *above all* that we ask or think, according to the power that worketh in us” (Eph. 3:20)?

Like Leonard Ravenhill once said, “Save the Church, save the world!” This means that if we saved the Church we would save the world! If we would build God’s House, He would be glorified (Hag. 1:8)! If we would make our ways and our doings right, God would break forth upon the heathen! None would say, “Where is their God” (Joel 2:17), any longer! Think of it, my reader. Was it even possible for there to be an OT revival if men “[took] away the daily sacrifice” (Dan. 11:31)? How then, for us in the NT, will we see a revival upon saints which will overflow upon the heathen if, alas, we do not even have the daily sacrifice perfected? Wouldn’t it be more pertinent to be burdened for the wrath-absolving labors of the NT Priesthood, if indeed we desire to take ground from the gates of our alien-enemies of hell round about us [see God’s curse: “Stripped of Power and Success at War”]?

The Code of the Priesthood

A Sanctuary is a “cleansed” place (Ezek. 45:18) which was ruled by “Laws of purification” (2 Chron. 30:19). Such a place as this required *ministers* (“them that **keep the charge** of the Sanctuary” -Num. 3:32), and they too, like the actual place, needed to be purified, cleansed, and sanctified. The *ministers* of the Sanctuary were the Levites (which included the Priests). They were the foremost class of holy persons who were, above all, called to **stand before God**. The Levites, who entered His “Sanctuary” (Ezek. 44:15-16), and the prophets, who stood before God’s presence (Jer. 15:1, 19), they were the shepherds and pastors of God’s people, and according to scripture they were “chosen” for this office because they were “like” God (“a chosen man” - Jer. 15:19, 49:19, 50:44, 2 Chron. 30:22).

If the common Israelite had to attain an acceptable degree of holiness, how much more those who came nearer to God than they? Beyond others, Priests entered the Sanctuary of God! It was their duty to keep the Sanctuary and House of God. For this purpose, the Levites were chosen to camp directly around the Sanctuary. They were the holy and chosen tribe who, by vocation, God brought near to handle and care for the holy things. Among the Levites, the *Priests* were held to an even higher degree of holiness (Lev. 21:6). Thereby they must avoid profaning God’s Name (Lev. 21:6), for it was said of the Priest, “he is holy unto his God” (Lev. 21:7)! The Lord continues to emphasize, “he shall be holy unto thee: for **I the LORD**, which sanctify you, am holy” (Lev. 21:8) – this is the foundational basis for all God’s commandments! The High Priest, who alone could enter *the most holy place*, was more holy than the other Priests. He could on no occasion touch a dead body, rend his clothes, uncover his head, for in so doing he would defile himself or the Tabernacle of God, and the penalty was DEATH (Lev. 21:10-15). The Lord said, “Neither shall he go out of **the Sanctuary**, nor **profane the Sanctuary** of his God; for the crown of the anointing oil of God is upon him: I am the LORD” (Lev. 21:12).

Putting On, Putting Off, and Washing

To stand before God and survive it, a Priest must “**put on** his linen garment, and his linen breeches shall he put upon his flesh” (Lev. 6:10-11). When leaving the presence of the Lord a Priest would then “**put off** his garments, and put on other garments” (Lev. 6:11). Before a man comes nigh He must “**wash** his flesh with **water** in the **holy place**” (Lev. 16:24). After the goat is released the man who touched the goat must become clean before entering back into the camp, for it is to be kept holy though it is less holy than the Holy place. He shall “**wash** his clothes, and **bathe** his flesh in **water**, and afterward come **into the camp**” (Lev. 16:26). You see my reader, they must be **washed** to enter God’s House (Ex. 30:20-21, 40:12)! Are there no NT “**washings**” for the NT Priesthood (Titus 3:5, Eph. 5:26)? Is there no “**putting off**” and “**putting on**” regulation for those who enter into the NT House of God (Eph. 4:22-24, Col. 3:9-10, Rom. 13:12, 14)?

Blemishes and Perfection

A Priest was forbidden from the Priesthood if he was a man that had “**a blemish**, he shall not approach: **a blind man**, or a lame, or he that hath a flat nose, or any thing superfluous” (Lev. 21:18). Neither could a sacrifice be acceptable if it had a blemish or “any thing superfluous,” the Lord said “it shall be **perfect** to be **accepted**; there shall be **no blemish** therein” (Lev. 22:21). A Priest of the seed of Aaron could not “**come nigh**” having “**a blemish**,” thus the Lord said, “he shall not go in unto the vail, nor come nigh unto the altar, because he hath **a blemish**; that he **profane not My sanctuaries**: for **I the LORD do sanctify them**” (Lev. 21:23). The Priests had to be separate in person and live separate in relations so as to serve the separate-holy things and enter into the holy places of the Tabernacle, otherwise they would defile their holy persons, the holy places, and the holy orders of their employment and suffer death as a consequence. Again, I say, the Levites themselves cannot **eat of the altar** while being **unclean** (Lev. 7:20, 21:17-23). “Say unto them, Whosoever he be of all your seed among your generations, that goeth unto the holy things, which the children of Israel hallow unto the LORD, having his **uncleanness** upon him, **that soul shall be cut off from My presence**, I am the LORD” (Lev. 22:3). “They shall therefore keep mine ordinance, **lest they bear sin for it, and die** therefore, if they **profane it**: **I the LORD do sanctify them**” (Lev. 22:9). Remember the hallowed words of the Lord in 1 Corinthians 3:17? “If any man **defile the Temple of God**, **him shall God destroy**; for the **Temple of God** is **holy**, which Temple ye are.” And again the Lord repeats in Leviticus, “Therefore ye shall keep My commandments, and do them: I am the LORD. Neither shall ye **profane** My holy Name; but **I will be hallowed among the children of Israel**:

I am the LORD which hallow you, that brought you out of the Land of Egypt, **to be your God: I am the LORD**” (Lev. 22:31-33).

Would to God that the LORD would make the preachers of the New Covenant, otherwise known as rulers (Jas. 3:1, Heb. 13:17), faithful “keepers of the charge of the House” (Ezek. 44:14). The Levites were, foremost of all, responsible for instructing and requiring all other Israelites to keep **clean** and **holy**, by Law. When the Levites were obedient they were said to be, those who “taught the good knowledge of the LORD”, as it was said in Hezekiah’s day (2 Chron. 30:22). They “caused the people to understand the Law: and the people stood in their place. So they read in the Book of the Law of God distinctly, and gave the sense, and caused them to understand the reading” (Neh. 8:7-8), as it was said in Ezra’s day. Would to God, yet again, “the ears of all the people [would be] attentive unto the Book of the Law” (Neh. 8:3)! If the Levites and Priests failed to, God says, “**teach My people the difference** between the **holy** and **profane**, and cause them **to discern** between the **unclean** and the **clean**. And in controversy they shall **stand in judgment**; and they shall **judge it according to My judgments**: and they shall keep My Laws and My statutes in **ALL MINE ASSEMBLIES**; and they shall hallow My sabbaths” (Ezekiel 44:23-24), they would be blood-guilty of nationwide murder. If all the people understood their own doings and continued therein, it was national suicide. On individual or nationwide circumstances, **holiness**, **sanctification**, and **cleanness** determined life itself.

Individuals

“But those that encamp before the Tabernacle toward the east, *even* before the Tabernacle of the congregation eastward, *shall be* Moses, and Aaron and his sons, *keeping the charge* of the Sanctuary for the charge of the children of Israel; and **the stranger that cometh nigh shall be put to death.**” – Numbers 3:38

“Whosoever **TOUCHETH** the **dead body** of any man that is dead, and purifieth not himself, **defileth the tabernacle of the LORD**; and **that soul shall be cut off from Israel**: because the **water of separation** was not **sprinkled** upon him, he shall be **unclean**; his **uncleanness is yet upon him.**” – Numbers 19:13

Nationwide

“And the children of Israel spake unto Moses, saying, **BEHOLD, we DIE, we PERISH, WE ALL PERISH. Whosoever cometh any thing near unto the Tabernacle** of the LORD shall **DIE**: shall we be **consumed** with **DYING?**” – Numbers 17:12-13

The Way of Escape

“Ye shall **keep the charge** of the Sanctuary, and the charge of the altar: **that there be no wrath any more upon the children of Israel.**” – Numbers 18:5

Oh, my reader! God has a good answer to Israel’s cry, “shall we be consumed with dying?” But will we understand it? Will we agree with it? As you can see, if the Levites neglected their vocation and failed to instruct the people of Israel, a situation of national security emerged. Look upon them, my reader! Listen to them! Their voices howling and crying out, “WE ALL PERISH!” Saints were turning sinners – Israelites sinners! – and each one of them were, fearfully, in the hands of an angry God! Why? They violated the rules of holiness and profaned holy orders. Evidently, therefore, an Israel without Levitical instruction resulted in nationwide uncleanness and then... national disaster! At such a time, like the following verses will reveal, the Lord condemned the Priests and prophets foremost of all because they, in their negligence and folly, caused the downfall of an entire nation. The old proverb does memorialize such a situation, saying, “Scornful men bring a city into a snare: but wise men turn away wrath” (Prov. 29:8). The Priests and prophets are the wise men, my reader! They are the men who bore the utmost responsibility in Israel! The following utterances of divine fury do confirm this reality, God saying,

“Her *Priests* have violated my Law, and have profaned mine holy things: they have **put no difference** between the **holy** and **profane**, neither have they **shewed difference** between the **unclean** and the **clean**, and have hid their eyes from my sabbaths, and I am profaned among them” – Ezekiel 22:26

“Her *prophets* are light and treacherous persons: her *Priests* have **polluted the Sanctuary**, they have done violence to the Law.” – Zeph. 3:4

“For both *prophet* and *Priest* are profane; yea, **IN MY HOUSE** have I found their wickedness, saith the LORD” – Jer. 23:11

“And ye have not kept the charge of mine holy things: but ye have set **keepers of my charge** in my Sanctuary for yourselves” – Ezek. 44:8

You see, my reader, the Levites were “the porters [the door keepers] at **the Gates of the House of the Lord**, that none which was **unclean** in any thing **should enter in**” (2 Chron. 23:19; see 1 Chron. 9:14-34). This means that, if they fell... Israel fell. Their offended God who was *in their midst* identified His impending wrath as it related to [His very presence](#), warning in one place that He would, “go far off from My Sanctuary” (Ezek. 8:6), and in another place, “I will profane My Sanctuary” (Ezek. 24:21). The two threats are one in the same! The Lord was [going away](#) from His Sanctuary because it has become a hateful place, as it was written, “He hath abhorred His Sanctuary” (Lam. 2:7), and when He left His Sanctuary... how would He [return](#)? He left to call forth the armies of the heathen peoples, upon returning He joined their battle line, and in battle He empowered their armies to crush and conquer the Israelites! God, through the heathen, destroyed His own House and people, make no mistake about it!

“He said furthermore unto me, Son of man, seest thou what they do? even the great abominations that the house of Israel committeth here, **that I should go far off from My Sanctuary?** but turn thee yet again, and thou shalt see greater abominations.” – Ezek. 8:6

“Speak unto the house of Israel, Thus saith the Lord GOD; Behold, **I will profane My Sanctuary**, the excellency of your strength, the desire of your eyes, and that which your soul pitieth; and your sons and your daughters whom ye have left shall fall by the sword.” – Ezek. 24:21

“Wherefore, as I live, saith the Lord GOD; Surely, because thou hast **defiled My Sanctuary** with all thy detestable things, and with all thine abominations, therefore will **I also diminish thee; neither shall Mine eye spare, neither will I have any pity.**” – Ezek. 5:11

“The Lord hath **cast off His altar**, He hath **abhorred His Sanctuary**, He hath **given up into the hand of the enemy** the walls of her palaces; they have made a noise in the House of the LORD, as in the day of a solemn feast.” – Lam. 2:7

God takes ownership of Israel’s destruction, declaring, “I will profane My Sanctuary” (Ezek. 24:21), even though its profanation was through the instrumentality of heathen armies. When wrath of this magnitude did break forth upon Israel (like in the Assyrian and Babylonian invasion into Israel and Judah, ending in their captivities), the heathen armies were called God’s beating “rod” and hewing “axe” (Isa. 10:5, 15). Knowing this, the prophets lifted up their prayers to God, saying, “Behold, O LORD, and consider to whom **Thou hast done this**. Shall the women eat their fruit, and children of a span long? shall the *Priest* and the *prophet* be **slain in the Sanctuary of the Lord**” (Lamentations 2:20)? “How is the gold become dim! How is the most fine gold changed! The stones of **the Sanctuary** are poured out in the top of every street” (Lam. 4:1)! The people who were formerly unconquerable, their fenced cities of walls un-breach-able, their Temple of excellency incomparable, they were conquered, breached, and profaned! Those persons who were formerly forbidden entrance – **unholy persons** – did invade and **defile** that which is holy!

“The people **of Thy holiness** have possessed it but a little while: our **adversaries** have **trodden down Thy Sanctuary.**” – Isa. 63:18

“O God, the **heathen** are **come into Thine inheritance**; Thy **Holy Temple** have they defiled; they have laid Jerusalem on heaps.” – Psalm 79:1

How terrifying it is! How awful! And yet understandable because, this judgment is retributive justice against a great evil – when Israel forsook God’s **holy** and **clean** ways. They were insolent, in violation of His Law, thus the Lord reckoned with them:

“In that ye have brought into my Sanctuary **strangers, uncircumcised** in heart, and **uncircumcised** in flesh, to **be in my Sanctuary**, to pollute it, **even my House**, when ye offer my bread, the fat and the blood, and they have broken My Covenant because of all your abominations. And ye have not kept the charge of Mine holy things: but ye have set keepers of My charge in My Sanctuary for yourselves. Thus saith the Lord GOD; No **stranger, uncircumcised** in heart, nor **uncircumcised** in flesh, shall **enter into My Sanctuary**, of any stranger that is among the children of Israel.” – Ezek. 44:7-9

You see my reader, when God annihilated Israel by leaving them, joining their enemies to destroy them, Israel cried out for God’s return, saying:

“O God, why hast Thou cast us off for ever? why doth Thine anger smoke against the sheep of Thy pasture? Remember **Thy congregation**, which Thou hast purchased of old; the rod of Thine inheritance, which Thou hast redeemed; **this mount Zion, wherein Thou hast dwelt. Lift up thy feet** unto the perpetual desolations; even all that **the enemy hath done wickedly in the Sanctuary**. Thine **enemies roar in the midst of Thy congregations**; they set up their ensigns for signs. A man was famous according as he had lifted up axes upon the thick trees. But now they break down the carved work thereof at once with axes and hammers. They have **cast fire into Thy Sanctuary**, they have **defiled by casting down the Dwelling Place of Thy Name to the ground**. They said in their hearts, Let us destroy them together: **they have burned up all the synagogues of God in the Land.**” - Psalm 74:1-8

“The **adversary** hath spread out his hand upon all her pleasant things: for she hath seen that the **heathen entered into her Sanctuary, whom thou didst command that they should not enter into Thy congregation.**” – Lam. 1:10

When God speaks of redemption, it is an answer to these prayers, thus its language is in reference to the whole of Israel’s salvation – God’s presence, God’s Temple, with **holiness** and **cleanliness** restored!

“And I will encamp about Mine House because of the army, because of him that passeth by, and because of him that returneth: and **no oppressor shall pass through them any more**: for now have I seen with Mine eyes. Rejoice greatly, O daughter of Zion; shout, O daughter of Jerusalem: behold, thy King cometh unto thee: He is just, and having salvation; lowly, and riding upon an ass, and upon a colt the foal of an ass.” – Zech. 9:8-9

“In that day shall there be upon the bells of the horses, **HOLINESS UNTO THE LORD**; and the pots in the LORD’S house shall be like the bowls before the altar. Yea, every pot in Jerusalem and in Judah **shall be holiness** unto the LORD of hosts: and all they that sacrifice shall come and take of them, and seethe therein: and **in that day there shall be no more the Canaanite in the House of the LORD of hosts.**” – Zech. 14:20-21

My reader, have you heard the terrifying question? “LORD, **WHO** shall abide in **Thy Tabernacle**? **WHO** shall dwell in **Thy holy hill**” (Psalms 15:1)? Marvel at this and be astonished! NO wicked persons were allowed in God’s House (Lev. 20:14)! In an OT sense, that is, “no **strangers**” (Num. 3:38, Ezek. 44:7-9), no “**Canaanite**” (Zech. 14:20-21), no “**oppressor**” (Zech. 9:8-9), no “**uncircumcised**” (Ezek. 44:7-9) are allowed in God’s House! Whether “the **enemy**” (Ps. 74:1-8, Lam. 2:7), Israel’s “**adversaries**” (Isa. 63:18, Lam. 1:10), “the **heathen**” (Ps. 79:1, Lam. 1:10), those **unclean** by dead bodies (Num. 19:11, 13), or simply put – the “**unclean**” (2 Chron. 23:19) – all were expelled from the hallowed honor granted to humanity in that, on earth, they were enabled to stand before God’s immediate and special presence! In an OT sense, as it pertains to The Priesthood, Aaron’s sons who were “**holy**” (Lev. 21:7), “**anointed**” (Lev. 21:12), and “**washed**” (Ex. 30:20-21, 40:12, Lev. 16:24, 26), having “**put on his linen garment**” (Lev. 6:10-11), these were enabled to minister in the Sanctuary, and none else! If any of Aaron’s sons were **defiled by dead bodies** (Lev. 21:11,

Num. 19:13), or otherwise, had “a **blemish**”, is “a **blind** man” (Lev. 21:18, 23), or in any regard, had “**uncleanness**” upon him (Lev. 7:20, 21:17-23, 22:3), these were disallowed entrance into the Sanctuary of God. Ceremonially they needed to be “purified”, “sprinkled”, and in “separation” (Num. 19:13). Under the pain of death, God warned: “Whosoever he be of all your seed among your generations, that goeth unto **the holy things**, which the children of Israel **hallow** unto the LORD, having his **uncleanness** upon him, **that soul shall be cut off from My Presence**, I am the LORD” (Lev. 22:3). In the same language of ceremonial acceptance directed toward OT sacrifices, the Priesthood was acceptable only if they were “**perfect**” and with “**no blemish**” (Lev. 22:21).

My reader if you don’t understand this, you don’t know “how amiable” (Ps. 84:1) the House of God is! You don’t understand “the beauty of the LORD” (Ps. 27:4)! You have not “loved the Habitation” of His House (Ps. 26:8; see the violent pursuit of holiness inherent in David’s love for God’s Habitation in Psalm 26:1-12)! You don’t understand what it is to be “before Him” (Ps. 96:6) as one that is standing in His immediate presence, in His House (Jer. 7:10-15)! You don’t know the blessedness of the “**blessed**” man (Ps. 65:4) who worships God in “the beauty of **holiness**” (Ps. 96:9, 29:2)! You have no idea who is fit and worthy to, God says, “enter at these gates to worship the LORD” (Jer. 7:2), the place where men have been appointed to “keep the charge of the Sanctuary” (Num. 3:32) by putting a “**difference** between the **unclean** and **clean**” (Ezek. 22:26). All who appear there are “**cleansed**” or expelled (2 Chron. 30:19), Hallelujah! Shout for joy at this! Or are you included in the vast number of “Christians” who are at this time, without the crying prayer, “O Lord, righteousness belongeth unto thee, but unto us confusion of faces, as at this day” (Dan. 9:7)! “As it is written in the Law of Moses, all this evil is come upon us: yet made we not our prayer before the LORD our God, that we might turn from our iniquities and understand Thy truth. Therefore hath the LORD watched upon the evil, and brought it upon us: for the LORD our God is righteous in all His works which He doeth: for we obeyed not His voice” (Dan. 9:13-14)! Or, will you contradict and blaspheme, my reader, saying... “What wrath? What Law? What Unclean Laws?” Oh, my reader, the impudence! The mockery! Have you never read?

“But as he which hath called you is **holy**, so be ye **holy** in all manner of conversation; **Because it is written**, Be ye **holy**; for I am **HOLY**.” – 1 Peter 1:15-16

“If any man **defile** the Temple of God, **him shall God destroy**; for the Temple of God is **holy**, which Temple ye are.” – 1 Corinthians 3:17

“For ye are the temple of the living God; **as God hath said**, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore **come out from among them**, and be ye **separate**, saith the Lord, and **touch not the unclean thing**; and I will receive you, And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us **cleanse** ourselves from all **filthiness** of the flesh and spirit, perfecting **holiness** in the fear of God.” – 2 Corinthians 6:16-7:1

My reader, you may seek eternal-safety and personal well-being as you continually resort to “the Sanctuary” in the House of God (your Church), but unknowingly, by your unsanctified body, soul, and spirit (1 Thess. 5:23-24, 2 Cor. 7:1) you are defiling God’s house, and, shockingly, the place where you sought refuge from His wrath has become the grounds by which you provoke His wrath, and where, at first, you sought to escape judgment, God will there, at that place, begin His judgments. Did you never read, “judgment must begin at the House of God” (1 Pet. 4:17), even so it was written of old: “Slay utterly old and young, both maids, and little children, and women...and **begin at my Sanctuary**. Then they began at the ancient men which were **before The House**” (Ezek. 9:6).

Oh! How we have not “walked mournfully before the LORD of hosts” (Mal. 3:15, 1 Cor. 5:3, Ezek. 9:4)! How we have violated His Laws of spiritual companionship! How we have spurned separation! How we have failed to stand in judgment and “discern between the righteous and the wicked, between him that serveth God and him that serveth Him not” (Mal. 3:18)! How the Law is slacked, the people are at ease, and the faithful few are persecuted! How the wicked have risen and the righteous are hidden, and the happy rebels cast slander like gravel the mouth! In the midst of such a

scene, my reader, there is hope. It was written, “they that feared the LORD spake often one to another: and the LORD hearkened, and heard it, and a book of remembrance was written before Him for them that feared the LORD, and that thought upon His Name. And they shall be Mine, saith the Lord of hosts, in that day when I make up My jewels; and I will spare them, as a man spareth His own son that serveth Him” (Mal. 3:14-18). Come Lord Jesus, come.

In The New Testament & In The Consummation – *how it is & how it will be*

Saints = holy/sanctified ones

Firstly, let the reader understand: The New Testament **Sanct-uary** of God is **sanct-ified** just like the Old Testament Sanctuary! Therefore, its population must also be **sanct-ified**. “The Sanctuary” is a **SANCTIFIED PLACE**, a **HOLY PLACE**, provided for a **holy people** to come before a **holy God**. By its name alone this is inherently understood, **unholy** and **unclean** persons are disallowed entrance. In this wicked and adulterous generation that we live in, the holy is profaned, whether in matrimony with man or God all boundary marks have been TRESPASSED! Tragically, the dangerous and absurd violations foretold by William Booth are today’s reality. Christianity has become “religion without the Holy Ghost, Christianity without Christ, forgiveness without repentance, salvation without regeneration, heaven without hell.” Impossible! Even so, today, the impossibilities continue: we have **unholy men** who think they have *the Holy Ghost*! And they, while yet **unsanctified**, attend an assembly at a place which they call, “**The Sanctuary**”! But, my reader, while *this people* or *this place* remain **unsanctified**, can it be called “**The Sanctuary**”? If God, The Sanctifying One, is not in “**The Sanctuary**”, be sure of this: *it is not a Sanctuary!* But how does a man become **sanctified**?

My reader, birth into Christ, “Who of God is made unto us wisdom, and righteousness, and **sanctification**, and redemption” (1 Cor. 1:30), is the only means by which men are **sanctified**. Therefore the redeemed of God and none else, being sanctified, are enabled to approach the **hallowed** and **sanctified** place wherein Jesus Christ said, shockingly, “there am I *in the midst* of them” (Matt. 18:20). All the people gathered together are, Christ said, “in My Name”, therefore whether in prayer or purpose, all who are gathered together “agree” (Matt. 18:18-20)! Being utterly possessed and encompassed by One – Jesus Christ – who is *within* them and *in the midst* of them, this causes a blessed “unity of the Spirit” (Eph. 4:3). Jesus Christ, standing *within* and *around* those who have gathered together, means that, the many persons are *in* One Person, and, thus, they “stand fast in *one* Spirit, with *one* Mind” (Php. 1:27), not merely *one* physical gathering. No, they are altogether in the **sanctification** of one Name – “one body, and one Spirit...one Lord, one faith, one baptism, one God and Father of all, who is above all, and through all, and in you all” (Eph. 4:4-6) – and consequentially, the people are one in prayer and purpose, their gathering is in “one accord” (Acts 4:24), and such prayers, being empowered thereto by the unanimity of Christ’s Person, transform this *earthly place* into a *heavenly place* (Note: by definition the word “saint” means, “a sanctified one” or “a holy one”, which in turn means, “a heavenly one” –Heb. 3:1, 6:4). All conditions fulfilled, this place becomes **hallowed**, especially and immediately **heavenly**, and because of this – what is done “on earth” is one with what is done “in heaven” (Matt. 18:18-19)! This means what is done *in this place*, on **earth**, is simultaneously done in **heaven**! Behold the apex, the chief goal, the essence of what a Christian assembly is - how that, by experience, we are enabled to live out the answered prayer of Jesus Christ: “Our Father which art in **heaven**, hallowed be Thy Name. Thy Kingdom **come**. Thy will be done, **as in heaven, so in earth**”, “Thy will be done **in earth, as it is in heaven**” (Lk. 11:2, Matt. 6:10).

The Code of the Priesthood

In the New Testament Code of the Priesthood there is a **holy washing** and a **holy water** like as the OT type (Lev. 16:24, 26, Ex. 30:20-21, 40:12), only this **washing** is for the NT Holy Place, called, the “House of God” (see Heb.

10:19-25), which is, namely, “the assembling of ourselves together” (Heb. 10:25, Matt. 18:20, Jn. 5:21)! So, my reader, what about you? Are you “**washed** with **pure water**” so that you might “**draw near**” with assurance that your presence in the House of God will not **defile** it (1 Cor. 3:17)? No Israelite would have “boldness”, or fearlessness, “to **enter** into **the holiest**” of the New Testament House of God without the **ceremonial preparations** which God has mercifully provided (Heb. 10:19-22). After being “**washed**” and “**sprinkled**” (Heb. 10:22, 1 Pet. 1:2), then they would have boldness to stand before God; because they were made **ceremonially qualified** they will not die. Therefore, my reader, there *is* a NT “**washing**”, without which no man can enter the House of God! It is called “**the washing of regeneration**” (Titus 3:5). Yea, there is a ministration of Church officers (Eph. 4:11) who are gifted and employed in a Divinely-empowered task (Eph. 4:8, 12, 1 Cor. 3:5-10), a task which they, through the Lord, “labour” to accomplish (1 Cor. 3:9, 2 Cor. 11:2, Col. 1:28-29) what Christ died to accomplish (Col. 1:22, Jude 24), so that through Holy-Ghost-preaching (2 Tim. 1:14), otherwise known as the “**washing of water by the word**” (Eph. 5:26, Col. 1:28-29, John 7:38), the Bride would be beautified into an acceptable condition when she is finally presented to Christ (Eph. 4:26-27, 2 Cor. 11:2)! Such a great Bride must be prepared and made ready (Rev. 19:7)! She must be ceremonially, spiritually, and gloriously arrayed, even so: “Awake, awake; put on thy strength, O Zion; put on thy beautiful garments” (Isa. 52:1)!

Furthermore, this Bride has typological parallels, for she is also called “God’s Building” (1 Cor. 3:9) and “the Temple of God” (1 Cor. 3:17), and such a “great House” as this must be built with **acceptable materials** – gold, silver, and precious stones, rather than wood, hay, stubble, and earth (1 Cor. 3:12-18, 2 Tim. 2:19-21) – therefore “let every man take heed how he buildeth thereupon” (1 Cor. 3:10); let it be with heavenly wisdom not earthly wisdom; let a man so wash the Bride with **holy waters** rather than polluted waters; yes, lest it happen to him what is warned against: the man built, he defiled, and he died (1 Cor. 3:10-18)! The filth-preventing activity of keeping the saints washed is a typological parallel to keeping them acceptably arrayed, namely, in the NT *Priestly garments*.

“But ye are a chosen generation, **a Royal Priesthood**, an holy Nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light: Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.” - 1 Peter 2:9-10

Was there a cessation of the Royal Priesthood at the cessation of the Old Testament? No! In reference to the Church of **the Consummation**, it was written: all the attendees of the congregation (Jer. 30:20) of the Church will be “**Priests**”, “**Ministers**” (Isa. 61:6, Rev. 20:6, Jer. 33:17-22), “**Levites**” (Isa. 66:21, Jer. 33:17-22), “**Kings**” (Rev. 5:10), and “**Children of God**” (Rom. 8:21). Even so, what should we expect of the New Testament – the in-between-point between the Old Testament and the Consummation? The New Testament believers have become “a Royal Priesthood” in Christ, and what are their *Priestly garments*? Or do you, to your destruction (1 Cor. 3:17), allow Priests to attend the House of God with no “linen garment” (Lev. 6:10-11)? My reader, “the fine linen is the righteousness of the saints” (Rev. 19:8), imputed and imparted through Christ! The local NT House of God will literally cease to exist if the Priesthood that attends it has “**defiled** their garments” (Rev. 3:4). Christ is our “Living Way” (Heb. 10:20), our “High Priest” (Heb. 10:21), and we, born from Him (Heb. 2:13, Rom. 8:29, Ex. 28:1), are employed in His everlasting order; the order of Melchizedek (Ps. 110:4, Heb. 7:3). He is our “Lively Hope” (1 Pet. 1:3) and Linen Garments, yea, for as much as He is our righteousness - “and if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but **the Spirit is life because of righteousness**” (Rom. 8:10)! New Testament Priests, have you attended to the “**putting on**” and “**putting off**” regulations of the NT House of God? Do you have a “death-penalty awareness” that, if you enter **the House of God** without being properly arrayed in the Divinely prescribed *Priestly garments*, you will DIE?

“But **put ye on** the **Lord Jesus Christ**, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfill the lusts thereof” – Rom. 13:14

“As many as have been baptized into Christ have **put on Christ**” (Gal. 3:27)! My reader, Christ is our *Priestly garment* which we must “put on”. He is The Garment of our Priestly acceptance? He is our ceremonial preparation and perfection, once and forever to its completion (Col. 2:10), if indeed we “continue in the faith grounded and settled...not moved away from the hope of the gospel” (Col. 1:23). Practically, experientially, and evidently, the life of the believer

will be Priest-like in appearance. By this I mean, in the NT reality of what Priests have become: according to Ephesians 4:22-24, to “**put off**” the “old man” results in a “**putting away**” of: **lying, anger, stealing, corrupt communication, bitterness, wrath, clamor, evil speaking, malice, and un-forgiveness** (see Eph. 4:22-32); according to Ephesians 4:22-24, to “**put on** the new man” results in a renewal of **the entire-man**, in *thought, word, and deed*, because the new man is “created in **righteousness and true holiness**”, and thus the man **speaks the truth, works hard, gives to the needy, and with edifying speech, is kind, tenderhearted, and forgiving** (see Eph. 4:22-32); according to Colossians 3:9-10, to “**put off** the old man” results in **putting off** of: **anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication, fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, covetousness, and idolatry** (see Col. 3:5-17); according to Colossians 3:9-10, to “**put on** the new man” results in a renewal of **the entire-man**, in *thought, word, and deed*, because the new man is “the image of Him that created Him”, which means that “Christ is all, and in all”, therefore the man is **merciful, kind, humble, meek, longsuffering, forbearing, forgiving, charitable, peaceful, thankful**, and because he is of **a continual mind** to meditate on wisdom in his own personal time, he **zealously pursues** opportunity to **teach and sing** to others (see Col. 3:5-17)! Let **The Code of the Priesthood** be understood by all! Those who are arrayed in Christ, these are Priests! And this Christ is, according the aforementioned **beauties of holiness, the Priestly Garment of Righteousness** whereby NT saints find boldness to *drawn near, attend, and minister* within **the New Testament House of God!**

My reader, there is no other purpose for which Christians should enter within **the House of God**, but that they are ministering to God! And what is our ministration? We, **the Priests**, take up *censer and incense* to perfume the Presence of God with Spirit-filled prayers (1 Tim. 2:1-8, Eph. 6:18-20, Jude 20-21). **The Priests** maintain a continual attendance to and ministration within the House of God **firstly**, to offer themselves as sacrifices to God (Rom. 12:1-2, Gal. 2:20, 1 Cor. 15:31), and when the personal perfection (Lev. 22:20-23) of each individual Priest’s sacrifice is accepted by God, then we, **secondarily**, as a whole Church, are offered up together as **one sacrifice** to God (Rom. 15:15-19, Php. 2:17-18, 1 Cor. 10:16-17) – and let the reader take note that, according to scripture, the personal and corporate sacrifice to God must be “**holy**”, “**acceptable**”, “**perfect**”, “**without blemish**”, and “**sanctified**” in a New Testament sense of what these **ceremonial qualifications** mean. Furthermore, extending into another vein of typological application: **The Priests**, who “minister about holy things”, we do “live of the things of **the Temple**” (1 Cor. 9:13), because “they which wait at the altar are partakers with the altar” (1 Cor. 9:13). “We have an altar, whereof they [all other people] have no right to eat” because we “serve **the Tabernacle**” (Heb. 13:10). Because “Christ our Passover is sacrificed for us” (1 Cor. 5:7), from this altar we do “eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood” (Jn. 6:53, Matt. 26:26-29), and by interpretation, Christ said, “it is the Spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: **the words** that I speak unto you, they are **Spirit**, and they are **Life**” (Jn. 6:63)! *The holy altar* which **the New Testament Priesthood** does continually attend to and eats from, this is the altar which bears upon it the broken *Body* and shed *blood* of the Lord Jesus, and we eat from it and obtain Life (Ezek. 42:13-14), which means by interpretation, we hear the preaching of the Word of God and we eat it (1 Cor. 1:21, Rom. 10:14, Col. 1:28-29, Eph. 4:11-12, 5:26, Ezek. 2:8-3:4), for the “words” that Christ speaks are “Spirit” and “Life” (Jn. 6:63, 2 Cor. 5:18-20, 1 Pet. 4:11, 1 Thess. 4:8, Jn. 13:20, Lk. 10:16, Matt. 10:40, 1 Jn. 4:5-6), they are “the words of Eternal Life” (Jn. 6:68), thus whosoever hears these words and believes in them has Eternal Life (Jn. 6:64)!

It is not that we are seeking an earthly house or physical habitation so as to perform these Priestly duties. No, our gathering together *is* our **House**. Our gathering together as *true, regenerated, God-ordained Priests* is our **House, Temple, and Habitation, wherever it is** (Matt. 18:20, 2 Cor. 6:14-7:1). Even so, my reader, the Lord – Himself – must become “**thy Habitation**” (Ps. 91:9-10). The hour *was* coming, which *now is*, when the people of God no longer worship at a certain place, a certain “mountain”, nor “at Jerusalem” (Jn. 4:21), but the Man Jesus Christ, “He shall be for **a Sanctuary**” (Isa. 8:14). He said again, “yet will I be to them as **a little Sanctuary**” (Ezek. 11:16)... and how? Jesus Christ has become “the chief corner stone” (Eph. 2:20) for **the New Testament Sanctuary**, and those persons who assemble together within this “**Spiritual House**” are the “**Holy Priesthood**”, who also are “**as lively stones**” “framed together” (see Eph. 2:19-22, 1 Pet. 2:4-5, Ps. 118:19-24, Isa. 8:13-22). Therefore, **the New Testament Priesthood** attends to and ministers within **the House of God**, which is, *spiritually and literally*, “the assembling of ourselves together” (Heb. 10:25, Matt. 18:20), and when we gather together we are coming to the Lord, who said, “I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people” (2 Cor. 6:16). In this context it is written to the New Testament

Priesthood: “To whom coming, *as unto a Living Stone*, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious, ye also, *as lively stones*, are built up **a Spiritual House, an Holy Priesthood**, to offer up *spiritual sacrifices*, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ” (1 Pet. 2:4-5). Unto Christ they come, for He is among them, and when gathered together they do “offer *the sacrifice* of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips giving thanks to His name. But to do good and to communicate forget not: for with such *sacrifices* God is well pleased” (Heb. 13:15-16).

Yes! Here they “worship the LORD in the beauty of holiness” (Ps. 29:2, 96:9), but who are all these other people who have invaded the ministry of God’s **Holy Priesthood**? Who are all these people who are, “in word or deed”, outside of “the Name of the Lord Jesus” (Col. 3:14-17), and yet, they are singing psalms and hymns? They are singing, but they are not “spiritual songs”, for they are sung without “grace in [their] hearts to the Lord” (Col. 4:14-17)! Who are all these men and women who have invaded the Priesthood to speak “psalms and hymns”, but they are not “spiritual songs” (Eph. 5:19-20)? Who are these persons that are giving “thanks always for all things unto God and the Father”, but they are not “in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ” (Eph. 5:19-20)? They are offering sacrifices, yes... but with their sacrifices God is not well pleased! Their sacrifices are unacceptable because they are not “*spiritual sacrifices*” (1 Pet. 2:4-5)! They are in the assembly of **the Priesthood**, yes, but they are **defiling** the “**Spiritual House**” ...and why? They, “having not the Spirit” (Jude 19), are **unspiritual** and **unholy**, therefore they are disqualified for any Priestly service to God and man – their presence is an invasion into the “**Holy Priesthood**” (1 Peter 2:4-5)! They have taken up censer and burnt incense, yes, but the odor of their prayers is **foul, unholy, and unacceptable** to God! My reader, this is because they are not saints!

Acceptable incense is offered by the “**Holy Priesthood**” alone because they are the persons who pray in the Name and Person of Jesus Christ, “the prayers of **saints**” (Rev. 5:8)! It is written of old, “Even **them** will I bring to **My Holy Mountain**, and make them joyful in **My House of Prayer**: their **burnt offerings** and **their sacrifices** shall be **accepted** upon Mine **altar**; for **Mine House** shall be called an **House of Prayer** for *all people*” (Isaiah 56:7). Foreshadowing this great climax of the ages, it was written, “Let my prayer be set forth before thee as **incense**; and the lifting up of my hands as **the evening sacrifice**” (Psalms 141:2). Hallelujah! “And **the smoke of the incense**, which came with **the prayers of the saints**, ascended up before God out of the angel’s hand” (Rev. 8:4). Amen! Thus, Jesus Christ said: “it is written, My House shall be called **the House of Prayer**” (Matt. 21:13)! But who are all these **unregenerate persons**, these “**strangers**”, these persons who are “without God in the world” (Eph. 2:12-13) ...yet they have come “**nigh**” to “**the Household of God**” to offer incense (Eph. 2:14-19)!? They have boldly drawn near (Heb. 10:22, Titus 3:5), but **without ceremonial qualification**! They have boldly drawn near as if they have “access by one Spirit unto the Father” (Eph. 2:18), but they are yet, even still, without the Spirit of God, therefore they are still “**strangers and foreigners**” (Eph. 2:18-19). They are not “**fellowcitizens** with the **saints**, and of **the Household of God**”, namely because they are not saints (Eph. 2:19)! I say again, who are these strangers who have invaded the house of God, who have offered “strange fire” (Lev. 10:1-2)? Alas, they are strong-willed, high-handed sinners, like Uzziah, lifting themselves up beyond their measure, “for he transgressed against the LORD his God and went into **the Temple** of the LORD to burn incense upon the altar of incense” (2 Chron. 26:16). Even so, “It appertaineth not unto thee, [oh unregenerate men!], to burn incense unto the LORD, but to **the Priests** the sons of [Christ], that are **consecrated** to burn incense: **GO OUT** of **the Sanctuary**; for thou hast trespassed; neither shall it be for thine honour from the LORD God” (2 Chron. 26:18)! Oh unregenerate man, will you listen to me? Beware lest it happen to you what happened to Uzziah when he, being reproved, was struck with leprosy in the forehead (2 Chron. 26:16-21)! As Uzziah was opposed by the fourscore Priests, even so I oppose you, oh man! Hear me, **the Priesthood** does not belong to you! Will you hear me? Or will you become “utterly unclean” like Uzziah with a plague in your head? Think of it! Everlastingly rending your clothes and crying aloud: “U-N-C-L-E-A-N, U-N-C-L-E-A-N” (Lev. 13:43-46)! And like Uzziah you are, irreversibly till death, “**cut off** from **the House of the LORD**” (2 Chron. 26:21)! Before continuing, my reader, please pause and read Numbers chapters 16 & 17 very carefully.

“**The censers** of these **sinners** against their own souls” – Numbers 16:38

In the days of Moses and Aaron certain men invaded into the Aaronic Priesthood, and it was written, “there came out a fire from the LORD, and consumed the two hundred and fifty men **that offered incense**” (Num. 16:35). These were

those of the congregation that **offered incense** because they wanted to be a part of the Priesthood. What was their crime? It is the shadow of the NT crime which is flagrant and awful, committed every Sunday, because unregenerate men *attend* and *minister* within the Church of God, performing Christian services which are in New Testament reality: **Priestly sacrifices** (Heb. 13:15-16, Php. 2:17, 1 Peter 2:5) and **incense offerings** (Rev. 5:8, 8:3-4). God says to the **unregenerate** Church goers, “seek ye **the Priesthood** also” (Numbers 16:10)? The incense of the Priests was an OT institution (Exodus 30:7-9, 34-38, Lev. 16:11-13) which has become a NT Christian reality. As for other priestly ministry in the offering of sacrifices, these are **spiritual sacrifices** which only “**spiritual men**” (1 Cor. 2) can accomplish, as it is written in 1 Peter 2:5. Even as David prayed “Let my prayer be set forth before Thee **as incense**; and the lifting up of my hands as **the evening sacrifice**” (Psalm 141:2). These are the prayers of the righteous and the “**holy hands**” of the saints (1 Tim. 2:8). On the contrary, when wicked and unregenerate men do likewise they do “Christian Activities” without a “broken and a contrite heart” (Ps. 51:17), which is unacceptable in the sight of God. King David ministered before God with this recognition, saying, “O Lord, open Thou my lips; and my mouth shall shew forth Thy praise. For Thou desirest not sacrifice; else would I give it: Thou delightest not in burnt offering. The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, Thou wilt not despise” (Psalm 51:15-17). Likewise, Solomon said, “the sacrifice of **the wicked** is an abomination to the LORD: but the prayer of **the upright** is His delight” (Prov. 15:8). The sacrifice of an unregenerate, wicked, professing Christian is an abomination to the Lord, God says, “forasmuch as this people draw near Me with their mouth, and with their lips do honour me, but have removed their heart far from Me, and their fear toward Me is taught by the precept of men” (Isaiah 29:13). “The LORD is far from the wicked: but He heareth the prayer of the righteous” (Prov. 15:29), and, therefore did the writer of Hebrews affirm on behalf of Christians of the Gentile Church Age, “we have an altar, whereof [the world has] no right to eat which serve **the Tabernacle**” (Heb. 13:10).

The Church of God is “called **The House of Prayer**,” but “he that turneth his ear from hearing the Law, even his prayer shall be abomination” (Prov. 28:9). Thus Christians are they which are “the called” of God, not as these men in Numbers 16! Christians are the saints of God, the holy ones, “having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of saints” (speaking of the elders in heaven, but applicable for NT Priests - Rev. 5:8). In a sense we do offer “much incense” to the angel of heaven, “that he should offer it with the prayers of all saints upon the golden altar which was before the throne. And the smoke of the incense, which came with the prayers of the saints, ascended up before God out of the angel’s hand” (Rev. 8:3-4). You see, these men of Numbers 16 invaded **the Priesthood** that was not theirs, offered an abominable incense to God, even as Nadab and Abihu who offered “strange fire” before the Lord and were consumed by fire (Lev. 10:1-4). God delighted in the incense offered by Aaron (Num. 16:45-49), but He consumed all others who offered an abominable, inordinate, strange incense. Unregenerate professing Christians, like Korah and all his company, God says to you: “ye take too much upon you” (Num. 16:7)! Learn the lesson now, and don’t test God; you must fear God and know that “the man whom the LORD doth choose, he shall be holy” and all others will be consumed for their usurpation of God-ordained Priestly services, incense offerings, and sacrifices (Num. 16:7).

My reader, we live in an hour when the Lord threatens all evil, defiled congregations saying: “**separate yourselves** from among this congregation, that I may consume them in a moment” (Num. 16:21). Now is the hour of the gospel call! It announces that God will receive us - **BUT WE MUST COME OUT!** The NT call to “**come out** from among them” (2 Cor. 6:17) is spoken with the same urgency as the calling of old, for God is ready to “consume them in a moment” that are without (Num. 16:21). “And he spake unto the congregation, saying, **Depart, I pray you, from the tents of these wicked men, and TOUCH nothing of theirs, lest ye be consumed in all their sins.**” Yes, my reader, because “them that are without God judgeth” (1 Cor. 5:13), “wherefore **put away** from among yourselves that **wicked person**” (1 Cor. 5). “**SO THEY GAT UP** from the tabernacle of Korah, Dathan, and Abiram, on every side: and Dathan and Abiram came out, and stood in the door of their tents, and their wives, and their sons, and their little children.....the ground clave asunder that was under them: and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed them up, and their houses, and all the men that appertained unto Korah, and all their goods. They, and all that appertained to them, went down alive into the pit, and the earth closed upon them: and they perished from among the congregation. And all Israel that were round

about them fled at the cry of them: for they said, lest the earth swallow us up also. And there came out a fire from the LORD, and consumed the two hundred and fifty men **that offered incense**" (Numbers 16:26-27, 31-35).

God now says "**come out** from among them" (2 Cor. 6:17) with the same urgency as He said through Moses "**depart**, I pray you, from the tents of these **wicked men**" (Num. 16:26) ...and why? What urgency? They are all an "**UNCLEAN THING**" (2 Cor. 6:17) and the wrath of God is coming upon them, yea, "the wrath of God abideth on [them]" (Jn. 3:36), therefore God commands us today that we "**TOUCH NOT** the unclean thing" just as Moses said to these disqualified and rejected Priests, "**TOUCH NOTHING** of theirs" (Num. 16:26)! Unless they come out from among these men and "touch nothing of theirs", Moses said they would "be consumed in all their sins" (Note: uncleanness, like leaven, spreads its defiling touch whithersoever the unclean body goes, therefore it is written "a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump" -1 Cor. 5:6, Gal. 5:9)! These worldlings, these Church-intruders, these Priesthood-invaders, remember what consuming fire is determined for them! "The day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up" (2 Peter 3:10)! Remember how, of old, "there came out a fire from the LORD" (Num. 16:35), and remember how now, just ahead, what consuming fire shall quickly come upon them, and that without remedy (Num. 16:35)! My reader, seeing that the flaming and annihilating wrath of God is falling upon all flesh, the world, and worldlings, let us respond therefore to the gospel call, "**come out** from among them" (2 Cor. 6:17), and let us assemble acceptably before God! "Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, **what manner of persons** ought ye to be **in all holy conversation and godliness**" (2 Peter 3:10-11)! Why was Numbers Ch. 16-17 written? "Now all these things happened unto them *for ensamples*: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come" (1 Cor. 10:11). Therefore, let it be understood by us that these things were written "to be a memorial unto the children of Israel, that **no stranger**, which is not of the seed of [Christ], **come near to offer incense before the LORD**; that he be not as Korah, and as his company: as the LORD said to him by the hand of Moses" (Num. 16:40)!

Shockingly, men don't believe the NT God sets His face against anyone, and certainly not those who have deigned to step foot into **the Sanctuary** of God Almighty! Most "Christians" are so busy loving themselves, naturally, they think God loves them (Ps. 10:3-6). Most "Christians" identify love from others when they are flattered (Dan. 11:21, 32, Ps. 5:9, 78:36, Mal. 2:17), and they feel "strong in faith" when built-up in SELF-esteem. Shockingly, God teaches us to DENY self, while these men teach its esteem. These "Christians" do lip-service to Christ by adoring His sacrifice, but they live a life of self-satisfaction and no-sacrifice (1 Cor. 4:8-10, 3:18). To them... self is "god". They don't imagine God is of a different mentality or personality than themselves. To what end? My reader, because of all this they feel that the preaching of God's love – the Cross – is a message of hate (1 Cor. 1:18, Jn. 3:19, 7:7)! They can't comprehend how a message of self-death is the means by which fallen humanity obtains everlasting life, and it is because they don't have a biblical comprehension of themselves (Rom. 7:24, Gal. 2:20, Ezek. 18:4). If they knew themselves they would agree with God – they would hate themselves (Ps. 5:5, Lk. 14:26) – and in so doing, *freedom* from SELF would be, to them, a message of amazing grace, astounding mercy, and unfathomable love; *freedom* from SELF would be an exceedingly good announcement, thus the gospel, which is "good news", would be good news indeed (Jn. 8:34-36)!

The New Testament

"For he that will **love life**, and **see good days**, let him refrain his tongue from evil, and his lips that they speak no guile: Let him eschew evil, and do good; let him seek peace, and ensue it. For the eyes of the Lord are over the righteous, and his ears are open unto their prayers: but **the face of the Lord is against them that do evil**. And who is he that will **harm you**, if ye be followers of that which is *good*?" -1 Peter 3:10-13

"If any man **defile** the Temple of God, **him shall God destroy**; for the Temple of God is **holy**, which Temple ye are." – 1 Corinthians 3:17

The Old Testament

"Come, ye children, hearken unto me: I will teach you the fear of the LORD. What man is he that **desireth life**, and **loveth many days**, that he may see *good*? Keep thy tongue from evil, and thy lips from speaking guile. Depart from evil, and do good; seek peace, and pursue it. The eyes of the LORD are upon the righteous, and his ears are open unto their cry. **The face of the LORD is against them that do evil, to cut off the remembrance of them from the earth.**" - Psalms 34:11-16

"**I will set my face against that man, and will cut him off from among his people.**" – Lev. 20:3

With the rules of **the House of God** continuously defied by the *entrance* and *attendance* of unconverted men, the saints, who are **ceremonially qualified** to attend, lose sight of the hallowed and fearful regulations which are natural to their regenerated nature. The people of God become leavened by the malice, wickedness, and insincerity of the mixed multitude because (1 Cor. 5:6-8), the pursuit of unity with persons who are at spiritual enmity wares down the moral sensitivity of the holy people. It blinds them! Before long, the grave communion that the saints once had with God turns into communities of men who are comfortable in their sin. God, who is of sin-killing HOLINESS, whose power is possessive and awe-striking... fades from memory. The sinners, who are self-conscious and easily offended, progressively succeed to intimidate the saints until the saints become political, civilized, respectable, lukewarm, and relaxed. The saints, out-numbered by sinners, learn to consider them, conform to them, and satisfy them, but in so doing they unlearn, walk in disconformity to, and dissatisfy God! In such a “Church” the people become more aware of men than God, thus all their goals and ideologies are guided by what they are consciously sensitive to! The “Church” is more inviting to sinners than it is to God! It has become a “House of Men” instead of a “House of God” – a “House” that is abandoned by God’s hallowed, separated, and sin-sensitive Presence! Suddenly now, in this generation, newly converted sinners who have been freshly plucked from the depths of hell... they stumble into a light-show Sanctuary which showcases the twinkling-eyes and Sunday-smiles of handsome men and beautiful women! What an abomination! What deplorable blasphemy! If these new converts did abide at home for a little while... I mean, long enough to get some scripture into their heart, they would be appalled at the unbiblical organism that this country and culture calls, “the Church”. These “Christian Churches”, GOD KNOWS, do logically, scientifically, and surgically remove scripture from the heart! They rob the second-born men of their righteousness! The saints, long wearied by contentious sinners, are Delilah-vexed into submission. Righteous men fall down before wicked men! Be astonished oh heavens at this! The Church which was, of old, a pure spring of water...

*She was a fountain for cleansing which was crystal and strong!
She carried into Everlasting Life as many to Her did throng!*

*But now She is “a troubled fountain and a corrupt spring”
A fountainhead of healing which does poison everything!*

*Therefore the righteous are made to groan and C-R-Y!
Where, oh where, is the Church for which Jesus D-I-ED!?*

“A righteous man
falling down before **the wicked**
is as a **troubled fountain**,
and a **corrupt spring**.”
– Proverbs 25:26

With the saints now relaxed the sinners feel they can relate, they feel that this isn’t a God they hate. With the sinners feeling respected, the true God is disrespected! – saintly righteousness is rejected! – and the Christians who were of old, world-offenders, are now by all men accepted! Such men have become “Christians” without Christ (1 Jn. 1:3)! They gather in “Houses” without Light (1 Jn. 1:5-7)! Therefore the blessedness and woefulness of God’s face, for or against men, killing and making alive, is a reality that, suddenly, ceased to exist in the New Covenant – a reality that, shockingly, men think absurd! But, oh! If only they knew all the NT typological applications of these ceremonial qualifications which regulated the Old Testament people of God, rules whereby they did *live* or *die* in God’s presence, then men would be silenced into holy terror!

As the Old Testament House of God was esteemed as holy, the people understood that they had to be **ceremonially prepared** to *enter* therein, and because death-penalties threatened all transgressors of holy order, attending the House of God was a grave consideration! All **ceremonial qualifications** and **preparations** which are demanded of God were fulfilled by Christ, and thus they are imputed into those who are in Christ, but do we approach **the House of God** with the same grave consideration that all others who are **not ceremonially prepared** to *attend the House of God* are legally forbidden entrance? Furthermore, Christians who are complete in and ceremonially perfect by their union with Christ can, contrary to popular opinion, fall from the salvific merits of this sacred union because, at present, they have fallen from saving faith and repentance, which in turn means they are walking in the flesh instead of the Spirit, and thus they become ceremonially unprotected by Christ, in legal danger of the judgments which will come upon those outside of Christ, and therefore at present, they are **ceremonially unprepared** to enter **the House of God**.

The Stones of God's Temple

“The Temple of God is holy, which Temple ye are” – 1 Corinthians 3:17

Are you a congregant of the Church-Bride and Christ-Priesthood which is “a blemish” (Lev. 21:18, Eph. 5:27, 2 Pet. 2:13), so that you, with your attendance *within* the Church congregation, defile and make unclean the whole gathering (Lev. 21:23, 22:3, 2 Cor. 6:16-7:1, 1 Cor. 3:17)? Or are you “a blind” Priest (Lev. 21:18, Rev. 3:17) who knows no sacrifice (Php. 2:17, 2 Cor. 4:10-12), who is treacherously satisfied with Divinely-rejected sacrifices (Lev. 22:21, Rom. 12:1-2, 15:15-19)? Do you know what these scriptures mean? To be clear, I’m asking how you have become a Levite and not learned “the good knowledge of the LORD” (2 Chron. 30:22)? How is it that you have not known that a “Spiritual House” (1 Pet. 2:4-5) necessitates “spiritual men” (Rom. 8:5-14, 1 Cor. 2:11-16, Gal. 6:1), a “Heavenly” House (Heb. 8:1-5, 9:11, 23-24, 10:1) necessitates “heavenly” men (Heb. 3:1, 6:4, Php. 3:20), so also in the very same way, a man cannot serve in the House of God unless he *becomes* the House (Heb. 3:6, 1 Cor. 3:9, 16, 6:19-20, 1 Pet. 2:4-5, Eph. 2:19-22).

“Wherefore remember, that ye being in time past Gentiles in the flesh, who are called Uncircumcision by that which is called the Circumcision in the flesh made by hands; That at that time ye were without Christ, being aliens from the commonwealth of Israel, and strangers from the covenants of promise, having no hope, and without God in the world: But now in Christ Jesus ye who sometimes were **far off** are **made nigh by the blood of Christ**. For he is our peace, who hath made both **one**, and hath broken down the middle wall of partition between us; Having abolished in his flesh the enmity, even the Law of commandments contained in ordinances; for to make in himself of twain **one new man**, so making peace; And that he might reconcile both unto God in one body by the cross, having slain the enmity thereby: And came and preached peace to you which were afar off, and to them that were nigh. **For through him we both have access by one Spirit unto the Father**. Now therefore ye are no more **strangers** and **foreigners**, but **fellowcitizens with the saints**, and of **the household of God**; And are built upon the foundation of the apostles and prophets, Jesus Christ himself being **the chief corner stone**; In whom all **the building** fitly framed together groweth unto **an holy Temple in the Lord**: In whom **ye also are builded together** for an **habitation of God through the Spirit**.” - Ephesians 2:11-22

“To whom coming, as unto a **Living Stone**, disallowed indeed of men, but **chosen of God**, and **precious**, Ye also, as **lively stones**, are built up a **Spiritual House, an holy Priesthood**, to offer up **spiritual sacrifices, acceptable** to God by Jesus Christ. Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a **chief corner stone, elect, precious**: and he that believeth on him shall not be confounded.” - 1 Peter 2:4-6

If you are going to serve in **the Sanctuary** of heaven’s King, you must be **cleansed** with the **cleansing** that purified **the heavenly Sanctuary** and heavenly things – **the blood of Christ** (see Heb. 8:1-5, 9:11-28, Eph. 2:11-20) – thus your ministry exists in God’s **earthly Sanctuary** because you are positioned within Christ, the High Priest, who ministers in the **heavenly Sanctuary**. If you are truly saved, then it can be said of you, twofold: because Jesus of Nazareth is a King, and this makes you a co-heir, so also Christ is a High Priest, and you, being born into His Priesthood, are made a Priest unto God through Him. Likewise, and, yet again, Christ is the “Living” and “Chief Corner Stone”, therefore the Lord Jesus is the place “in Whom all the Building fitly framed together groweth unto **an Holy Temple** in the Lord: In Whom ye also are builded together for **an Habitation of God through the Spirit**” (Eph. 2:20-21). This House exists “through the Spirit”, which by essence is a **Holy Spirit**, and those who are in the Spirit of God are all-together made one “**Holy Temple in the Lord**” (Eph. 2:21). Such stones (God’s people) which are built together with the “**Living Stone**” – Jesus Christ – must also be, like Him, “**chosen of God**”, “**elect**”, and “**precious**”, therefore as He is “**a Living Stone**”, they are “**lively stones**” (1 Pet. 2:4-8). Now consider this, my reader: What is *choice* about the “**chosen**” stones of God’s Temple? What warrants the *election* of these “**elect**” objects? How is it that these men are called “**precious stones**” by God? What is the *preciousness* of these “**precious stones**”? For scriptural answers, the following paragraphs which are numerically ordered below will be enlarged upon in the subsequent paragraphs:

- 1) The people are elect for **honorable, glorious, and everlasting** purposes. *This means that the honor and glory of these persons is everlasting like as gold, silver, and precious stones out-last and abide through the furnace of fire. The honor and glory of these persons cannot be destroyed like the glory and honor of wood, hay, stubble, and earth is annihilated by fire. When casting a heap of objects into the furnace, look for what out-lasts the destructive flames – these objects are precious! By such a burning you may renew the brilliant image of such objects, and thus refine them into a purer expression of what was always there, but the essence of what was honorable was not reduced. The essence of what is honorable about these objects is unalterable, unchangeable, and indestructible, and when put to the flames it is refined and purified, but never reduced!*
- 2) These honorable and glorious purposes are manifest by the indwelling of an **honorable and glorious PERSON – Jesus Christ**. *What is honorable, glorious, and everlasting about these men is, the Person who possess them.*
- 3) This indwelling Person is, in essence, “**incorruption**”, “**glory**”, “**power**”, “**spiritual**”, and “**heavenly**”. He is all the qualities which are characteristic of the undying, imperishable, God-made Kingdom which shall be established at the consummation of all things. In this way, the Kingdom of Heaven **within men right now** is exactly like the worldwide Kingdom of Heaven which is *to come*. The consummation of the Kingdom of God is when the **incorruptible, glorious, powerful, spiritual, and heavenly** essence which has indwelt the saints does, in the same way, transform, reform, and fill all the world with Itself. *Therefore, by taking note of what objects are used to build the Kingdom of God in its consummated estate, we can understand that such objects are, both then and now, the metaphorical essence of what is indestructible, unchanging, and everlasting.*
- 4) The **gold, silver, and precious stones** which we see on earth *right now* – “which Temple ye are” (1 Cor. 3:17) – do foreshadow the undying, imperishable, other-worldly, and heavenly **gold, silver, and precious stones** which will be used to build the everlasting Jerusalem which is *to come*.
- 5) When the Kingdom of God which is upon the earth does not represent the consummation of all things which exists in heaven, the Lord baptizes the people of God with fire. When that which is, by essence, “incorruption”, “glory”, “power”, “spiritual”, and “heavenly” (**gold, silver, and precious stones**), and yet it is becoming corrupt, profane, overpowered, spiritually defeated, and earthly, this is when the stones of the Temple of God are being defiled from their *first beginning* – and that defilement is by the vile body of death which still exists, which is yet without redemption, thus the man’s essence (the old man) should be violently and mercilessly killed every day (Rom. 8:13)! The everyday duty of saints to mortify their bodies is, just like, the everyday duty for Priests to make sure the Temple of God is built with and compacted by objects that are biblically acceptable – namely, that it is purged from the defilements of the earth such as **wood, hay, stubble, and earthly-objects**. The purging of these objects from the Temple is a purging of our **earthly members** from ourselves, individually speaking (Col. 3:5, Rom. 8:13, Gal. 5:24), and it is a purging of our **earthly members** from our corporate-self which is the Church – the body of Christ – for we are *one man, one body, one Building, and one Temple* in the Lord (Matt. 18:1-20, 1 Cor. 3:17, 2 Tim. 2:19-22, 1 Cor. 10:7, 12:12, Rom. 12:5, Eph. 1:23, 2:15, 3:6, 4:12-13, Col. 2:19, 3:15).
- 6) What is done worldwide in the Last Days is a consummating fulfillment of what is done to the Church all throughout their days (this is God’s *end-time judgment* and *beginning judgment*). In the end, God will shake everything that can be shaken so that, only those objects that are sustained by unshakable powers do remain. In the end, God will burn heaven and earth with smelting and destroying fires (2 Thess. 1:6-10, 2 Pet. 3:4-14) ...but for the Church which exists right now, this is done *all throughout their days* - God baptizes and burns them, and He immerses them in *judgments of fire* so that, only those objects which *abide the fire* do remain as stones of the Temple of God.

As we have seen in the Old Testament, formerly addressed, there was a steep and exasperating *Code of the Priesthood*, without which no man could stand before God and LIVE. With exasperating meticulousness, the Priests were ceremonially prepared and selected, and in peculiar garments they were gloriously arrayed. Parallel and synonymous to

this, but in another branch of biblical typology, *the materials of the House of God* were valuable, costly, laboriously obtained, brilliantly manufactured, and awesome to behold. The heathen world did hold their breath when hearing of it. The materials used, like the garments of the Priests, were gloriously arrayed! For example, the “vessels for the House of the LORD”, whether “to minister” or “to offer”, were “vessels of **gold and silver**” (2 Chron. 24:14). Such vessels as these, men *take pleasure* in. Their great cost, illuminating colors, imperishable qualities, and all-around beauty grips their mind with human-adoration. Similar to this, and yet with vast differences, the inspired writers wrote: “Thy servants take **pleasure in her stones**, and **favour the dust** thereof” (Ps. 102:14). In context, the inspired text brings in view an exemplary “**pleasure**” and “**favour**” found in the people of God, but this pleasure was NOT an enjoyment in the **gold, silver, and precious stones** for the sake of *the objects themselves*. No, my reader. It was not so much *the object* that they favored but the sanctifying power of *God’s presence* which hallowed the object, is what they favored. This glorious, uncreated, incomprehensible, invaluable, imperishable Presence – *God’s presence!* – this is what sanctified the objects and materials of the Temple; for this reason, the “stones” and “dust” were sacred and invaluable (see Matt. 23:16-17)!

In Psalm 102:14, God is not speaking about, concerned with, and carried away with human-like emotion over these carnal things, is He? God, who inhabits the lofty and undiscoverable regions of heaven’s indestructible beauty, is not impressed and enthusiastic over *earthly objects*... not even the objects which are notable to humanity because of money, color, indestructible quality, and beauty. With certainty, God does not care for these things. For what purpose was Psalm 102:14 written? My reader, for the same reason that God wrote about oxen! Do you remember how the inspired apostle wrote, “Doth God take *care* for oxen” (1 Cor. 9:9)? Even so it can be said, “Doth God *care* for **gold, silver, and precious stones**?” “Or saith He it altogether for our sakes? For our sakes, no doubt, this is written” (1 Cor. 9:10). Yes, my reader, for our sakes; that we might learn His heart toward His people, the persons he calls His sons and daughters. God has chosen *them* - **His people** - as a builder chooses select and precious stones to build with, but my reader this building is “GOD’S Building” (1 Cor. 3:9)! God is, **with them**, building an invaluable, beautifully unfathomable, everlastingly imperishable House for Himself!

- 1) The people are elect for **honorable, glorious, and everlasting** purposes. *This means that the honor and glory of these persons is everlasting like as gold, silver, and precious stones out-last and abide through the furnace of fire. The honor and glory of these persons cannot be destroyed like the glory and honor of wood, hay, stubble, and earth is annihilated by fire. When casting a heap of objects into the furnace, look for what out-lasts the destructive flames – these objects are precious! By such a burning you may renew the brilliant image of such objects, and thus refine them into a purer expression of what was always there, but the essence of what was honorable was not reduced. The essence of what is honorable about these objects is unalterable, unchangeable, and indestructible, and when put to the flames it is refined and purified, but never reduced!*

When God speaks of His *choice* and *redeemed people*, my reader, He uses *choice words*. Words like, “The **precious sons** of Zion, **comparable to fine gold**” (Lam. 4:2)! God expresses His affection in terms which are humanly understandable. The meaning is clear, God thinks of them with *precious thoughts*, values them as *precious objects*, and fashions them for Divinely *significant purposes* – and what greater purpose is there but that we, fallen humanity, might be a **Habitation for His Presence** (Eph. 2:22)!? To men, **gold, silver, and precious stones** are objects fit for holy, honorable, and dignified purposes, and in the very same way God has chosen a people who are to God, “**as gold and silver**” (Mal. 3:3). With the same meaning it is written in another place that, each person of the chosen people of God are, individually, a “**vessel unto honour**” (Rom. 9:21). This means that, shockingly, God created these people for purposes of *honor*. Like as a Potter forms a vessel of clay for a preplanned purpose, God created humans for *honor*...a predestined *honor*. Yes, my reader, they were predestined to the honor of becoming His redeemed people. According to God, these *vessels of honor* are created so that He might shower upon them “**the riches of His glory**”. This is so that the heathen, looking on, might be amazed at their *honor*. The people of God do, literally, represent God’s honor. The honor poured out upon these vessels is undeserved, therefore as much as they are **vessels of honor**, they are “**vessels of mercy**”. Therefore what the world beholds is, **the honor of blood-bought mercy!** These people exist so that “He might make known **the riches of His glory on the vessels of mercy**” (Rom. 9:23)! Staggeringly, He prepared them for this glory (Rom. 9:23)! “To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for *glory* and *honour* and *immortality*, and *eternal life*” (Rom. 2:7).

- 2) These honorable and glorious purposes are manifest by the indwelling of an **honorable** and **glorious PERSON – Jesus Christ**. *What is honorable, glorious, and everlasting about these men is the Person who possesses them.*

When God *chooses* a human being for this predestinated course of existence, the course of the man's depravity is interrupted by irresistible grace. This irresistible grace seizes the *God-hating man*... and, behold, he is a *God-loving man*! God's choice of this human is, in this way, witnessed by all who watched on. Suddenly the man was subdued by God with a converting, transforming, translating, and regenerating GRACE, praise the Lord! And this is a grace that the onlookers cannot deny! As men watched on they saw "**old things are passed away; BEHOLD, all things are become new**" (2 Cor. 5:17)! The man who groped in the blindness of darkness was illuminated with light and brightness! The Breath of God Almighty did blow upon the man who was by nature, foul and odious, as a dead body is worm-eaten and rotten, and LOOK! Look how suddenly the dead man arose, went forth, and followed the Lamb! This man, gloriously changed, has a heaven-created "**new man**" (Col. 3:10), and yet his physical body has remained the same. The man does indeed have "**newness of life**" (Rom. 6:4), but this life came through the reformation of his "**inner man**" by the **indwelling of Christ** (Eph. 3:16-17). Therefore what is honorable, glorious, and everlasting about these men is the Person who possess them.

- 3) This indwelling Person is, in essence, "**incorruption**", "**glory**", "**power**", "**spiritual**", and "**heavenly**". He is all the qualities which are characteristic of the undying, imperishable, God-made Kingdom which shall be established at the consummation of all things. In this way, the Kingdom of Heaven **within men right now** is exactly like the worldwide Kingdom of Heaven which is to come. The consummation of the Kingdom of God is when the **incorruptible, glorious, powerful, spiritual, and heavenly** essence which has indwelt the saints does, in the same way, transform, reform, and fill all the world with Itself. *Therefore, by taking note of what objects are used to build the Kingdom of God in its consummated estate, we can understand that such objects are, both then and now, the metaphorical essence of what is indestructible, unchanging, and everlasting.*

The "outward man" or "the body", still unchanged, contains the same spiritual qualities as the formerly depraved and God-hating man, therefore the redeemed people of the Lord contain the coexistence of a *natural/carnal/earthly man* and a *spiritual/body/heavenly man* (Rom. 8:5-10, 1 Cor. 2:14-16), and "though our **outward man** perish, yet the **inward man** is renewed day by day" (2 Cor. 4:16). Do you see what this means? As the days pass, the **outward man** is *perishing*...yea, because it is a *perishable man*. But look, the **spiritual man** is an *everlasting man*! The **inward man** is not like the **outward man**, the text states – look at him! – the days pass by and the **inward man** is not *increasingly dying*, but on the contrary he is *increasingly living*! The outward man is our carnal and natural body, and it, left unchanged by the operation of conversion, is still called a "**vile body**" of "**death**" (Php. 3:21, Rom. 7:24). It is called an "**earthly house**" and "**tabernacle**" which is destined to be "**dissolved**", but the resurrected body is called a "**glorious body**", "**a building of God**, an **house**, not made with hands, **eternal in the heavens**" (2 Cor. 5:1). The resurrection of the inner man is a foretaste of the resurrection of the whole man. We have a foretaste of what it will be like when "mortality" is "swallowed up of Life" at the final and glorious resurrection of our physical bodies, namely because, our inward man has already been resurrected by these eternal, all-glorious, and life-giving powers! Oh my reader, hear the cry of redeemed humanity! We desire that the operation of salvation which performed our *inward regeneration*, would break forth into *outward* and *earth-wide regeneration*. We desire that the *regenerating powers* would expand beyond the confinements of our mortal bodies, and thus *regenerate the world*. This is when the seed of salvation breaks forth from the confinements of its outer-body and springs forth into LIFE – and this seed is Christ (see 1 Cor. 15:35-50).

Within us, my reader, therein dwells Christ. Like a seed sown into the earth, Christ was purposefully put within us. This implantation was so that He might break forth from our earthly-bodies and dominate the world with Himself! Even so, the seed that is planted into the earth does break forth from its outer-body and spring forth from the earth! Therefore it is written that our "natural body" – the body which confines the Kingdom of God within us – is called a body of "corruption", "dishonour", "weakness", simply because it is "earthly", and it will be shed like a seed sheds its outer-body (1 Cor. 15:35-50). The regenerated inner man, which is the life of the seed, will "change our **vile body**" "that it may be fashioned like unto [Christ's] **glorious body**" (Php. 3:21), when it indeed breaks forth. This is the power of the resurrection which, at first, began within us in the **inner man**, and then by the very same powers it transforms the

outward man. This transformed **outward man** has the same qualities of everlasting power which were the essence of the regenerated **inner man**, thus they both are, to God, “incorruption”, “glory”, “power”, “spiritual”, and “heavenly” (1 Cor. 15:42-50). The Spirit of God which indwelt the man – for the purpose of changing the **inner man** – does then transform the **outward man** by giving him “a spiritual body” instead of “a natural body” (1 Cor. 15:44). Therefore it is written, “**flesh and blood** cannot inherit the Kingdom of God; neither do **corruption** inherit **incorruption**” (1 Cor. 15:50).

- 4) The **gold, silver, and precious stones** which we see on earth *right now* – “which Temple ye are” (1 Cor. 3:17) – do foreshadow the undying, imperishable, other-worldly, and heavenly **gold, silver, and precious stones** which will be used to build the everlasting Jerusalem which is *to come*.

The power of God that regenerates the “inner man”, these are “the powers of **the world to come**” (Heb. 6:5). This signifies that, by the same power with which God transformed the **inner man**, God will transform the **earthly man**... and also, shockingly, **the earth itself**. There is coming a day when, not only will *the earthly man* of Christians be “dissolved” (2 Cor. 5:1), but “**the earth** also and the works that are therein shall be burned up” (2 Pet. 3:10)! My reader, “all these things shall be dissolved” (2 Pet. 3:11), not just the earthly body itself! The inward man was regenerated and then the outward man and actual earth follows suit, because inward regeneration is but a foretaste, a kind of first fruits of the power which is to come – a “working whereby [God] is able even to subdue **all things** unto Himself” (Php. 3:21)! This means that this *spiritual man* within Christians is an *everlasting man*, and those who walk in the Spirit of God dwell within an everlasting, invaluable, imperishable, and unshakable Kingdom! My reader, behold this Kingdom in its consummated, final, and everlasting estate:

The Consummation: “And there came unto me one of the seven angels which had the seven vials full of the seven last plagues, and talked with me, saying, Come hither, **I will shew thee the Bride, the Lamb's wife**. And he carried me away in the spirit to a great and high mountain, and shewed me **that Great City, the Holy Jerusalem**, descending out of heaven from God, Having **the glory of God**: and **her light** was like unto **a stone most precious**, even like a **jasper stone**, clear as **crystal**; And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel: On the east three gates; on the north three gates; on the south three gates; and on the west three gates. And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apostles of the Lamb. And he that talked with me had a golden reed to measure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof. And the city lieth foursquare, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he measured the city with the reed, twelve thousand furlongs. The length and the breadth and the height of it are equal. And he measured the wall thereof, an hundred and forty and four cubits, according to the measure of a man, that is, of the angel. And the building of the wall of it was of **jasper**: and the city was **pure gold**, like unto **clear glass**. And the foundations of the wall of the city were garnished with all manner of **precious stones**. The first foundation was **jasper**; the second, **sapphire**; the third, a **chalcedony**; the fourth, an **emerald**; The fifth, **sardonyx**; the sixth, **sardius**; the seventh, **chrysolite**; the eighth, **beryl**; the ninth, a **topaz**; the tenth, a **chrysoprasus**; the eleventh, a **jacinth**; the twelfth, an **amethyst**. And the twelve gates were twelve **pearls**; every several gate was of one **pearl**: and the street of the city was **pure gold**, as it were **transparent glass**. And I saw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it.” - Revelation 21:9-22

The power which formed this “**new man**” inside of fallen men is, by God’s definition, of *imperishable* and *undying* quality. The scripture states, we are “born again” “**not of corruptible** seed, but of **incorruptible**, by the word of God, **which liveth and abideth for ever**. For all flesh is as grass, and all **the glory of man** as the flower of grass. The grass **withereth**, and the flower thereof **falleth away**: But the word of the Lord **endureth for ever**. And this is the word which by the gospel is preached unto you” (1 Peter. 1:23-25). Seeing this, that the word by which we are born again is *imperishable* and *enduring*, so also, my reader, our love for God and one another should be *imperishable* and *enduring* (see 1 Peter 1:22 in context with 23-25). God would have us, “through the Spirit”, “mortify the deeds of the body” – and in this way God says, “ye shall live” (Rom. 8:13). “Ye shall live”, God said, because the *everlasting man* wrestled, overcame, and defeated the *perishable man*! In other words, the *spiritual man* killed the *carnal man*!

We exist as Christians because “we live in the Spirit”, and by this Spirit we are commanded to run, wrestle, and fight – and in so doing we “walk in the Spirit” (Gal. 5:25) – but this walk exists because we have overcome and defeated the forces against which we run, wrestle, and fight. You see, my reader, we were sometimes carnal, earthly, fleshly, and natural men in body and nature, but after conversion we are spiritual, heavenly, holy, honorable, and empowered men in nature, therefore we have no excuse if we continue to “fulfil the lust of the flesh” (Gal. 5:16). Synonymously but with different metaphors, it was written, “For ye were sometimes **darkness**, but now are ye **light in the Lord**: walk as **children of Light**” (Eph. 5:8). The Image of the Person who has become our inward man, He must also become the Image the world sees in our outward man (Rom. 2:4-11, 8:2-4, 29, 13:8, Jas. 1:22-25, 2:20-26) – in fulfillment of this, Christ, who is in us, controls our words, thoughts, and deeds (1 Jn. 2:5-6, 4:17) – this means that through saving faith, Christ in us overpowers, dominates, rules over, and kills the carnal body, whose nature and essence is against God and resistant to His purposes (Rom. 8:5-13, 1 Cor. 9:27).

- 5) When the Kingdom of God which is upon the earth does not represent the consummation of all things which exist in heaven, the Lord baptizes the people of God with fire. When that which is, by essence, “incorruption”, “glory”, “power”, “spiritual”, and “heavenly” (**gold, silver, and precious stones**), and yet it is becoming corrupt, profane, overpowered, spiritually defeated, and earthly, this is when the stones of the Temple of God are being defiled from their *first beginning* – and that defilement is by the vile body of death which still exists, which is yet without redemption, thus the man’s essence (the old man) should be violently and mercilessly killed every day (Rom. 8:13)! The everyday duty of saints to mortify their bodies is, just like, the everyday duty for Priests to make sure the Temple of God is built with and compacted by objects that are biblically acceptable – namely, that it is purged from the defilements of the earth such as **wood, hay, stubble, and earthly-objects**. The purging of these objects from the Temple is a purging of our **earthly members** from ourselves, individually speaking (Col. 3:5, Rom. 8:13, Gal. 5:24), and it is a purging of our **earthly members** from our corporate-self which is the Church – the body of Christ – for we are *one man, one body, one Building, and one Temple* in the Lord (Matt. 18:1-20, 1 Cor. 3:17, 2 Tim. 2:19-22, 1 Cor. 10:7, 12:12, Rom. 12:5, Eph. 1:23, 2:15, 3:6, 4:12-13, Col. 2:19, 3:15).

If in the process of our predestinated course we lose *saving faith*, the gloriousness of God’s grace which once overpowered and killed the flesh is lost. The man that once lived for God, he is overpowered by the outward man until he, like all others, does “live after the flesh” (Rom. 8:13). This means certain death: “Ye shall die” (Rom. 8:13), God said. The man who was once “in Christ”, it mattered how he lived his life! “There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh but after the Spirit” (Rom. 8:1). My reader, how do you walk? If in the process of time, “the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would” (Gal. 5:17), then YOU, my reader, are in a wrestling match for your very eternal life (Rom. 6:14-23)! My reader, hear me – “faith!” – it “is the victory that overcometh the world” (1 John 5:4) – but woe to the man whose faith is weakened from its first beginning! The first beginning of faith is like the first implantation of Christ – the seed is “grounded and settled” – but like an overcome and wrestled-down man, the implantation of God is ungrounded, unsettled, and “moved away”, meaning that, shockingly... saving faith is lost (Col. 1:23, Jude 12)! Woe to the man, for he is in “captivity” to the nature of the flesh (Rom. 7:23, 2 Tim. 2:26). He needs a deliverance, he needs liberty, back into the freedom for which Christ had “made [him] free” (Rom. 8:2, John 8:31-36). Let the reader understand: the certain experience of gospel-freedom and overcoming victory is that the redeemed man does not “walk after the flesh, but after the Spirit” (Rom. 8:1) – this is eternal life (John 16:33, 17:2, 1 Jn. 2:4).

- 6) What is done worldwide in the Last Days is a consummating fulfillment of what is done to the Church all throughout their days (this is God’s *end-time judgment* and *beginning judgment*). In the end, God will shake everything that can be shaken so that, only those objects that are sustained by unshakable powers do remain. In the end, God will burn heaven and earth with smelting and destroying fires (2 Thess. 1:6-10, 2 Pet. 3:4-14) ...but for the Church which exists right now, this is done *all throughout their days* - God baptizes and burns them,

He immerses them in *judgments of fire* so that, only those objects which *abide the fire* do remain as stones of the Temple of God.

You see, my reader, Christians are *able* to deny the life, will, work, and way of the everlasting man, choosing *rather* to live, desire, work for, and walk in the carnal and perishing man. This is a denial of the everlasting, other-worldly, heavenly, glorious, honorable, and incorruptible powers of the Spirit of God (Rom. 1:16, Titus 1:16, John 17:21-23, 1 Cor. 15:35-50), and it is a contradictory choice of union with the unholy spirit of the devil (Eph. 2:2-3, 5:3-8, Jas. 4:4-8) – therefore these people do join Lucifer’s parade of rebellion against God for the luster of **temporary rewards** (Lk. 6:24, 16:25, Matt. 6:2, 5, 16), enjoying the passing pleasures of sin though they be but **a season** (Heb. 11:25), expending their life and strength though it be **but a vapor** (Jas. 4:14), living for and loving the world and its lusts though they are **doomed to pass away** (1 Jn. 2:15-17, Matt. 7:21-17, 1 Pet. 1:24-25).

This is a building again of those things which **were destroyed** (Gal. 2:17-18), it is a building of things which **can be destroyed** (*wood, hay, stubble, and earth*; see 1 Cor. 3:12-15)! Therefore, alas, the man who was, at the former time, HOLY unto God in spirit, soul, and body (1 Thess. 5:23), the man who was clothed and regenerated with the essence of what is everlasting (1 Jn. 5:11-12), is now altogether ONE with the visible and invisible essence of everything that is without endurance and dying; the things which are corruptible, natural, earthly, dishonoring, weak, vile, and perishing (1 Cor. 15:35-50, Rev. 20:10, 12-15, 21:1, 8)! Oh that the man would, rather, despise *this world* and look for *the next* (Heb. 11:13-16, 13:13-14)! “Set your affection on things **above**”, my reader, “not on things on **the earth**” (Col. 3:2). All of creation is destined for one, unavoidable END. The prophet foresaw it, the time when “the first heaven and the first earth were **passed away**” (Rev. 21:1). My reader, will you hear him speak more? Do you know what happens after this great **passing away**? “I John saw **the Holy City, New Jerusalem**, coming down out from God **out of heaven**, prepared as a **Bride adorned for her Husband**” (Rev. 21:2)! This is **the everlasting City** which is full of the “glory of God”, my reader, “like unto **a stone most precious**, even like **a jasper stone**, clear as **crystal**”, like “**jasper**”, “**pure gold**”, “**precious stones**”, “**sapphire**”, **chalcedony**”, “**emerald**”, “**sardonyx**”, “**sardius**”, “**chrysolite**”, “**beryl**”, “**topaz**”, “**chrysoprasus**”, “**jacinth**”, “**amethyst**”, and “**pearls**”!

Before this consummated and final expression of the Kingdom of God is manifest... shockingly, God is seeking worthy stones for its building. When God chooses men for its building, His hopes and intentions are good (for more on this topic see “[God in the Ways of Man](#)” & “[The Purpose & Intent for Salvation](#)”). Yes, He makes them into what they need to be (*gold, silver, and precious stones*). He creates them into the essence of what they need to **remain in** (“But he that shall **endure unto the end**, the same shall be saved” -Matt. 24:13, Mark 13:13). Nevertheless, according to His own wisdom and pleasure, the vessels which He *chooses* He *tries*... He wants to see if they will **endure the flames**. It is written, “The fining pot is for **silver**, and the furnace for **gold**: but the LORD *trieth the hearts*” (Prov. 17:3). For a closer study to discover how and why God genuinely “wants to see” the grade of men’s faith through observing the works they do in response to God-sent trials and fires, see Prov. 21:2, Neh. 9:8, Gen. 22:1-12, 26:3-5, Ex. 15:25, 16:4, Deut. 7:22, 8:2, 13:3, 2 Chron. 33:31, 1 Pet. 1:7, Jas. 2:20-26; see also “[Abraham’s Exemplification](#)” & “[The Goodness of God Leadeth Thee to Repentance](#)”.

What is so noteworthy about God’s furnace of fires and trials, my reader? This furnace of trial, as is noted in these various chapters and sections, is an *eternally consequential experience*. In the process of trial these people, blood-bought and transformed into new men which are “**comparable to fine gold**” (Lam. 4:2), shockingly, are able to deny their blood-bought privileges and powers, and thus, they are able to walk in the deplorable and vile “old man” which they were freed from (Eph. 4:17-24, Col. 3:5-17, Rom. 13:11-14). When this happens, God laments, “How is **the gold become dim**! How is **the most fine gold changed**” (Lam. 4:2)! At such a time as this, alien and unholy metals have mixed with the gold. Like a wrestling man body-locks another man, invading metals mix into and defile the gold of God! Alas! These golden stones, God’s choice, select, and redeemed persons, are defiled by their unholy, alien, and unacceptable fleshly bodies – therefore the flesh is putting the Spirit to death instead of the Spirit putting the flesh to death. It is a resurrection reversal, a degeneration of the regeneration – where those who were once *washed*, go *wallowing* in the old-mire, and those who were once *healthy*, slurp up the old-pools of *poison* which were oncedete vomited out (2 Pet. 2:18-22)! Oh my reader, how terrible!

Now God is looking on with astonishment like heathen men did before watch on – only now the **heavenly citizens** become **earthly**, right before their eyes! God observes it with painful amazement because, *new things are passed away, and behold, all things are become old* (2 Cor. 5:17, Rev. 3:1)! Those redeemed persons who were lifted on high, they fell from a great height (Rev. 2:4-5, Col. 3:1-10)! They dwell in darkness when once, a great Light (Eph. 5:14)! You see, my reader, carnality has overpowered spirituality (1 Cor. 3:1-4, Rom. 7:23)! As God watches on to see, alas, His glorious House defiled (1 Cor. 3:16-18), He only has one response: The Lord baptizes every stone with a smelting, purifying, refining, and destroying fire (Matt. 3:11, 1 Cor. 3:13-15)! What does this mean? It means, my reader, God has built for Himself a Holy Temple, and when His people disobey and transgress the purposes for which they were chosen, changed, and built together with Himself, He will cast them into a furnace of angry fires. Heretofore let the reader understand, both the operation and potential end of these God-sent fires, for they are *both* **purifying** and **destroying**.

Saved by Fire – *burning works*

Primary Texts in the New Testament

“For we are labourers together with God: ye are God's Husbandry, ye are **God's Building**. According to the grace of God which is given unto me, as a wise **masterbuilder**, I have laid the **foundation**, and **another buildeth thereon**. But let every man **take heed how he buildeth thereupon**. For other **foundation** can no man lay than that is laid, which is Jesus Christ. **Now if any man build upon this foundation gold, silver, precious stones, wood, hay, stubble; Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is. If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.** Know ye not that ye are the **Temple of God**, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? **If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are. Let no man deceive himself. If any man among you seemeth to be wise in this world, let him become a fool, that he may be wise.** For the **wisdom of this world** is foolishness with God. For it is written, He **taketh the wise in their own craftiness**. And again, The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wise, that they are **vain**. Therefore let no man glory in men. For all things are yours; Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things present, or things to come; all are yours; And ye are Christ's; and Christ is God's.” – 1 Cor. 3:9-23

“Nevertheless the **foundation** of God **standeth sure**, having this seal, **The Lord knoweth them that are his**. And, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ **depart from iniquity**. But in a **Great House** there are not only **vessels of gold** and of **silver**, but also of **wood** and of **earth**; and some to **honour**, and some to **dishonour**. If a man therefore **purge himself from these**, he shall be a **vessel unto honour, sanctified, and meet for the Master's use, and prepared unto every good work**. Flee also youthful lusts: but follow righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a **pure heart**.” – 2 Tim. 2:19-22

The **FIRE** *was* and *is* a purification process. According to scripture, “the **gold**, and the **silver**, the **brass**, and the **iron**, the **tin**, and the **lead**”, were, very specifically: “every thing that may **ABIDE THE FIRE**” (Num. 31:21-24). To “abide the fire” each object survived the fire. Understandably, these objects were chosen because of their durability and imperishable quality amidst the flames of fire. After all, when gold and silver, and the like, are put into a furnace of fire, they are melted and separated one from another, but they are not *reduced* from the essence of what they are. By the essence of what they are, when made to “**go through the fire**” for lawful purification (Num. 31:21-24), or in another case, a furnace of fire for refinement, they out-last and abide the destroying flames! But, this cannot be said of objects like “**wood, hay, stubble**” and “**earth**” (1 Cor. 3:12, 2 Tim. 2:20).

By way of summary and by way of introduction to the New Testament typology of salvific fires, let us understand its confining parameters set by the inspired writers themselves, noted in the following paragraphs.

The builders of the Temple are preachers (1 Cor. 3:5-10). **The objects** which are destined to undergo the fires of trial are “Christians”. The builders **by their preaching** do *positively* or *negatively* affect pre-existing stones which were already built into the Temple of God, or in another circumstance, they make *positive* or *negative* additions to the Temple of God by building-in formerly nonexistent objects into the Temple of God. Concerning the **already existent stones** in the Temple of God, their preaching affects them *positively* in that, by preaching, the stones are washed and polished into greater glories (2 Cor. 3:18), and in so doing they *perfect* the Image of the whole Temple (Eph. 4:11-13). Also, concerning the **already existent stones** in the Temple of God, preaching affects them *negatively* in **two different potential grades**: (1) they *tarnish*, *smudge*, and *dim* the **glory** and **holiness** of the stones to whom they preach to, or, (2) the **defiling** affect of their preaching reaches A FATAL DEGREE, meaning that, tragically, the image of **glory** and **holiness** the stone once had is utterly lost and **defiled** to A DAMNING GRADE (the **gold**, **silver**, or **precious stones** are thus *defiled*, *mixed*, and *overcome* with **wood**, **hay**, **stubble**, and **earth**). At this time, according to the rules of **the House**, the very existence of every **defiled** stone is threatened with DESTROYING fires (“him shall God DESTROY” – 1 Cor. 3:17). Let the reader take note, the preaching of these preachers which is of a *positive* affect upon the stones (which is by interpretation, *washing*, *polishing*, and *perfecting* them), this is **God’s wisdom**, and the preaching of these preachers which is of a *negative* affect (which is by interpretation, *defiling* and *degrading* them), this is **worldly-wise preaching**. The stones which will totally perish in the fires are those which are, by essence, existing in THE DAMNABLE GRADE (**wood**, **hay**, **stubble**, and **earth**), and thus when God, according to His warning, “taketh” (or destroyeth) “the wise” stones in what they think is wisdom, and they, remaining in a state which they refuse to change from, namely **worldly wisdom**, perish in the fires (1 Cor. 3:18-20). My reader, let us consider this scenario with a closer look.

A true man of God is capable of preaching **worldly-wise preaching** to a *non-damnable degree*, and this indeed happens if ever he preaches anything err from the truth, but he is still a man of God because the worldly-wisdom is not fatally violent in its effect but minor, therefore those to whom he preaches to are not adversely affected to a damnable degree. However, a true man of God is capable of preaching **worldly-wise preaching** to a *damnable degree*, and this indeed happens if, personally speaking, he himself has become backslidden and overcome by worldly wisdom to a damnable degree, therefore naturally, that which he ingests he feeds others... and they all perish together (2 Pet. 2:18-22, 1 Tim. 4:16, Matt. 15:14, Rom. 6:16)! Of course, at such a time, the man is no longer considered a man of God (Rev. 3:1), but he *was*... and if he repents and believes again he can become a man of God again (Gal. 2:11-21, 4:19, 6:1, Rom. 11:23). My reader, because the man of God himself is **a defiled stone** within the Temple of God, those he preaches to become like him (this is an unavoidable **spiritual Law**, see Matt. 15:14, Lk. 6:39, 1 Tim. 4:16, Jer. 6:10, 23:17-18, 21-22, Matt. 23:16, 24).

Let the reader take note of this truth: the builders who fatally **defile** others are **defiled stones** themselves, and to the whole lot of their evil grade, God warns, “If any man **defile the Temple of God**, him shall God DESTROY” (1 Cor. 3:17)! The Master of the House has determined that these stones are **DESTROYED**, how? By **FIRE**. If the stones can be recovered from the state in which they presently exist – a **defiled** state – so that the **holy** and **glorious** Image of Christ is revived again, in such a case, behold, these men were saved “**so as by fire**” (1 Cor. 3:15). If such men are revived, it is not *without* the fires but *by* the fires. That which was poured out upon them for *destruction*, for some it turned to *salvation*! Yes, in this way, the **FIRE** is both *destroying* and *saving*! For those who do not change from their ways, and so, faint into apostasy in the midst of the “furnace of affliction” (Isa. 48:10), they will be destroyed by the fires in which they were immersed.

Think of it, my reader, if the Spirit of God departs from men because of their unrelenting apostasy, then they themselves become, in entirety, **wood**, **hay**, **stubble**, and **earth**, objects which are, in their entirety, perishable in the fire – they are objects which are, fearfully, without the Spirit of God and reprobated (Heb. 6:6, 12:17, 2 Cor. 13:5, Jude 19, 1 Jn. 2:24, 1 Cor. 9:27). You see my reader, “the **FIRE** shall try every man’s work of what sort it is” (1 Cor. 3:13), which means by interpretation, the fire will try every stone of the Temple of God. “If any man’s work **shall be burned**”, meaning that which the preacher has labored to build by his preaching is burned, the preacher-builder “shall suffer loss”, yes... because the work that he built was of **wood**, **hay**, **stubble**, and **earth** (it was *defiling* and *degrading*), but if, in the process of the trying fire, he himself is not perishing in the fires, this means that he himself is not, in entirety, **wood**, **hay**,

stubble, or **earth**, therefore his preaching was not defiling others to A DAMNABLE DEGREE – thus the Spirit of God has not departed from him. This means that the man is still **clean** and **holy**, a vessel which is **meet** or a stone which is **fit**, yea, for the very **Temple of God** itself, even though he is not sinlessly perfect he is perfectly accepted (Php. 3:10-16) - this is because whatever defilement he did by **worldly-wise preaching** was of the *non*-damnable kind, therefore even though he suffered loss, he did not lose all those things which he built! If he did, my reader, know this... the man would lose himself! If all those to whom he preaches perish, he is perishing – this is a **spiritual Law** remember? If this was the case, as stated before, the man would be a **defiled** stone and he himself would perish in the fires. In which case, the man would not be **saved by** but **destroyed in** the fires.

With a more doctrinal focus, let the reader understand: The infection of worldly-wise preaching which hinders, besets, and defiles the people of God to a non-damnable degree, results in the gold being *tarnished, smudged, and dimmed*, yes... but the **glory** and **holiness** of the object is recoverable **without** smelting fires. The object can simply be **washed** and **polished**, and the tarnish removed, thus will its **glorious** and **holy** shine be **renewed**. But if the infection of worldly-wise preaching (*wood, hay, stubble, and earth*) does reach the point of damnation, this is when the **filthiness** of the preaching has reached the flesh and spirit of the hearers (2 Cor. 7:1). This means that the object is *conformed to* instead of *transformed from* the world (Rom. 12:1-3). The object now exists as a *strange distortion* of the saving Image which did once shine (Rom. 8:29, Gal. 4:19). This means that the man was, in body, soul, and spirit, all-**HOLY** (1 Thess. 5:23-24, Rom. 8:13, Gal. 5:24), but, alas, he that was **holy** is now **unholy** (2 Cor. 7:1, Heb. 12:14, 1 Thess. 4:1-8). When the man was, by nature and deed, correctly *representing* and properly *conformed* to the Image of Christ, now he is, merely, by nature only (Eph. 5:6-14), alive in the Person of Christ – the life in which he lives is but a flickering and sickly flame (Isa. 42:3, Matt. 12:20) which is ready to be put out (Heb. 12:13-14, Jas. 5:7-9). This means that the *governing force* of righteousness which once *ruled* over the whole man (Rom. 5:21, 6:11-23), is compromised. This means that the *government* of grace and salvation within the man is in jeopardy. This *governing force* of righteousness which comes from salvation is called, scripturally, “*the Law of the Spirit of Life in Christ Jesus*” (Rom. 8:2-4), and when this is legally interrupted it is by an opposing government, “*the Law of sin and death*” (Rom. 7:23, Rom. 8:2, Rev. 3:2). Therefore, now, the *force* which

brought life, grace, salvation, and righteousness within the **regenerated man** is wrestled down, overcome, and suffocating for very life by an opposing *force*, the **old man** (Eph. 4:22, 24, Col. 3:9-10, Rom. 6:6, and for more details see [“Put on Christ – The Gospel of Regeneration” \(chapter 18, section 4\)](#)).

Are you God’s recognizable **son** or **daughter**: a recognizable **Temple-stone**, recognizable **citizen** of Heaven’s Country, or a recognizable **Bride**? Walk out your nature and you will be. This is to say, in other words, walk in your salvation (for more details see [“The NT Gospel Call to Worthiness” \(chapter 22, see all sections\)](#)).

Therefore, how do you **un-mix** the **gold** from unholy **ore**? FIRE. How do you **sever** the deadly body-lock that **carnality** has on **spirituality**? FIRE. These proud men need to be humbled again! They need to rediscover the insufficiency, vanity, and finite essence of what **worldly wisdom** is (see 1 Cor. 1-2, 3:17-23, 4:8-21). If, in the immersion of fires, they watch their labor and livelihood burn before their eyes... such men will reconsider life! If they have been laboring and living for what God calls death, and then, behold - they watch it die! - perhaps they will turn back to the Life that will never die! “We went through FIRE”, David said (Ps. 66:12), and afterward they understood the reason: “Before I was afflicted I went astray: but now have I kept Thy word” (Psalm 119:67), and again, “It is good for me to have been afflicted; that I might learn Thy statutes” (Psalm 119:71). In confirmation to this, God said, “I have chosen thee in the furnace of affliction” (Isa. 48:10)! Yes, David’s confession is good! One that ought to be made by all backslidden men. Such men are put to the worst when they transgress *because* God loves them! He chastens them, and therewith He causes them to understand, “the way of transgressors is hard” (Prov. 13:15). They suffer under God’s beating which is, by providence, a God-ordained tribulation, and in such a “fiery trial” God seeks to burn and destroy those things which displease Him (1 Pet. 4:12). We need to reckon with this reality, dear saints.

Therefore, my reader, listen to God. If you distort the Lord’s Image by misrepresenting Him, in so doing you defile the Name of God by which you are called, and in so doing you defile the **Temple of God** in which you are a part (1 Cor. 3:17). At such a time God will “try YOU” so that (1 Pet. 4:12), “if God permit” (Heb. 6:3) or “peradventure” (2 Tim.

2:25-26), after the *burning* you might be better. Scripture states, “After that [you] have suffered a while”, that is, in **the fiery furnace**, then God willing by its burning you will be made “perfect”, thus God does “stablish, strengthen, [and] settle” the positional standing of your stone in the Temple of God (1 Pet. 5:10). At such a time as this, when you are suffering under the burning rebukes of God (Rev. 3:19), my reader, do as your Counselor suggests. The Lord Jesus Christ said, “I counsel thee to buy of me **gold tried in the fire**, that thou mayest be **rich**” (Rev. 3:18)! Yes, these are eternal riches. This means that those things which you are laboring and living for are everlasting and undying (see [“Legalism: Law & Grace”](#))! What a glory! What riches! Yes, it is possible to be “rich in good works” (1 Tim. 6:18) and “rich toward God” (Lk. 12:21)! My reader, do you know the secret? “GREAT is the MYSTERY of godliness” (1 Tim. 3:16), scripture declares! And speaking to those who don’t know its mystery, Christ said, “how great is that darkness” (Matt. 6:19-24)! As a typological parallel to this lamentation, it was written again, “how is **the gold become dim! How is the most fine gold changed**” (Lam. 4:2)! My reader, a House-wide outbreak of the carnality-plague (*wood, hay, stubble, and earth*) merits a House-wide immersion [baptism] into fire (Josh. 7:24-26, Lev. 14:33-48, Lev. 26:27-39, 1 Sam. 4:10-11, Ps. 78:60, Jer. 4:8-10, 19-22, 7:8-16, 10:18-22, 11:14-17, 12:7-13, 14:8-12, 15:1, 26:6-9, 52:13-22, 1 Kings 9:7-8, Ps. 74:6-8, Isa. 64:11, Lam. 2:7, 4:1, Ezek. 7:20-22, 9:5-7, 24:21, Mic. 3:12, Matt. 23:38, 24:1-2, Lk. 13:35, Rev. 2:5, 16, 23, 3:2-5, 11-12, 18).

The Baptism of Fire – *a corporate burning*

“He shall **baptize** you with the Holy Ghost and **with FIRE**: Whose **fan** is in His hand, and he will **thoroughly purge** His floor, and will **gather** the wheat into His garner; but the chaff He will **burn** with **FIRE unquenchable**” – Luke 3:16-17

“But who may **abide** the Day of his coming? and who shall stand when He appeareth? for He is **like a refiner's fire**, and like fullers' soap: And He shall sit **as a refiner and purifier of silver**: and He shall **purify the sons of Levi**, and **purge** them **as gold and silver**, that they may offer unto the LORD an offering in righteousness.” – Mal. 3:2-3

God Almighty has a contorted face, filled with disdain (Jer. 14:8-9), because of *what* has become of His people: because *the condition* they are presently in is deplorable, unacceptable, insulting, and defiling. At such a circumstance, consider the three branches of biblical typology addressed below.

Scriptural Theme → “O the hope of Israel, the Saviour... why shouldst Thou be **as a man ASTONIED**”! – Jer. 14:8-9

- a) **The House of God:** The House of God, which should be lined entirely with **gold, silver, and precious stones**, is defiled with miscellaneous interruptions from what is required because, scattered about the walls, alas, some **fool** has put in stones of **mud (earth)**. With what contortion of face would God, the Master-BUILDER, look on...disdaining the presence of these unacceptable stones? With what good reason would God, the Inhabitant of this House, be grievously dismayed...seeing that the stones of His House were so hatefully arrayed? To enlarge upon this, my reader, imagine another scenario.
- b) **The Gates of Heaven:** Imagine **earthly men** pounding on **Heaven's Gates**, demanding entrance into the *Heavenly Land*. With what contortion of face would the Lord of that Land disdain the nation from whence these people came? With what furious denouncement would He reject their person? With what arguments would He make known to them how unacceptable they are (by their race, skin color, and language, and by their familial and nationalistic alliances which are at enmity against the Lord of Heaven – Rom. 8:1-13)? With what contortion of face does a foreigner listen to the garbled tongue of another nation... even so, these men are strangers to God – and look! – He is contorted and astonished in displeasure at their boldness before His Gates. What unfounded and unacceptable boldness!? Even so, my reader, consider another scenario.

- c) **The Bride of Christ:** Imagine a royal wedding ceremony in the act, *the presentation* just as it was planned (Eph. 5:26-27), even though – shockingly – the Bride’s garment is blotted by a ruinous **blemish**! The doors flew open and the Bride appeared... but the wedding party stood ashamed, the Bridegroom was feeling utterly disdained, and the audience, taken in involuntary gasps, rumbles with murmurs and whispers of horror and amazement. Why? Because the Bride’s attire is vile, unprepared, and unready for so worthy a presentation! With what unfounded boldness does the Bride debase her Bridegroom as she continues to walk the isle!?

When the gold is mixed with unholy pieces of matter to where, finally, the object of “choice gold” becomes unacceptable to God; this means that the mixture was heavy enough to distort the *beauty* of its image. Therefore, because the stone’s appearance is no longer *choice*, *precious*, and *elect*, its presence in the Temple is offensive to God. The stone is a glaring and unacceptable “eye sore” to the Temple of God! Its presence is so distinctly noticeable that it distracts men from the glory of all that is good, pure, and right about the House of God. Visitors of the Temple are more appalled at the presence of this unacceptable stone, and they, preoccupied therewith, fail to enjoy the glory and holiness of the entire House. This one object is such a foul intrusion into so holy an occasion that it renders the whole Temple unholy and unenjoyable! Like an unacceptable blemish on the attire of a Bride would *stall* the whole ceremony from its beginning, this unacceptable stone stands to insult the Al-dignity of God! To God, it is not only unacceptable, it is defiling... it insults the essence of what is holy, righteous, pure, and worthy to exist in God’s immediate presence, therefore it must be cleansed.

Do you understand, my reader? Not all backsliders do *savingly respond* to the *fires*. The fire burns them, but the Image of Christ is not restored! The holiness that is required by God to be a part of His House is not regained! Their saintly standing is lost! Such stones are therefore, deplorable objects, intruding and unacceptable stones in the House of God! It is utterly recognizable how they don’t belong in the House of God! Even so, likewise, this is like an earthly man pounding on the Heaven’s Gates, demanding entrance, and Heaven’s Porters, looking back, wonder how this man is demented! With contorted faces of holy-disgust, they say, Heaven is for heaven-born men, men who walk according to the rule and Law of a heavenly citizen, but you are an earth-born earthly-man! You, oh man, are a stranger to this Holy Land! You are a foreigner to God and a native to fallen man. Don’t you know that behind these Gates, “there shall in no wise enter into it any thing that **defileth**, neither whatsoever worketh abomination, or maketh a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb’s book of life” (Rev. 21:27). Upon hearing this, the earthly man ceased from pounding upon the Gates... “he was speechless” (Matt. 22:12). The man stood still and wondered, utterly aloof. He was dumbfounded and unknowledgeable of the truth. What truth?

The “Language” Barrier: 1 John 4:5-6, Luke 10:16, John 6:63, 7:16-17, 8:37, 43, 47, 1 Corinthians 2:14

Heaven-Born Citizens Belong to Heaven’s Country: John 3:3, Ephesians 2:18-19, 1 Peter 2:9-11, 1 Corinthians 8:3, 1 Corinthians 3:22-23, Hebrews 11:13-16, 13:13-14

Heaven’s principles and affections cannot be *comprehended* by earthly men (John 1:5). Yes, therefore did Heaven’s Porter speak a *different language* than the earthly man; this is the reason that he could not *understand*. You see, spiritual words can only be understood by a spiritual man, but this man was an earthly man. Then the Porters, seeing the earthly man remained overwhelmed with confusion, endeavored to vindicate the righteousness and true holiness of God by saying, “Blessed are **they that do His commandments**, that they may have right to the Tree of Life, and **may enter in through the Gates of the City**. For **without** are **dogs**, and **sorcerers**, and **whoremongers**, and **murderers**, and **idolaters**, and **whosoever loveth and maketh a lie**” (Rev. 22:14-15). The earthly man, not realizing that he is irrevocably “thrust out” (Lk. 13:28), begins to shout to the Lord who dwelt beyond the City Gates, saying, “Lord, Lord, open unto us” (Lk. 13:25)! Then the Lord of Heaven answered him, “I know you not whence ye are” (Lk. 13:25)! This means, by interpretation, “I know not where you are from”! You see, this man was an unrecognizable person from an unrecognizable race, a place that is foreign to the Land and Country of Heaven (Heb. 11:13-16, 13:13-14, Jn. 14:2-6, 1 Pet. 2:9-11, 2 Pet. 3:10-14, Rev. 2:26-28, 3:4-5, 12, 20-21). But then the earthly man replied, “We have eaten and drunk in Thy presence, and Thou hast taught in our streets” (Lk. 13:26)! But the Lord of Heaven said, “I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me, all ye **workers of iniquity**” (Lk. 13:27)! [For a closer study see “[God is a Stranger](#)”].

Imagine it, my reader, the “eye sore” of an earthly man dressed in rags, appearing in Heaven’s courtroom of golden-glass, the place where only white-robed heavenly men gather for the honor and glory of God! A synonymous situation which is equally abominated by God is, when earthly-stones which are heaven-rejects, are used for Heaven’s House. This is an appalling “eye sore” of degrading magnitude, making the whole House *feel* like a mere “common place”. Even so, likewise, a Bride, when presented to the Bridegroom, must be of a peculiar attire *worthy for the occasion*. If a woman walks the isle with unacceptable attire, this is not only ceremony-unworthy, but depending upon the severity of her blemish it is **ceremony-ending** (Eph. 5:26-27). Any honorable and dignified wedding would be **stalled**, rather than have the Bride presented with blemish-ridden garments. Imagine a wedding’s most glorious scene - the Bride walking the isle - but her white and glamorous dress is covered with a horrid and ruinous blemish! What devastating harm would such blemish wreak! Those of us who deign to call ourselves, “The Bride of Christ”, need to understand the quality and beauty that makes her the desire of God’s eyes. When the greatest known beauty of invisible creation is defiled, the beauty is out of mind. When an object of the most sacred value is scarred, the preciousness of the object is not cherished for the stature in which it exists... it becomes an emblem of great loss. The beauty, value, and preciousness of the object, now marred, stands as an object of lamentation instead of adoration, and all the preparations which were made for its beautification turn into additional pain. Therefore, with the Bride, the object of God’s eyes: The bright white dress in which the woman did shine, and the glittering jewelry which should have dazzled the mind, they all became unnoticeable and blackened out of mind because, shockingly, the woman’s glorious dress is blackened with smears of filthy mud (earth). No matter all the other bridal preparations, no matter all her adornment and her decorations, if she is **spotted** and **blemished**, the crowded audience will erupt with involuntary gasps of horror at the moment of her appearance! And yet, my reader, consider the impudence of the Bride when and if, after she had heard the audience erupt in disdain, she continued to walk the isle! She, being blind to sense or shame, steps forward, only for the audience to agonize the appalling *presentation*! Only for the Bridegroom to frown upon the *unacceptable scene*! My reader, the Father will not have such a wedding for God the Son! The Bride of Christ must be presented to her Bridegroom accordingly: “not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish” (Eph. 5:27)! Yes, even if God must **stall** (2 Pet. 3:4-9) the wedding ceremony until “His wife hath made herself **ready**” (Rev. 19:7), He will do so. He will do all that is necessary to prevent such an abominable, unholy, unworthy, and undignified *presentation* of the Bride!

The conclusion of these three typological metaphors is clear: if there is **one blemish**, if **one stone** is un-kept and is by gold *unfinished*, the Bride of Christ and House of God are rendered disqualified from **the promise** – “I will receive you” (2 Cor. 6:17). God will reject anything not of this specified stature. Such blemishes and God-rejected stones, these are the people who God knows not (1 Cor. 8:3), like as God denounces and refuses earthly born men who demand entrance into His Heavenly Land. These are the people who God spoke of when He commanded, “from such **withdraw** thyself” (1 Tim. 6:5) and “from such **turn away**” (2 Tim. 3:5). See also 2 Jn. 1:10, 1 Jn. 2:19, Jude 3-4, Php. 3:1-3, Matt. 15:13-14, 23:13, Gal. 4:29-31, 1 Thess. 2:16, 1 Cor. 5:6-8, 11, 13, Lk. 12:1, Matt. 16:6, 11-12, Jude 16, 2 Pet. 2:3, 13-14, 18, 3:17, 2 Cor. 6:17-7:1. In such a situation as this the people of God are given clear commands:

The New Testament: “Nevertheless **the foundation of God standeth sure**, having this seal, The Lord knoweth them that are His. And, Let every one that nameth the name of Christ **depart from iniquity**. But in a great house there are not only **vessels of gold and of silver**, but also of **wood and of earth**; and some to **honour**, and some to **dishonour**. If a man therefore **purge himself from these**, he shall be a vessel unto **honour**, **sanctified**, and **meet** for the Master’s use, and **prepared** unto every good work. Flee also youthful lusts: but **follow** righteousness, faith, charity, peace, **with them** that call on the Lord out of a pure heart.” - 2 Timothy 2:19-2

These actions must be taken when the objects of God’s House have become, at present, defiled and marred into an unrecoverable condition. By excommunication (in obedience to the command to “**purge**”) **the heat of the furnace** waxes to its climax. In the midst of suffering within God’s **hottest flames**, God is able to make these excommunicated objects gold again (like as He is able to “graff them in again” –Rom. 11:23). While they burn and perish as wood the fire (Zech. 13:8-9), while they sink and suffocate as in a rotten pit of mire, if they call aloud and weep, if they utter vows to keep, and they don’t think of God a liar... even from “the belly of hell” God will pluck them out (Jonah 2)! Praise God! The *visitation* of **annihilating fire** is inevitable, **if** the spiritual condition of the people of God does warrant it. In such a

time, God said, “Shall I not *visit* them for these things?” “Shall not My soul be avenged on such a nation as this” (Jer. 9:9)? My reader, read the whole passage and consider the situation:

“Oh that My head were waters, and Mine eyes a fountain of tears, that I might weep day and night for the slain of the daughter of My people! **Oh that I had in the wilderness a lodging place of wayfaring men; that I might leave My people, and go from them!** for **they be all adulterers**, an assembly of **treacherous men**. And they bend their tongues like their bow for lies: but they are not valiant for the truth upon the earth; for **they proceed from evil to evil**, and they know not Me, saith the LORD. Take ye heed every one of his **neighbour**, and trust ye not in any **brother**: for every **brother** will utterly supplant, and every **neighbour** will walk with slanders. And they will deceive every one his **neighbour**, and will not speak the truth: they have taught their tongue to speak lies, and weary themselves to commit iniquity. Thine habitation is in the midst of deceit; through deceit they refuse to know Me, saith the LORD. Therefore thus saith the LORD of hosts, **Behold, I will melt them, and try them; for how shall I do for the daughter of my people?** Their tongue is as an arrow shot out; it speaketh deceit: one speaketh peaceably to his neighbour with his mouth, but in heart he layeth his wait. Shall I not **visit** them for these things? saith the LORD: shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this?” – Jer. 9:1-9

At such a time as this, like the former typological instances which were rehearsed as New Testament scenarios, this is a typological Old Testament scenario. God’s people are treacherous “adulterers”, lovers of lies, and instead of going from “glory to glory” they “proceed from evil to evil”. Their degenerating estate is waxing worse and worse, and therefore, earth is beckoning to heaven for **The Baptism of FIRE** - a fire which is for the *destruction* and *preservation* of Israel, lest the defiling spirit of whoredom and adultery does seize and overcome all (Hos. 4:12, 5:4, Jas. 4:4). The people are in a condition which their Inhabitant – God Almighty – refuses to inhabit the Land, therefore the Lord speaks of “the wilderness” as a lodging place where He might find some holy and pure “wayfaring men”, men He would not be grieved to dwell among (Jer. 9:2). The Israel of God, which is now rejected, builds a “habitation” by worldly wisdom, “in the midst of deceit”, and “through deceit they refuse to know” God, the Lord said (Jer. 9:6) – therefore God also said, “Behold, **I will melt them, and try them**; for how shall I do for the daughter of My people” (Jer. 9:7)? This melting and trying is a BAPTISM OF FIRE capable of total annihilation, but because Israel is called by God’s Name the Lord will not bring them to a total end. It is written:

“Yea, thou heardest not; yea, thou knewest not; yea, from that time that thine ear was not opened: for I knew that thou wouldest deal very treacherously, and wast called a transgressor from the womb. For My Name’s sake will I defer Mine anger, and for My praise will I refrain for thee, that I cut thee not off. **Behold, I have refined thee, but not with silver; I have chosen thee in the furnace of affliction.** For Mine own sake, even for Mine own sake, will I do it: for how should My Name be polluted? and I will not give My glory unto another. Hearken unto me, O Jacob and Israel, My called; I am He; I am the first, I also am the last.” - Isaiah 48:8-12 [see also Deut. 32:26-27]

Therefore this **purging**, my reader, is one of *destruction* and *redemption*, and those who savingly respond to the fires are saved by them. Here, God burns Israel to save her. The fires of God are simultaneously intended to save and intended to annihilate, but not all will savingly respond to the fires (Amos 4:11, Jer. 6:28-30), whose heat increases by phases of intensity, until a near annihilation transpires with a remnant plucked out (Isa. 48:9). The **purging** that transpires here is, a **corporate purging**. The **burning** which transpires is, a **corporate burning**. This means that the whole House is **baptized in fire**. This is what Christ meant when He said, “Behold, **your House is left unto you desolate**” (Matt. 23:38). He baptized all of Israel with the fires of judgment, namely, the 70 AD destruction of Israel. “He shall **baptize** you with the Holy Ghost, and **with FIRE**”, John the Baptist said (Matt. 3:11). But what is this fire? Continue reading and you will see what John said the fire does! John said, “He shall **baptize** you with the Holy Ghost, and **with FIRE**: Whose **fan** is in His hand, and He will **thoroughly purge** His floor, and **gather** His wheat into the garner; but He will **burn up** the chaff with **unquenchable FIRE**” (Matt. 3:11-12, Isa. 41:21). At such a time as this, times which were a typologically parallel to the 70 AD judgment-fires, God said again, “**I will turn My hand upon thee**”, and for what? Here it is written again that He will turn His hand to **purge away** from the whole House of Israel everything that **offends, defiles**, and is **unclean**!

“Behold, I will send My messenger, and he shall prepare the way before me: and the Lord, whom ye seek, shall **suddenly come to His Temple**, even the messenger of the Covenant, whom ye delight in: behold, He shall come, saith the LORD of hosts. ² But **who may abide** the Day of His coming? and who shall stand when He appeareth? for He is like a **refiner’s FIRE**, and like fullers’ soap: ³ **And He shall sit as a refiner and purifier of silver: and he shall purify the sons of Levi, and purge them as gold and silver**, that they may offer unto the LORD an offering in righteousness.” – Mal. 3:1-3

“Therefore saith the Lord, the LORD of hosts, the mighty One of Israel, Ah, I will **ease** Me of **Mine adversaries**, and **avenge** Me of **Mine enemies**. **And I will turn my hand upon thee**, and **purely purge away** thy **dross**, and **take away** all thy **tin**.” - Isaiah 1:25

“And I will **purge out** from among you **the rebels**, and them that transgress against me: I will bring them forth out of the country where they sojourn, and they shall not enter into the Land of Israel: and ye shall know that I am the LORD.” – Ezek. 20:38

“They are all grievous revolters, walking with slanders: **they are brass and iron**; they are all **corrupters**. The bellows are burned, **the lead is consumed of the fire**; the founder **melteth in vain**: for the wicked are not **plucked away**. **Reprobate silver shall men call them, because the LORD hath rejected them.**” - Jeremiah 6:28-30

“Behold, the eyes of the Lord GOD are upon **the sinful kingdom**, and I will **destroy it** from off the face of the earth; saving that I will not **utterly destroy the house of Jacob**, saith the LORD. For, lo, I will command, and I will **sift** the house of Israel among all nations, like as corn is **sifted** in a sieve, yet shall not the least grain fall upon the earth. All **the sinners** of my people shall die by the sword, which say, The evil shall not overtake nor prevent us.” - Amos 9:8-10

“And it shall come to pass, that in all the Land, saith the LORD, two parts therein shall be cut off and die; but the third shall be left therein. **And I will bring the third part through the fire, and will refine them as silver is refined, and will try them as gold is tried: THEY SHALL CALL ON MY NAME, and I WILL HEAR THEM: I will say, It is my people: and they shall say, The LORD is my God.**” - Zechariah 13:8-9

Blessed be the Name of the Lord Jesus Christ that **not all perished!** That a remnant was left alive! A remnant who, in the midst of the burning flames did weep, cry aloud, repent, and vow! Yes, this is what Zechariah meant in 13:9, “they shall call on My Name, and I will hear them!” My reader, this is God’s way (Amos 5:15, Zeph. 2:3, Jer. 36:3, 7, Ezek. 12:3). The remnant that was left alive did finally understand God’s heart, that He was “broken with their whorish heart” which “departed” from Him, and by this understanding Israel did finally “lothe themselves for the evils which they have committed in all their abominations” (Ezek. 6:8-10).

God’s terrifying judgment which does *in this way* begin at **the House of God** (1 Pet. 4:17-18), we are told in scripture that it will eventually **turn upon the whole world!** I mean, my reader, a **worldwide BAPTISM OF FIRE!** Concerning this worldwide judgment of fire, the psalmist spoke, “Thou **puttest away** all the wicked from the earth **like dross**: therefore I love Thy testimonies” (Ps. 119:119)! Yes, my reader, End Time Judgment is a type of what is coming right now, to the Church. In a very real way God is going to **baptize the world with destroying and smelting fires** – destroying the evil and regenerating the redeemable (2 Thess. 1:6-10, 2 Pet. 3:3-14). Are you doing the will of God that **abides forever**, or are you doing the will of man which **perishes** (1 Jn. 2:15-17)? The fires are sent to **try** the metals to see if they are **perishable or imperishable...** until only that which is **imperishable and pure** remains. Heaven is everlasting, yes, and the things of heaven are everlasting. The Kingdom of Heaven is an everlasting Kingdom, yes, and those who walk according to the rule of Heaven are everlasting men (Col. 3:1-3, Php. 3:17-21). These men think, speak, walk, and live God’s will, yes, and He that doeth the will of God lives forever! Everything else is **finite and perishing**, built upon a foundation that will crumble with its **shaking** (Matt. 7:26-27, Heb. 12:26-29). The men who walk in the manners of life

which exist forever, these men live forever – and by God-sent FIRES these men are sifted from among the multitude and REVEALED!

“Many shall be **purified**, and made white, and **tried**; but the wicked shall do wickedly: and none of the wicked shall understand; but the wise shall understand.” - Daniel 12:10

“Who are kept by the power of God through faith unto salvation ready to be revealed in the last time. Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now **for a season**, if need be, ye are in heaviness through **manifold temptations**: That the **trial** of your faith, being **much more precious than of gold that perisheth**, though it be **tried with fire**, might be found unto **praise** and **honour** and **glory** at the appearing of Jesus Christ:” - 1 Peter 1:5-7

“My brethren, count it all joy when ye fall into **divers temptations**; Knowing this, that **the trying of your faith** worketh patience. But let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect and entire, wanting nothing.” - James 1:2-4

How does a man's faith reward to him “**praise and honour and glory** at the appearing of Jesus Christ” (1 Pet. 1:7)? The man's faith was evidenced, “being filled with the fruits of righteousness, which are by Jesus Christ, unto the **glory and praise** of God” (Php. 1:11). This yield of Spirit-empowered fruits was of “**patient continuance** in well doing”, therefore the man's life was lived “for **glory and honour and immortality, eternal life**” (Rom. 2:7, 10). Living by and walking in the Spirit – who is Eternal Life (John 3:15, 5:11-12) – is living, moving, thinking, and doing those things which will **last forever**. The flesh and its works, is a perishing way of life, literally. Recognizing this, that all such men are doomed to die, we are commanded to “love not the world neither the things that are in the world...for all that is in the world... is not of the Father...and **the world passeth away**, and the lust thereof: but **he that doeth the will of God abideth for ever**” (1 Jn. 2:15-17). The world and its wisdom in the essence of its existence, is perishing, but he that does the will of God – the essence of everlasting life – lives forever. The world, its wisdom, ideologies, appeal, and hope appear to be “good” and “pleasant to the eyes”, as something “to be desired to make one wise” (Gen. 3:6), but the shelter it provides will all come crashing down! A well-built, fully furnished, architecturally sharp house would appear to be a good shelter, as someone might say, but when it is tested by **the storms of judgment**, “the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it FELL: and great was the FALL of it”! Why? The house was not “founded upon a rock” (Matt. 7:24-27)! My reader, the foundation was wrong!

Even so, judgments are ready to come upon the world, and before long, my reader, its wisdom, ideologies, appeal, and hope will lose their grip upon the human mind. When the world itself shakes like a leaf, when the mountains are removed into the sea, when the stars come crashing down to earth, the sky is rolled back like a scroll, when the world itself totters to and fro like a drunken man, then the world will understand – “this life” is passing away, and he that does the will of God lives forever. The Almighty is going to shake everything that can be shaken (Heb. 12:25-28), and my reader, will you remain unshaken? This **shaking** is a **testing**, a **trying**, and its purpose is for “the removing of those things that are shaken, as things that are made, that those things which **cannot be shaken may remain**” (Heb. 12:27). My reader, are you one who, through God's eternal Spirit, have been established upon the unshakable foundation of Christ as your life, ambition, goal, and ideology, as your wisdom, plan, desire, and hope? God will **try** all men, my reader, to see if we will be shaken from our claim to and connection with Christ – the unshakable, ever-enduring, everlasting Man. For this reason Christ bids us, “I counsel thee to buy of me **gold tried in the fire**, that thou mayest be **rich**” (Rev. 3:18).

Saints, God has, by the second-birth, given us imperishable wealth – the indwelling Spirit of God who is our “**new man**” – but this sacred union exists because of saving faith, and if saving faith is lost...men will perish in the fires which, for others, did only purify. It is God's will that, by judgment-fires, “after that ye have suffered a while”, God would “make you perfect, stablish, strengthen, [and] settle you” (1 Pet. 5:10)... but some people are so easily shaken in faith when heated by the Lord's judgment-fires of tribulation! They are offended to hear the commandment: “Beloved, think it not strange concerning **the fiery trial** which is to **try you**, as though some strange thing happened unto you” (1 Pet. 4:12).

- ❖ **Purifying Fires:** Dan. 12:10, 1 Peter 1:5-7, James 1:2-4 – *the fires are kindled with scripturally expressed intentions, therefore when we are feeling heated and melted in the burning fire let us not be amazed. Bound with these burnings are promises of hope and everlasting life.*

For example, consider the saved man, King David, who certainly went through chastisement, but for him it was remedial. His description of personal and corporate chastisement follows the pattern of phases which Leviticus 26 foretold. As for him and his household, along with those that followed after his leadership, they all responded to the chastisement which was here called, “a proving” whereby God “proved us”, a trial in which they “**went through FIRE**”, a fire whereby God “**tried us as silver is tried**”. As you read of David’s experience, my reader, consider this question: will you “abide” the fire (1 Cor. 3:14)? Reckon it, my reader, to us belongs, not only the Baptism of the Spirit, but also the Baptism of Fire!

“O bless our God, ye people, and make the voice of His praise to be heard: Which holdeth our soul in life, and suffereth not our feet to be moved. For Thou, O God, hast **proved us**: Thou hast **tried us, as silver is tried**. Thou broughtest us into the net; Thou laidst affliction upon our loins. Thou hast caused men to ride over our heads; **we went through FIRE** and through water: but Thou broughtest us out into a wealthy place. I will go into Thy House with burnt offerings: I will pay thee my vows, Which my lips have uttered, and my mouth hath spoken, when I was in trouble. I will offer unto thee burnt sacrifices of fatlings, with the incense of rams; I will offer bullocks with goats. Selah.” - Psalms 66:8-15

For King David, the fires of God were not *destroying* but *purifying*. The final vessel which came out of the furnace was **perfected** by the fires, and thus it was “a vessel for **The Finer**” (Prov. 25:6). This, my reader, is a vessel “meet for the Master’s use” (2 Tim. 2:19-22) because it is purified from the lump of earth’s ore. Yes, it is free from the contaminating and unholy metals! It is written, “**Take away the dross from the silver**, and there shall **come forth a vessel for The Finer**” (Proverbs 25:4). My reader, consider Job when he said:

“But He knoweth the way that I take: **when he hath tried me, I shall come forth as gold.**” - Job 23:10

The experience of Job, how terrifying it was (see “[The Goodness of God Leadeth Thee to Repentance](#)”)! And yet here, in another branch of typological thought, Job reflects on his situation with good hopes and a happy future. Though he is still engulfed in fiery troubles, Job said, “I shall **come forth as gold**” (Job 23:10)! Do you know what this means? Job does here acknowledge that the melting was painstaking, and yet it was Masterful. Like a Finer purifies and tries ore while the gold is hidden from the human eye, Job says that God, in the same way, burns him. Yes, God’s eye sees just what He seeks after, and He knows how to draw it out! Job acknowledges how, after the masterful process of melting fires do take their course upon a mass of filthy earth like himself, shockingly, gold comes forth! Praise God!

But sadly, not all **savingly respond** to the fires of God. Some who should be *hopeful* are *hopeless*, and while undergoing Divine-chastisements and holy-burnings, alas, they are emboldened to further rebellion and willful denial (see Jer. 18:1-17)! Oh that woeful confession... “There is no hope” (Jer. 18:12)! They should have rather, like the remnant, made the confession of Lamentations 3:1-20. This was good confession of HOPE, yes, even though the remnant was burned inside of an exceedingly hot furnace of fire. After reading Lamentations 3:1-20, consider how the remnant said, “This I recall to my mind, therefore I have **HOPE**. It is of the LORD’S mercies that **we are not consumed**, because His compassions fail not...It is good for a man that he bear the yoke in his youth. He sitteth alone and keepeth silence, because he hath born it upon him. He putteth his mouth in the dust; **if so be there may be HOPE**” (Lam. 3:21-22, 27-29). Those who are weary and hopeless in the fires should rather pray alongside the remnant who said, “Thou hast heard my voice: hide not Thine ear at my breathing, at my cry” (Lam. 3:56), for we should remember that God is not an unrighteous Judge. Therefore “men ought always to pray, and not to faint”, for God will “avenge His own elect which cry day and night unto Him, though He bear long with them” (Lk. 18:1, 7). Concerning the Last Day’s Baptism of Fire, Christ said, “I tell you that He will avenge them speedily. Nevertheless when the Son of Man cometh, shall He find faith

on the earth” (Lk. 18:8)? Indeed, my reader, “He doth not afflict willingly nor grieve the children of men” (Lam. 3:33) ...but it is “that we might be partakers of His holiness” (Heb. 12:10).

“Shall we not much rather be in subjection to the Father of spirits, and live” (Heb. 12:9)? But woe to those who refuse to be subject to God the Father even though He chastises them seven times for their sins (Lev. 26:27-45). When in the furnace of affliction, heated seven times (Lev. 26:28), men ought to yield to God! But, alas, it was written of them, “In vain have I smitten your children; they received no correction: your own sword hath devoured your prophets, like a destroying lion” (Jer. 2:30). “O LORD, are not thine eyes upon the truth? thou hast stricken them, but they have not grieved; thou hast consumed them, but they have refused to receive correction: they have made their faces harder than a rock; they have refused to return” (Jer. 5:3). For all such, the fires are not *saving* but *destroying*.

❖ **Destroying Fires:** *the fires are kindled with scripturally expressed intentions, but when men were feeling heated and melted in the burning they became unrighteously amazed and hopeless (despising the chastening of the Lord), therefore though an opportunity of salvation was available to them it was beyond their attention.*

"For, behold, the day cometh, **that shall burn as an oven**; and all the proud, yea, and all that do wickedly, **shall be stubble**: and the day that cometh shall **burn them up**, saith the LORD of hosts, that it **shall leave them neither root nor branch**." (Malachi 4:1)

“And the word of the LORD came unto me, saying, Son of man, the house of Israel is to me **become dross**: all they are **brass**, and **tin**, and **iron**, and **lead**, **in the midst of the furnace**; they are even **the dross of silver**. Therefore thus saith the Lord GOD; Because ye are **ALL become dross**, behold, therefore I will gather you into the midst of Jerusalem. As they gather **silver**, and **brass**, and **iron**, and **lead**, and **tin**, **into the midst of the furnace**, to blow the **fire** upon it, to **melt it**; so will I gather you **in mine anger** and in **my fury**, and **I will leave you there**, and **melt you**. Yea, I will gather you, and blow upon you in **the fire of my wrath**, and ye shall be **melted** in the midst thereof. **As silver is melted in the midst of the furnace, so shall ye be melted in the midst thereof; and ye shall know that I the LORD have poured out my fury upon you.**” - Ezekiel 22:17-22

“I have overthrown some of you, **as God overthrew Sodom and Gomorrah**, and ye were as a firebrand **plucked out of the burning**: yet have ye not returned unto me, saith the LORD.” - Amos 4:11

God-sent fires of baptism are also of the destroying kind, the kind which annihilated Sodom and Gomorrah. If God had no reservation to keep Israel alive for the sake of His own Name, they too would have been annihilated. The furnace was kindled and heated **for annihilation**, but God, by the means of plucking men out, plucked them out of total annihilation! This means that the process of destruction had well-begun, the intention for destruction was real and genuine, but God, wondrous in pity for His own Name's sake, plucked them out before they burned up! “Holiness becometh Thine House” (ps. 93:5), the psalmist declared, therefore let us reckon this truth! HOLINESS! Let us understand, God will have His House hallowed. God's chosen people, which are as stones, will be a “peculiar treasure” of a holy and glorious grade, a grade representative of the Lord's Image (1 Pet. 2:9, Ex. 19:5-6, Deut. 14:2, 26:18, Eph. 2:19), or else, my reader, He will **burn, refine, melt, purify, purge, sift, fan, sever, baptize**, and those who are **imperishable** will be thus **revived**. God will fulfill the word which said, “The glory of **this latter House** shall be *greater* than of the **former**, saith the LORD of hosts: and in this place will I give peace, saith the LORD of hosts” (Hag. 2:9). “Be glad then, ye children of Zion, and rejoice in the LORD your God: for He hath given you **the former rain** moderately, and He will cause to come down for you the rain, the former rain, and **the latter rain** in the first month” (Joel 2:23)! “And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the Name of the LORD shall be delivered: for in Mount Zion and in Jerusalem shall be deliverance, as the LORD hath said, and in the remnant whom the LORD shall call” (Joel 2:32)!

In Conclusion to Chapters 15, 16, & 17

Heretofore, from Chapter 15 until now, the argument of scripture has been harmoniously progressive, intricately cohesive, and thematically united, begging certain conclusions. We have studied the nine different *places* or *peoples* which make up the doctrine of The Church in **the Old Testament, New Testament, and the Consummation**. In other words, we have studied the *shadows, realities, and finalities* of salvation as it pertains to The Church, the population of the redeemed. As our study progressed, it was harmonious. As the intricacies grew manifold, they were cohesive. As the historical, contemporary, and future places and persons of The Church historically began, presently exist, and prophetically finalize, the unfolding themes are utterly united in one singular conclusion: **Church Purity**.

If **wicked persons, sinners, strangers**, and the **unclean** (to name a few) were unwelcomed in The Church as it existed in **the Old Testament** and in **the Consummation**, should we expect them to be welcomed in the dispensation which exists between those two points of progressive redemption? Seeing that salvation began in **the Old Testament** and will **Consume** in the future via perfect **holiness** and **purity** wherein the congregation and assembly of the LORD will be **sanctified** from all the **unclean, uncircumcised, and unsaved** (to name a few), should we not be expectant of the same **regulations** to be binding upon the middle-point of redemption which does now exist in **the Gentile Church Age**? If not, what an unholy contradiction this would be! Has God suddenly changed his mind today, in **the Gentile Church Age of the New Testament**? Have the ancient forms of The Church as they were authored in **the Old Testament** (in nine *places* and *persons*) suddenly ceased to exist so that now, alas, The Church has no need of **holiness, cleanliness, separation, and purity**!?

When God authored redemption in **the Old Testament** by choosing a physical race of people (“a chosen generation”) for the employment of a holy office (“a royal Priesthood”) while existing as a literal Nation among the kingdoms of the world, and, yet, maintaining peculiarity from them all (“an holy Nation, a peculiar people”), should we expect that the **New Testament** Christians of the **Gentile Church Age** are no longer called to be **chosen, royal, holy, and peculiar** (1 Pet. 2:9)? God forbid. The attributes of redemption existing in *shadows* did not change when they flourished into the *realities*! And, certainly, they will not change when they are **Consummated**! The **New Testament** inspired authors did scrupulously prove that the calling of **holiness, cleanness, and separation** existing in the earthly dimensions of **the Old Testament** are perfectly paralleled in spiritual dimensions in **the New Testament** during **the Gentile Church Age**, and, furthermore, they are perfectly paralleled into spiritual and physical dimensions at **Final Redemption** which is yet to come at **the Consummation**.

This means that the Laws of the KING are unitedly binding in every stage of redemption from beginning to end. The *assemblies* and *congregations* of **the Old Testament** (in the Nation of Israel), in **the New Testament** (in the Spiritual Nation of Israel), and in **the Consummation** (in the Spiritual and Physical Nation of Israel) must be **HOLY**. The *Tabernacle, Temple, House, and Sanctuary* of **the Old Testament, the New Testament, and the Consummation** must be **HOLY**. Jerusalem of old (**OT**), Jerusalem a-new (**NT**), and Jerusalem to come (**Consummation**) must be **HOLY**. The Kingdom of God has not changed, my reader. Think of it! Should any partial fulfillment of redemption in the *Land, City, Nation, and Kingdom of God* in Israel be any different than their consummated and brilliant end? No! Therefore, even though we are not sinlessly “perfect” (Php. 3:12) so that we might instantaneously discover every subtlety of the Devil’s working to overthrow *the Kingdom of God* by infiltrating the congregations of the LORD to **defile** its **HOLINESS**, we ought to “press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus” (Php. 3:14) – which is, namely, a congregation sinlessly perfect obtaining “the resurrection of the dead” (Php. 3:11). We must, in other words, re-establish the *watchers, porters, contenders, and defenders* of the faith (Jude 3)! We must, at last, agree with our Lord’s prayer and fight to see it fulfilled in as much as God would allow! Even so, “Our Father which art in HEAVEN, **Hallowed** be Thy name. Thy Kingdom come. Thy will be done, **as in HEAVEN, so in EARTH**” (Luke 11:2). Count the cost, dear reader... we are in the Last Days!

*“Are you becoming rejected and despised,
Or more and more accepted and prized?
Are you perfecting holiness in the fear of God,
Or compromising the standard for man’s applaud?
Is the glorious presence of God still burning in your heart,*

Or has friendship with a white-washed Church caused Him to depart?

Are your knees calloused from burdened prayer,

Or just your fingers from vanity fair?

Are you the offscouring of all things,

Or a delightful song even the world can sing?

Are you still pressing toward the mark of the high calling in Christ Jesus,

Or waiting in a leavened Church to whom God says "when will they believe us"?

Revival is obedience and keeping yourself clean,

Not a once in a while option or some far off distant dream.

To exalt His name amidst the earth in His people, that is still His desire,

But who will bear the reproach of a Christ who came to set the world on fire!?

Who came not for peace but a sword, and put man's "orthodoxy" to the wind!

Who held fast to the word of God no matter how many people would offend!

Will God exalt His Passover Lamb when His house is filled with leaven?

Will any obey the call to "be ye separate" and thus received of heaven?

The conservative reformed orthodox of Jesus day,

Nailed Him to a cross for His "come out from among them" foolish way!

You have left the Baal worship of Babylonian prosperity...

But have you torn down the calves of conservative false Christianity!?

We have prayed He would come and dwell in our midst in this our day,

But God says, oh that I had a group of wayfaring men whose hearts are perfect and kept my way!

To show myself strong on their behalf, to be their God and they my people!

But will you go without the camp from amidst that corrupted religious steeple!?

Surely Scripture says God's name He will exalt,

But we have not obeyed His voice, His absence is our fault.

Will we join the prophets of old and share in Jesus' cross?

Rejected by His "people", stand and brokenheartedly declare them dross?

Surely then, though few we be, even 120 in number,

Christ the risen Lord would soon appear and wake the world from its slumber!"

- Jordan Fraker

“And take heed to yourselves, lest at any time your hearts be overcharged with surfeiting, and drunkenness, and cares of this life, and so that day come upon you unawares. For as a snare shall it come on all them that dwell on the face of the whole earth. Watch ye therefore, and pray always, that ye may be accounted worthy to escape all these things that shall come to pass, and to stand before the Son of man.” – Luke 21:34-36

CHAPTER #18

The Old Testament Ceremonial Law Fulfilled by Christ & Disannulled for Christians

Section #1: Fulfilled – Disannulled – Destroyed?

Section #2: The Disannulment of the Old Testament Clean & Unclean Laws

Fulfilled – Disannulled – Destroyed?

The Old Testament Ceremonial Law was *fulfilled* by Christ and *disannulled* for Christians, but it was not *destroyed*! Vast amounts of scripture have been devoted to expound the mystery of redemption pertaining to Old Testament Law: its *fulfillment* and *disannulment*; but many multitudes of so called “Christians” would rather scratch-out the glorious masterpiece of the New Testament by summarizing the relevance and life-application of Old Testament dynamics into one simple word: *abolishment*. My reader, do you know the difference between *fulfillment*, *disannulment*, and *abolishment*?

“Think not that I am come to **destroy** the Law, or the prophets: I am not come to **destroy**, but to **fulfil**. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the Law, **till all be fulfilled**. Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the Kingdom of Heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the Kingdom of Heaven.” – Matthew 5:17-19

With profound and confrontational clarity, the Lord Jesus said, “I am not come to *destroy* the Law, or the prophets: I am not come to *destroy*, but to *fulfill*” (Matt. 5:17). With telling forthrightness, it’s a statement of fact. The Lord Jesus is not seeking *abolishment* but *fulfillment*. Stemming from this point the Lord vindicated the relevance of the seemingly insignificant commandments given in the Old Testament (“*the least commandments*”-Matt.5:19). We can conclude, therefore, based upon Matthew 5:17-19 as a contextual backdrop: however the Lord Jesus Christ did *fulfill* and *disannul* the Old Testament Law from the 1st century until now, “*the least commandments*” of the Old Testament Law still bear significance – to be **taught** (“*whosoever shall...teach them*”-Matt.5:19), to be kept in unbroken **obedience** (“*whosoever shall do...them*”-Matt.5:19), for the status of **greatness** in the Kingdom of Heaven (“*the same shall be called great in the Kingdom of Heaven*”-Matt.5:19)! This being the case, my reader, let us shun ungodly simplicity and give ourselves to all necessary study, according to the scriptures (Isa. 28:10, John 8:31-32, 2 Tim. 2:15); let us implore the Lord for grace so that, peradventure, in our latter end, what befell the early disciples might befall us: “*Then opened He their understanding, that they might understand the scriptures*” (Lk. 24:45).

Old Testament Law can be divided into two primary veins, the Moral Law and the Ceremonial Law. Jesus Christ was and is the embodied *fulfillment* of the Moral Law and the Ceremonial Law of the Old Testament, on earth and Heaven, from the moment of His incarnation unto His bodily resurrection and ascension into glory. Moreover, at the 2nd Coming of Christ, the Lord will continue to *fulfill* both aspects of the Law in the Millennial Reign and thereafter, throughout the endless ages of eternity, in the New Jerusalem located in the New World (Rev. 20:1-6, 21:1-2). Jesus Christ did not come to *abolish* the Law but to *fulfill* it, and the very infrastructure of eternal redemption does prophetically declare it!

The Moral Law

“For what the Law *could not do*, in that it was *weak* through the flesh, God sending His own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: That **the Righteousness of the Law** [the Moral Law] might be **fulfilled** in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.” – Romans 8:3-4

“Love is the **fulfilling of the Law**” – Romans 13:10 [Gal. 5:14]

By living a life of moral and sinless perfection, Jesus Christ **WAS, IS, and IS TO COME**: the embodiment of the Moral Law. Jesus Christ **WAS** sinless the entire duration of His humanity so that He might become a propitiatory sacrifice on behalf of fallen humanity; “*For in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive*” (1 Cor. 15:22). Jesus Christ **IS** still living-out the performance of the Moral Law on earth today – in and through redeemed humanity (“*Abide in Me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the Vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in Me*”-John 15:4) – and as much as Christians learn to abide in Christ, howbeit imperfectly, they are thereby enabled “so to walk, even as He walked” (1 John 2:6). Having begun redemption by the volition of His own choice in each individual Christian’s life, Jesus Christ promises to persevere it unto its consummation. Speaking of Christians, it was written, “He which hath begun a good work in you will perform it until the Day of Jesus Christ” (Php. 1:6). This means that, **IN THE TIME TO COME**, Christians will experience the glory of sinless perfection for all eternity (1 Jn. 3:2, 1 Cor. 13:10, Php. 3:12, 1 Thess. 4:17, John 17:5, 22, 24). Our communion within Christ’s sinless perfection is made possible by and progressively experienced through His crucifixion, resurrection, ascension, glorification, return, and consummation. Speaking in reference to sinless perfection, Paul said, “not as though I had already attained, either were already perfect: but I follow after, if that I may apprehend that for which I am apprehended of Christ Jesus” (Php. 3:12).

Jesus Christ’s moral perfection was ceremonially significant on this wise: His resurrection from the dead on the third day signaled to all mankind the indisputable truth that Jesus Christ was, **firstly**, completely innocent and legally sinless before God the Father (testifying to this fact, the Lord Jesus could not die but rose again on the third day - “*it was not possible that He should be holden of it*” -Acts2:24 – a thing which is impossible for guilty sinners because, it was written, “*the soul that sinneth, it shall die*”-Ezek.18:4), and, **secondarily**, because Jesus Christ was sinless and yet, experienced death, He was a sin-burdened human body upon which was laid the entire weight of human guilt, into which was legally imputed the whole record of human wretchedness, a human body which was ceremonially offered (of His own will upon an earthly altar called, The Cross) and ceremonially accepted of God the Father as an atoning sacrifice (a wrath-absorbing sacrifice), testified to be so, because, if Jesus Christ did not bear the sin of mankind on Calvary’s Tree it would have been impossible for Him to die. Scripturally speaking, the only foreseeable reason death comes upon all men is that, all men have sinned, therefore when Jesus Christ died it was on behalf of sinful men (1 Cor. 15:54-57). Therefore now, when any sinful man believes on Jesus Christ... namely, the death that He died to sin, this man will experience salvation via the life that Jesus Christ lives (Rom. 6:1-14)! In His own words, Jesus Christ said, “whosoever liveth and believeth in Me shall NEVER DIE” (John 11:26)! He said, “I am The Resurrection and The Life” (John 11:25)! Therefore, by necessity, all mankind who refuses to believe in Jesus Christ will die in their sins (John 8:24); seeing that they did not regard the death that Christ died to sin, they will die in their sins. [For more information on how Christians are required to live-out the Moral Law right now, according to scripture, see [A Regulator of Church Purity: The Moral Law](#). For more information on how Christ did not come to reform the Moral Law, see “[The Sermon on the Mount](#)”].

The Ceremonial Law

While many aspects of the aforementioned *fulfillments* of the Moral Law are gloriously apparent to true Christians, there is a pervading ignorance of the Ceremonial Law. Meanwhile, Christian’s attempt to live-out the personality of God

depicted by the Moral Law without realizing the significance of the Ceremonial Law: namely, how Jesus Christ did, does, and will *fulfill* and *disannul* the Ceremonial Law.

Having been incarnated as a Jew into the tribe of Judah as the seed of David, Jesus Christ walked-out the Old Testament Ceremonial Law in all available and necessary means to fulfill all righteousness during his lifetime, according to the flesh. Howbeit not all of Jesus' 33 years on earth were walked-out in the same way, apparently. There is, no doubt, a radical change in the life of Jesus after He was baptized at the age of 30 years old. Henceforth, this marked the beginning of Jesus' public ministry to represent, proclaim, and become the fulfillment of all righteousness in *unprecedented ways* and by *superior powers*, far exceeding all that was available in the Old Covenant. This Man – endowed with the Holy Spirit & heralded by God the Father – entered the mantle of New Covenant glory and became the stand-alone Author of a New Faith, a New Way, and a New Testament which would fulfill all the righteousness, promises, and prophecies of the Old Testament. Upon baptism and thereafter the Lord Jesus still fulfilled the Moral and Ceremonial Laws of the Old Testament but, mind you, it was in *unprecedented ways* which were not formerly engaged by Christ from birth until baptism. There is much to be said about this radical turning-point in the life of Jesus, but let it suffice the reader for now to understand the mystery of it all in parabolic language: “No man putteth a piece of New Cloth unto an Old Garment, for that which is put in to fill it up taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse. Neither do men put New Wine into Old Bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put New Wine into New Bottles, and both are preserved” (Matt. 9:16-17). This parabolic statement given by Jesus answers for the conduct which He exhibited during the three years of public ministry which led Him to The Cross (a life-span of Moral & Ceremonial Law fulfillments which we shall soon survey in great detail). Before studying the relevance of Jesus' *earthly ministry* we need to understand the grand scheme of redemption with respect to Jesus' *heavenly ministry*.

After being offered to God upon an earthly altar called The Cross, the scheme of redemption was not yet complete. No, rather, it had just begun! The death of Christ on The Cross was the first step in the grand scheme of salvation which was yet to be accomplished via a High Priest after the order of Melchisedec (Heb. 5:6) in a Heavenly Environment which included a Temple and all associated instruments for the performance of an unprecedented ceremony. When Jesus Christ was fastened to The Cross by nails as a propitiatory sacrifice, this was but the beginning of this ceremony. When Christ said, “It is finished” (John 19:30), the oppression and affliction of becoming a sacrifice was completely accomplished (“He was oppressed, and he was afflicted, and yet He opened not His mouth: He is brought as a Lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers is dumb, so He opened not His mouth”-Isa.53:7), but the ceremonial application of this blood-atonement must sprinkle the Throne of Heaven which resides inside of a Heavenly Temple (Lev. 16:14-15, Heb. 9:19-24, Rev. 7:15, 11:19). These things must proceed in Heaven after the similitude of the High Priest, Aaron, who dared not enter into the Holy Place of the earthly Tabernacle without “a young bullock for a sin-offering and a ram for a burnt-offering” (see Lev. 16:2-4). Even so, Christ, “by the sacrifice of Himself” (Heb. 10:26), was finally enabled to enter into “Heaven itself, now to appear in the Presence of God for us” (Heb. 10:24)! Finally enabled, I say, because theretofore a human body had never entered *such a place* to perform *such a ceremony* on behalf of the rest of condemned humanity! It was necessary for Jesus Christ to become a human that He might suffer and die, this is true, but also that He might be perfected and credentialed as a “**Merciful and Faithful High Priest**”!

“But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man. For it became him, for whom are all things, and by whom are all things, in bringing many sons unto glory, to make the captain of their salvation perfect through sufferings. For both he that sanctifieth and they who are sanctified are all of one: for which cause he is not ashamed to call them brethren, Saying, I will declare thy name unto my brethren, in the midst of the Church will I sing praise unto thee. And again, I will put my trust in him. And again, Behold I and the children which God hath given me. Forasmuch then as the children are partakers of flesh and blood, he also himself likewise took part of the same; that through death he might destroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil; And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime subject to bondage. For verily he took not on him the nature of angels; but he took on him the seed of Abraham. Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto his brethren, that he might be a **Merciful and Faithful High Priest** in things pertaining to God, to make reconciliation for the sins of

the people. For in that he himself hath suffered being tempted, he is able to succour them that are tempted.” – Hebrews 2:9-18

Upon being perfected and credentialed in this magnificent way, Jesus Christ assumed the role of a resurrected God-Man: “the Firstborn from the dead” (Col. 1:18, Rev. 1:5). “In 1 Co 15:20, Christ is called the first-fruits of them that slept; and here, the chief and first-born from the dead; he being the first that ever resumed the natural life, with the employment of all its functions, never more to enter the empire of death, after having died a natural death, and in such circumstances as precluded the possibility of deception” (Adam Clarke). He was raised from the dead on the third day (1 Cor. 15:4), He appeared unto his disciples and over 500 others over a space of 40 days (Acts 1:2-3), He spoke of the mysteries of the Kingdom of God in a glorified human body which still hungered and thirsted (Lk. 24:41-43, John 21:5-6, Acts 1:2-3), a body by which He ate and drank alongside his disciples just as other humans do (Acts 10:41), “until the day in which He was taken up”, scripture states (Acts 1:2). What day? The day of the Lord’s ascension into Heaven! Jesus Christ had theretofore been resurrected, but not ascended. Speaking of this, Christ disallowed Mary to touch him after she had just been wandering among the graveyard (a thing which would be improper and offensive, considering the circumstances of Jewish Law and, furthermore, the ceremonies the Lord was soon to perform in His human body; see John 20:17, Lev. 10:6-7, 21:10-12, Num. 19:16-22).

You see, my reader, while the body of the Lord Jesus was fixated on The Cross, the ceremony of salvation could not be accomplished. While Christ did reside among earth-dwellers after his resurrection, the ceremony could not be performed. He must – in human body – pass into the Heavens via the ascension (Heb. 4:1, Acts 1:2-11), enter the Gates beyond which a human body had never traversed (Ps. 24:7-10, Heb. 9:8), walk through the courts and into the Holy Place of the first and original Temple not made by human hands (Heb. 6:19-20, 8:2) – a Heavenly and Holy Place never before tread by the soles of human feet (1 Cor. 15:20-23, Acts 26:23, Rev. 1:5)! The ceremony of salvation that Christ was to perform on behalf of humanity was not located on earth, but in Heaven. According to scripture, it was necessary that a High Priest of an Eternal Priesthood called, the order of Melchisedec (Ps. 110:4, Heb. 5:6, 10, 7:1-21), enter into the Heavenly Courts of the Most Holy Temple to *sprinkle* the “heavenly things” with the blood of Jesus Christ, The Sacrifice (Heb. 9:19-24). Seeing that this was on behalf of mankind, this Priest and the Sacrifice must also be a Man... and until “the Lion of the Tribe of Judah” did prevail, humanity was left without the hope of redemption (Rev. 5:5)!

“the Way into the Holiest of all” – Heb. 9:8

After the Lord Jesus did prevail, He became “The Forerunner” behind which all humanity can follow. Positioned in Heaven right now in His human frame with its scars and all, “He ever liveth to make intercession” (Heb. 7:25), therefore because He “passed into the Heavens” ...so can we (Heb. 4:14-16)! Having such a High Priest over the House of God (Heb. 4:1, 10:21-22), redeemed humanity has “boldness to enter into The Holiest by the blood of Jesus” (Heb. 10:19, 9:8)! Having accomplished the full ceremony of salvation which was expected of Him in the Heavenly Arena (the reality of the typological similitude declared by the Old Testament Ceremonial Law; Col. 2:9-17, Heb. 8:1-6, 9:23-24), it was written that Jesus Christ did, last of all, sit down on the Right Hand of the Majesty on High (Heb. 1:3, 8:1, Php. 2:6-11). With the entire ceremony accomplished whereby mankind could be fully redeemed, the mode of redemption did thenceforth begin: *The Kingdom of God*. This mode of redemption began with the enthronement of Jesus Christ, the seed of David (a Human), as King and Lord of visible and invisible creation (Php. 2:9-11), soon to appear on earth yet again (Heb. 9:28, 2 Tim. 4:1, Rev. 19:11-16)! Upon this enthronement, *The Kingdom of God* began, and after this enthronement the Holy Ghost was poured out on the Day of Pentecost to mark the beginning of New Testament redemption on earth (Acts 2:33; i.e. *The Kingdom of God* on earth).

The Ceremony of Salvation

(1st) The Crucifixion – *The Earthly Altar* (John 3:12-18)

(2nd) The Resurrection – *The Human Body for a Priesthood & Kingship* (Heb. 2:9-18, Php. 2:9-11)

(3rd) The Ascension – *The Forerunning Redeemer & 2nd Adam* (Heb. 6:19-20, 1 Cor. 15:22-23, Rom. 5:12-21)

Firstly: *The Ceremonial Purging of the Heavenly Things* (Heb. 1:3, 9:23)

Secondarily: *The Final & Everlasting Enthronement* (Heb. 1:3, 8:1, Acts 2:33, Ezek. 34:23-24, 37:24-25, Hos. 3:5, Jer. 23:5, 30:9, 33:15)

The Old Testament passed away because it lacked *eternality* and *sufficiency*, specifically because its ceremonies were *earthly* instead of *heavenly* (for the *earthliness* and *carnality* of the OT see Heb. 9:9, 10:1-4, 22, Gal. 4:3, 9, Col. 2:20), but these *shadows* do declare and explain the attributes of NT *realities* (which are *heavenly* and *eternal*), *realities* which are unfathomable without their *shadows* (see Col. 2:9-17, Heb. 8:1-6, 9:23-24). When Moses ascended Mount Sinai to receive the edicts of Old Testament Ceremonial Law, he saw the Heavenly Temple/Tabernacle, Heavenly Altars, Heavenly Incense Censers, Heavenly Instruments, Fixtures, and Furniture, Heavenly Cherubims, and a Heavenly Ark/Throne, and upon seeing all of these things the Lord instructed Moses to manufacture an exact pattern (**shadow**) on earth. In reference to manufacturing and establishing an earthly shadow of the heavenly figures, the Lord said to Moses, “look that thou makest them after **their pattern**, which was shewed thee in the Mount” (Ex. 24:40). Moses saw the glorious and Heavenly Scenery in which Jesus Christ would eventually performed the ceremony of salvation on behalf of humanity, just as Aaron performed it on the Day of Atonement (Lev. 16). Speaking on this wise, the writer of Hebrews affirmed,

“Now of the things which we have spoken this is the sum: We have such an High Priest, who is set on the right hand of the Throne of the Majesty in the Heavens; A Minister of the Sanctuary, and of the True Tabernacle, which the Lord pitched, and not man. For every high Priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore it is of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer. For if He were on earth, he should not be a Priest, seeing that there are Priests that offer gifts according to the Law: Who serve unto **the example and shadow of Heavenly Things**, as Moses **was admonished** of God when he was about to make the Tabernacle: for, **See**, saith He, **that thou make all things according to the pattern shewed to thee in the mount.**” – Hebrews 8:1-5

This passage confirms the purpose of the Law in comparison to the Heavenly Things whereabouts the Lord Jesus does now Minister. This is, yet again, confirmed by the writer of Hebrews in another place, saying, “For the Law **having a shadow of good things to come**, and **not the very image of the things**, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect” (Heb. 10:1). Yet again, in Hebrews 9:9, the word “**figure**” is used exactly as the word “**shadow**” has been cited and used:

“While **the first Tabernacle** was yet standing: which was **a figure** [*a shadow*] for the time then present, in which were offered both gifts and sacrifices, that could not make him that did the service perfect, as pertaining to the conscience; which stood only in meats and drinks, and diverse washings, and carnal ordinances, imposed on them until the time of reformation. But Christ being come an High Priest of good things to come, by **a Greater and More Perfect Tabernacle**, not made with hands, that is to say, **not of this building**; Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by His own blood he entered in once into **the Holy Place**, having obtained eternal redemption for us. For if the blood of bulls and of goats, and the ashes of an heifer sprinkling the unclean, sanctifieth the purifying of flesh: How much more shall the blood of Christ, who through the eternal Spirit offered Himself without spot to God, purge your conscience from dead works to serve the Living God.” – Heb. 9:8-14

All this being affirmed and confirmed, let us understand that the Old Testament is a Covenant agreement between God and man via **earthly shadow** – shadows which were passing away – but the New Testament is an agreement between God and man via the **heavenly realities** (the substance that the earthly shadows declared). The difference between the two is emphasized in one point, foremost of all: that which is **earthly** is by essence, passing away, but that which is **heavenly** is by essence, eternal and undying. Hebrews chapters 7-9 are devoted to make plain this glorious attribute of the New Covenant, that its eternality is the victory of the “reformation” (Heb. 9:10). That now Christ, who is our

Perfection (Heb. 10:14), Sacrifice (Heb. 10:12), Intercessor (Heb. 7:25), Priest (Heb. 5:6), and King (Heb. 1:8; Lk. 1:33), is eternal in His Person and His Work, and therefore the Covenant agreement is eternal.

An Earthly Environment	A Heavenly Environment
<u>Old Testament</u>	<u>New Testament</u>
Inferior Covenant	“A Better Covenant” – Heb. 8:6
Inferior Testament	“A Better Testament” – Heb. 7:22
Inferior Promises	“Upon Better Promises” – Heb. 8:6
Inferior Hope	“A Better Hope” – Heb. 7:19
Inferior Sacrifices	“Better Sacrifices” – Heb. 9:23
Inferior Ministers	“A More Excellent Ministry” – Heb. 8:6
Inferior Tabernacle	“The True Tabernacle” – Heb. 8:2
A Lesser and Imperfect Tabernacle	“A Greater and More Perfect Tabernacle” – Heb. 9:11
Inferior “Worldly Sanctuary” – Heb. 9:1	“The Sanctuary...which the Lord pitched, and not man” – Heb. 8:2
Earthly Things	“Heavenly Things” – Heb. 9:23
Something Inferior	“some Better Thing for us” – Heb. 11:40

The Old Testament is found “faulty” (Heb. 8:7-8) for all the reasons above, and more - every reason centering around the **earthliness** and **carnality** of the Old Testament. The “Law made nothing perfect” (Heb. 7:19) because it was a “**carnal** commandment” (Heb. 7:16) of “**weakness** and **un-profitableness**” (Heb. 7:18; Note: compare this passage with Eph. 2:15, Gal. 4:3, 9, Col. 2:20, Heb. 8:1-5, 10:1). The “heavenly calling” (Heb. 3:1) and heavenly commandments given by a Testator who is a Heavenly Man, effectually reforms the former Law by a “disannulling of the commandment” given in the Old Covenant (Heb. 7:18). Christ is the eternal Priest after the order of Melchisedec, and with this change of “Priesthood” there must be “a change also of the Law” (Heb. 7:12).

The shadows that were pastime practices in the Old Testament were *disannulled* “for the weakness and the unprofitableness thereof”, for they were **temporary**, **physical**, or “**carnal** commandments” (Heb. 7:16, 18). These carnal/earthly ordinances were needed for men to “*draw nigh to God*”, but they were a rigorous **bondage** to complete in the fear of God, at the danger of death, and in the solemnity of carefulness (Heb. 7:19). These ordinances, which served as prerequisites for redeemed humanity to *draw near to God* via the Tabernacle/Temple courts, were fittingly called by Paul, “**bondage** under **the elements** of the world” (Gal. 4:3). This “**bondage**” was, in another place, called “**the yoke of bondage**” (Gal. 5:1). These earthly things said to be of “weak and beggarly elements” are in other words just mere shadows of the heavenly realities to come.

All these things served as a yoke of bondage to the Israelites making the process of *drawing near* to God difficult, meticulous, and rigorous, for it was only after an Israelite had completed all ceremonial prerequisites that he could have confidence to *draw near* to God without the danger of DEATH. Freedom from this yoke would therefore be described as a liberty to *draw near* to God without the requirements of **carnal**, **physical**, or **earthly** ordinances (Gal. 4:3)... right? Indeed! Thus, the writer of Hebrews declares the rising of another Priest for a greater Priesthood to perform a more glorious and perfecting ceremony of salvation via the Heavenly Things!

“If therefore **perfection** were by The Levitical Priesthood, (for under it the people received the Law,) what further need was there that another Priest should rise after The Order of Melchisedec, and not be called after The Order of Aaron? For the Priesthood being **changed**, there is made **of necessity a change also of the Law**. For he of whom these things are spoken pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the altar. For it is evident that our Lord sprang out of Juda; of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning Priesthood. And it is yet far more evident: for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another Priest, who is made, not after the Law of a

carnal commandment, but after THE POWER OF AN ENDLESS LIFE. For He testifieth, 'Thou art a Priest for ever after The Order of Melchizidec. For there is verily a *disannulling* of the commandment going before for the **weakness** and **unprofitableness** thereof. For the Law *made nothing perfect*, but the bringing in of a better hope did; **by the which we draw nigh unto God.**" – Heb. 7:15-19

In and through the Son of God, WE ARE SAFE! As Old Testament Israel cared for earthly ordinances without which they dare not draw near, we look unto the Jesus with boldness and draw near with freedom! Where Old Testament Israel was fastened in the yoke of earthly things which could never save, we are basking in a heavenly reality which can effectually and everlastingly save! Their focus, which was one of multifaceted and innumerable earthly ordinances, was BONDAGE, but our freedom, which is an all-out-gaze upon Jesus Christ's perfect fulfillment of all things, is FREEDOM! Very specifically speaking, my reader, this freedom was a liberty to *draw near* to God without any reference to any obstacle of any earthly sort! This removal of redeemed humanity from the Old Testament Ceremonial Law was a removal of humanity from earthly things, and this redemption of humanity according to the Testament made possible by a Heavenly Man, is an ushering-in of humanity into the Heavenly Things! It behooves earthly men to be in bondage to earthly things, they are bound thereto! But if earthly men die to themselves and the world (Gal. 2:20, 6:14), and are born into the Family of a Heavenly Man ("*not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God*")-John 1:13), then these formerly earthly men are freed from the Old Testament Law and released into otherworldly glories of heavenly consecration! Speaking on this wise, it was written,

"Know ye not, brethren, (for I speak to them that know the Law,) how that the Law hath dominion over a man as long as he liveth? For the woman which hath an husband is bound by the Law to her husband so long as he liveth; but if the husband be dead, she is loosed from the Law of her husband. So then if, while her husband liveth, she be married to another man, she shall be called an adulteress: but if her husband be dead, she is **free from that Law**; so that she is no adulteress, though she be married to another man. Wherefore, my brethren, ye also **are become dead to the Law by the body of Christ**; that ye should be married to Another, even to Him Who is raised from the dead, that we should bring forth fruit unto God." – Romans 7:1-4

"Wherefore **if ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world**, why, **as though living in the world**, are ye **subject to ordinances** (touch not; taste not; handle not;)" - Col. 2:20-21

Romans 7:4 spoke of a marriage/union unto Christ who was risen from the dead. This Jesus has become our Husband, High Priest, and King, and the ceremonies by which He attained this honor were "not after the Law of a carnal commandment, but after the power of an endless life" (Heb. 7:16), namely because He was risen from the dead! Only death can Lawfully separate us from earthly bondage and liberate us into the substance of heavenly realities (Romans 7:1-4, Hebrews 7:16, 8:1-5, Col. 2:17), but upon this liberation we are joined unto the Him whose life is everlasting in Heavenly reality – therefore we, through Him, by ceremony, live forever ("*And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He that hath the Son hath life; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life.*" – 1Jn.5:11-12)! Hallelujah!

The Priesthood of Christ was sworn in by an oath, which the scripture states, emphasizes how He is a surety for a better Testament... but why? Because the oath (Heb. 7:21) signifies that He is an everlasting Man ("He ever liveth to make intercession for them"-Heb. 7:25), and therefore His Priesthood is not as the *nominal*, *earthly*, and *meager* ones in the Old Covenant (comparatively speaking; see 2 Cor. 3:10-11). For this reason Christ's is in an "unchangeable Priesthood" (Heb. 7:24), specifically because, shockingly, He is caught up in the "Heavenly things" (Heb. 9:23-24)! Christ is "consecrated" -- "*there*" -- behind the "veil" of Heaven (Heb. 6:19-20), standing in office as a High Priest "for evermore" (Heb. 7:28)! This, my reader, is so much greater and better a Covenant than that which is earthly! Of necessity according to The Priestly Order, and of necessity according to the Man, and of necessity according to the arena of His Ministerial Office – Jesus Christ "abideth a Priest continually" (Heb. 7:3)!

Abolishment, "in this respect" – 2 Cor. 3:10

The Old Covenant did have glory because God made it glorious (“*which glory was to be done away*”-2Cor.3:7), but *in comparison* to the glory of the New Covenant it had no glory at all (2 Cor. 3:10-11)! It existed to shadow and point-toward a greater and more glorious reality which would never be done away with! Thus when this greater and more glorious reality arrived and began its operation of redemption, the lesser was “abolished” from its operation of redemption by reason of the shadow-to-reality transition of Law-fulfillments. The lesser is “done away” with because of the glory which excelleth beyond it; “*For even that which was made glorious had no glory **in this respect**, by reason of the glory that excelleth. For if that which is done away was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious*” (2 Cor. 3:10-11). Note: this *abolishment* was an expiration by reason of the Law-fulfillments of a greater reality, it was not a *destruction* of all Law-fulfillments as some wrongfully suppose; as the Lord Jesus did solemnly testify, saying, “I am not come to *destroy* the Law, or the prophets: I am not come to *destroy*, but to *fulfill*” (Matt. 5:17), even so it is... now and forever. Amen.

The Disannulment of the Old Testament Clean & Unclean Laws

“a *disannulling* of the commandment” – Heb. 7:18

“a *change* also of the Law” – Heb. 7:12

The writer of Hebrews used the word *disannul* and *change* when speaking of diverse aspects of Old Testament Ceremonial Law which are no longer binding to New Testament Christians. There is no verse that more clearly expresses the *disannulment* of Old Testament Clean & Unclean Laws, but that when God said to Peter, “What God hath **cleansed**, that call not thou **common** [or unclean]” (Acts 10:15). Upon receiving this word from God via a trance Peter later understood its meaning. Being compelled by the Spirit of God to go to the house of one called Cornelius, a Gentile centurion, Peter experienced an unforeseen parallel to John the Baptist’s baptism. Peter said, “Then remembered I the word of the Lord, how that He said, John indeed baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost” (Acts. 11:16). What happened?

Upon entering Cornelius’ house Peter “found many that were come together” (Acts. 10:27). Like Cornelius, they were all **Gentiles**... but Peter was a **Jew**. In any other occasion Peter would have denied *such an audience*. He would have refused to *enter into the house* of Cornelius or *keep company* with anyone therein. This is because, according to the Law, **the Gentiles** don’t belong in Israel. When God first gave the Israelites the Promised Land, He forbade **the cohabitation** of Israel and Gentile Nations. On this vein, God demanded the total annihilation of all Gentiles which abode in the Promised Land (Ex. 23:20-33, 34:11-14, Lev. 18:24-30, 20:22-27, Num. 33:51-56, Deut. 7:1-6, 16-19, 23-26, 12:1-4, 29-32, 18:9-14, 20:16-18, 23:1-17, Josh. 23:2-16, Judges 2:2-3). God was intent upon eradicating from the Land of Israel every *person*, *tradition*, and *custom* of all Gentile peoples that He might, in turn, preserve Israel as a **holy** and **set-apart** people unto Himself (“*I am the LORD your God, which have **separated** you from other people*”-Lev. 20:24). According to God’s Law the Gentiles were **unclean**; their religion, way of life, culture, customs, manners, and traditions made them so to be (Lev. 18:24-30, 20:22-27). According to God’s Law the Israelites were **cleansed** and commanded to **remain clean & holy**: in clothing (Deut. 22:5, 11-12), farming (Deut. 22:9-10), eating (Lev. 20:25), taxing (Ex. 22:25, Lev. 25:36-37, Deut. 23:19), living (Ps. 34:12-16, Deut. 32:39), dying (i.e. funeral ceremonies: Num. 19:16-18), and even in the excrement of their waste (Deut. 23:12-14), to name a few. In Israel every man (Prov. 5:21, 19:16), household (Prov. 3:32-35, 12:17), city (Eccl. 7:19, Prov. 11:11, 29:8, Deut. 28:3, 16), and province (Eccl. 5:8), and the entirety of the Land and Nation (Prov. 2:20-22, 10:27, 30) belonged immediately and especially to God; therefore the Gentiles were considered aliens, strangers, and enemies to the progress and prosperity to religion and society.

With all of this in Peter’s mind as he entered into the house and company of Cornelius’ family and friends, the 6 Jews who went with him did follow on with discomfort and reservation, to say the least (Acts 11:12). Seeing that both Peter and the Gentiles knew that this **mingling of company** was against Jewish Law, Peter was compelled to give an explanation for his actions.

“And he said unto them, Ye know how that it is **an unLawful thing** for a man that is a *Jew* to **keep company**, or **come unto one of another nation**; but God hath shewed me that I SHOULD NOT call *any man* **common** or **unclean**. Therefore **came I unto you** without gainsaying, as soon as I was sent for...” – Acts 10:28-29

Peter was not misunderstanding Jewish Law here. According to the aforementioned scriptures this statement was not a residue of Pharisaical and heretical thinking carried over in the life of Peter from the time he sat under the anti-biblical Pharisaical traditions in 1st century Judaism. You see, my reader, the Nation of Israel was not meant to be like Gentile Nations, according to the Law (Deut. 14:2). You must see the significance of this! There was an inseparable mingling of state and citizen affairs in Israel, namely because - Israel was **holy** unto God! The Land itself was **holy**! If this can be said of *the Land* then what can be said of *the people*? What can be expected of the people who inhabit and populate the Land of Israel? You see, my reader? Because the Land of Israel is **holy** this means that Israel is unlike any other Nation because state and citizen affairs were *not secular* but *religious*. Matters of state were matters of religion. According to the Law, the **branches of society** and **civilization in Israel** (every congregation held anywhere with any vocation in all of Israel) were, more specifically, **branches of Church Ministry**. Yes! And the congregants therein were **Church Ministers**! Therefore in Israel, the government and its citizens, along with the soldiers of war (Deut. 23:9-14, 28:7), the ingathering harvesters of the farm (Ex. 23:16, 34:22, Deut. 28:4-6, 10-13), the marital compatibility of individuals (Neh. 13:1-3), all things that appertain to financial and economic prosperity or concourse (Deut. 28:4-6, 10-13), or likewise, family relationships and fruitfulness (Deut. 28:4-6, 10-13)... all persons of every vocation, or, “the children of Israel” as a people, had to be **separated** from all other peoples (exempting Lawful converts from strange peoples who became Jews)---the Land & people were **holy**!

Closely considering what scriptures were addressed heretofore, how the Law forbade the very presence of Gentiles and sinners in Israel (Num. 15:29-31), the unLawful situation of a Gentile-ruled 1st century Israel made for a difficult environment for those who attempted to keep the Law in good conscience (as much as they were able to given the circumstances). The cohabitating Gentiles affected the cleanliness of daily life, the traffic of business, public commerce, and more. This is because when *something* or *someone* was **unclean**, their **uncleanness** did not suddenly vanish away (it lasted for a specific time period only to be *cleansed* by a specific regiment of *ceremonial purification*). The entire duration in which someone was **unclean** and the person was trafficking society (instead of remaining in isolation as the Law commanded), *whatever* or *whoever* the man TOUCHED did also become **unclean**, and also whoever TOUCHED that *object* or *person* which was just made **unclean** did also become **unclean**. Speaking of this, it was written, “whatsoever the **unclean** person TOUCHETH shall be **unclean**; and the soul that TOUCHETH it shall be **unclean** until even” (Num. 19:22). The radical advancement of **uncleanness** spreading throughout ALL OF SOCIETY was not only a potential but a likelihood that every good-conscience Jew had to reckon with as he faced the day. This would radically change the behavior pattern of good conscience Jews as they undertook the responsibility of their daily affairs or public commerce.

“But the man that shall be **unclean**, and **SHALL NOT purify** himself, **that soul shall be cut off from among the congregation**, because he hath **defiled the Sanctuary of the LORD**: the **water of separation** hath not been **sprinkled** upon him; he is **unclean**. And it shall be a perpetual statute unto them, that he that **sprinkleth the water of separation** shall **wash** his clothes; and he that TOUCHETH the **water of separation** shall be **unclean** until even. And WHATSOEVER the **unclean person** TOUCHETH shall be **unclean**; and THE SOUL that TOUCHETH it shall be **unclean** until even.” – Numbers 19:20-22

According to the Law, the **clean** and **unclean** was a matter of life and death! God said, “**that soul shall be cut off from among the congregation**”! Israelites were thereby energized to keep the Law at all costs (“*I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live*”-Deut. 30:19). Put yourself in their shoes, my reader. What would you do? Israelites would be motivated to keep in memory the aforementioned Laws to avoid any circumstance wherein they might become unclean; and when faced with the decisions of public commerce and neighborly behavior this proved difficult. With unLawful methods of killing (“*things strangled*”) and cooking (“*blood*”), and with foods sacrificed and dedicated to idols infiltrating the grocery market on every side – the Land was full of the “pollutions of idols” (Acts. 15:20, 29), as Peter called them! Yes, and the Land was crawling with the people of idolatry:

the **unclean** and **uncircumcised Gentiles**! With all the aforementioned means of uncleanness included, the Land was crawling with unconfined and unidentified Gentile women on menstrual cycles (Lev. 15:19-31), unidentified Gentile men defiled by their seed of copulation (Lev. 15:16-18), and unidentified and identifiable diseased men of every race oozing with defiling liquids (i.e. leprosy and running issues; Lev. 14:1-57, 15:1-15). Shockingly, each unclean person was leaving unidentifiable trails of uncleanness every place they went: on every garment, bed, chair, saddle, or any object for that matter, all over the City and in innumerable houses therein, uncleanness pervaded (Lev. 15:1-15, Num. 19:22)! Given the circumstances, it is understandable why Jews did not *keep company* with or *enter the houses of Gentiles*. Keeping company with Gentiles would involve touching them, and entering into Gentile homes would involve touching the objects which do touch them.

Territorial Cleaness

I say again, it is no wonder that Israelites were strongly apprehensive to ever enter a Gentile man's household! Think of it, my reader, Israel was intended to be **territorially clean**, according to the Law. All things outside of Israel were considered **territorially unclean**, the Gentile people included (exempting Lawful converts). The concept of **territorial uncleanness** was introduced to Israel by the Law and enforced among Israel through the power of Divine-anger all throughout biblical history. For example, during Israelite conquests of war in The Promised Land (the Land of Canaan) everything that breathed was slaughtered; this means that no person or animal was salvageable from the curse of **territorial uncleanness** (Deut. 20:16-18). During other conquests of war against non-Canaanite Cities or Nations, all males were slain and nothing more; this means that, circumstances permitting, everyone and everything else was salvageable from **territorial uncleanness** (Deut. 20:10-15). Howbeit let us remember, the salvageable persons and objects from these Cities or Nations needed to undergo a **cleansing** ceremony of **purification** before entering the Camp or territory of Israel (**a clean place**). Ceremonial instructions of purification were specified categorically according to what the object was: a person (Num. 31:19), an imperishable object (Num. 31:21-24), or a perishable object (Num. 31:21-24). All these things existed because the Land of Israel – *Itself* – was meant to be **a clean place**. When and if the Land of Israel was defiled it happened via unlawful bloodshed (Num. 35:33, Deut. 21:23), sexual sin (Deut. 24:4), idolatry (Jer. 3:9, 16:18, Ezek. 36:17), and all manner of other sin (Jer. 2:7, Ezek. 22:24, Lev. 18:25, 27).

All of these specifications were decreed by God's Law to give the Israelite Land and people a God-given identity; and demonstrations of Divine-fury were performed so that among common Israelites it would be an unforgettable identity! The concept of **territorial uncleanness** was enforced with the power of Divine-fury in several different historical events recorded in the Old Testament. Each of the following instances were relevant memories to any good-conscience Jew who avoided the company and households of Gentiles in the 1st century: when Achan was defiled by accursed objects and Israel became unsanctified thereby ("*Achan the son of Zerah, and the silver, and the garment, and the wedge of gold, and his sons, and his daughters, and his oxen, and his asses, and his sheep, and his tent, and all that he had...Israel stoned...and burned*"; see Josh 7:13-15, 24-25), when the Korah-led rebellion was punished by God ("*the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed them up, and their houses, and all the men that appertained unto Korah, and all their goods. They, and all that appertained to them, went down alive into the pit...*"-Num. 16:32-33), and when Jericho was territorially cursed and territorially unclean except Rahab ("*Joshua saved Rahab the harlot alive, and her father's household, and all that she had*"-Josh.6:25; see Josh. 6:17-19). Remembering these historical events, can you imagine how a good-conscience Jew would journey about the Land of 1st century Israel as it was crawling with such abominations!? Echoing in Jewish memory would be the words of Moses, God, and Joshua, who said,

“And he spake unto the congregation, saying, **Depart**, I pray you, **from the tents** of these wicked men, and TOUCH **nothing of theirs**, lest ye be consumed in all their sins.” – Numbers 16:26

“Up, **sanctify** the people, and say, **Sanctify** yourselves against to morrow: for thus saith the LORD God of Israel, There is **an accursed thing in the midst** of thee, O Israel: thou canst not stand before thine enemies, until ye **take away the accursed thing from among you**.” – Joshua 7:13

“he that is taken with **the accursed thing** shall be burnt with fire, **he** and **all that he hath**: because he hath transgressed the Covenant of the LORD, and because he hath **wrought folly in Israel**” Josh 7:15

Associated with these historical events were foreseeable and theoretical events of idolatry or other sorts, addressed by the Law. For example if there was an outbreak of idolatry in an Israelite city so that it was given over to idol worship, the Law commanded, “**smite the inhabitants...destroying it utterly, and all that is therein, and the cattle thereof...gather all the spoil of it into the midst of the street thereof...burn with fire the city and all the spoil thereof every whit**” (Deut. 13:15-16). Such a generation-to-generation command given by God was terrifyingly relevant to any Jew who assayed to enter the house of a 1st century Gentile man in Israel. Dare he be caught by God in the company of intruding rebels in God’s Holy Land!? It would be moral apostasy for a good-conscience Jew to fearlessly waltz into Gentile households or engage in Gentile companionship.

These Laws were binding upon the most fundamental aspects of life and religion in biblical Judaism. For example when keeping the Passover, God said, “Seven days shall there be **no leaven in your houses**” (Ex. 12:19), “there shall **no leavened bread** be seen **with thee**, neither shall there be **leaven** seen with thee **in all thy quarters**” (Ex. 13:7). In the case of a person’s death, it was written, “*when a man dieth in a tent: all that come into the tent, and all that is in the tent, shall be **unclean seven days***” (Num. 19:14). These stand as relevant examples to the subject at hand, this is for sure, but the most notable example exists in the forms of uncleanness which Peter called, “pollutions of idols” (Acts. 15:20, 29). In the theoretical City of Israel which turned to idolatry, nothing was spared (no life or object; see Deut. 13:15-16)! Even the precious metals of Jericho were salvageable (Josh. 7:19)... but not for a backslidden City of Israel – to them belonged the greater sin! Therefore, my reader, revisit the aforementioned question: dare an Israelite be caught in the *company* or *household* of idolaters? The common Gentile household would be decorated with and polluted by rampant idolatry! And God, foremost of all, was determined to destroy these objects of His jealousy! – Any true Jew would have been minded likewise.

“If thou shalt hear say in one of thy Cities, which the LORD thy God hath given thee to dwell there, saying, Certain men, the children of Belial, are gone out from **among you**, and have withdrawn the inhabitants of **their City**, saying, Let us go and serve other gods, which ye have not known; Then shalt thou enquire, and make search, and ask diligently; and, behold, if it be truth, and the thing certain, that such abomination is wrought **among you**; Thou shalt surely **smite the inhabitants of that City** with the edge of the sword, **destroying it utterly, and all that is therein, and the cattle thereof, with the edge of the sword. And thou shalt gather all the spoil of it into the midst of the street thereof, and shalt burn with fire the City, and all the spoil thereof every whit, for the LORD thy God: and it shall be an heap for ever; it shall not be built again. And there shall cleave nought of the cursed thing to **thine hand**: that the LORD may turn from the fierceness of his anger, and shew thee mercy, and have compassion upon thee, and multiply thee, as he hath sworn unto thy fathers; When thou shalt hearken to the voice of the LORD thy God, to keep all his commandments which I command thee this day, to do that which is right in the eyes of the LORD thy God.” – Deut. 13:12-18**

Idols polluted and defiled peoples (Deut. 13:12-18), territories (Deut. 13:12-18), and objects (Deut. 13:12-18). Backslidden Israelite people or Cities suffered the most severe woes of separation as you can see, my reader... nothing is left salvageable! When the Law was reversed back to uncleanness in the Land, woe to the inhabitants of Israel! Before the Law was ever established (like I mentioned before), precious metals were able to be salvaged from the territory of Jericho, but not from the idols found within Jericho or anywhere else! All gold or silver found on every idol found anywhere was an utter abomination to God! The Lord explicitly commanded,

“The **graven images** of their gods shall ye **burn with fire**: thou shalt not desire **the silver or gold that is on them, nor take it unto thee**, lest thou be **snared** therein: for it is **an abomination** to the LORD thy God. Neither shalt thou **bring an abomination into thine House**, lest thou be **a cursed thing like it**: but thou shalt **utterly detest it**, and thou shalt **utterly abhor it**; for it is **a cursed thing**.” – Deut. 7:25-26

Do you see how God said, “*thine House*”! With such commandments given by God of this sort – throbbing with jealous fury against idol worshippers, idol materials, idol habitations, and idol households – what would a good-conscience 1st century Jew be thinking about when and if he entered **the Household** of a Holy-Land-intruding and idolatry-polluting Gentile? Aye, the terror! Could the wrath of God be so kindled in that hour that then, in any present 1st century circumstance, the mind of God would sound the alarm, “Touch nothing of theirs” (Num. 16:26)!? It may be... but one thing is for sure at any given time: “**The curse** of the LORD is in **the House** of the wicked: but he blesseth **the Habitation** of the just” (-Prov. 3:33). Rightly did Peter say to the company of Gentiles in Cornelius’ House,

“Ye know how that it is **an unLawful thing** for a man that is *a Jew* to **keep company**, or **come unto** *one of another nation*; but God hath shewed me that I SHOULD NOT call *any man* **common** or **unclean**. Therefore **came I unto you** without gainsaying, as soon as I was sent for...” – Acts 10:28-29

My reader, this is “a *disannulling* of the commandment” (Heb. 7:18) and “a *change* also of the Law” (Heb. 7:12)! When Peter came back from Cornelius’ House he was compelled to give an answer for his seemingly unLawful behavior. “Thou wentest in to men uncircumcised, and didst eat with them” (Acts 11:3), was the contention of the believing Jews (Christians) when they heard that Peter entered the house of Cornelius and ate with him. As Peter expounded to the Jewish Christians the details of what had happened from beginning to end (Acts 11:1-18), Peter was confident that the events which transpired speak for themselves. The event – itself – settles the argument. As Peter began to rehearse everything up to the point where he was about to open his mouth and preach to the Gentiles, it is written,

“And as I began to speak, the Holy Ghost fell on them, as on us at the beginning. Then remembered I the word of the Lord, how that He said, John indeed **baptized with water**; but ye shall be **baptized with the Holy Ghost**. Forasmuch then as God gave them the like gift as He did unto us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ; what was I, that I could withstand God? When they heard these things, they held their peace, and glorified God, saying, Then hath God also to the Gentiles granted repentance unto life.” – Acts 11:15-18

Peter concluded, “Can any man **forbid water**, that these should not be baptized, which have **received the Holy Ghost** as well as we? And he commanded them to be baptized in the Name of the Lord” (Acts 10:47-48). This is what it meant to Peter, when God said, “What God hath **cleansed**, that call not thou **common**” (Acts 10:15). This event signaled to the Jewish Christians that God was pleased to make Gentiles Christians by the very same means whereby they were made clean; “*the Jew first, and also to the Gentile*” (Rom. 2:10)! Peter recalled how **the Jews**, thronging by multitudes, went unto John for the Baptism of repentance for the remission of sins – a baptism of water – but how, shockingly, this was but a foreshadow of what was about to come! Peter understood the connection between the three year earthly ministry of Jesus Christ unto Israel in comparison to what was unfolding then, beginning with Cornelius, unto the Gentiles – that as salvation began among Israel in Jesus’ three year earthly ministry and culminated in the Day of Pentecost outpouring, even so, likewise, salvation must continue beyond the Jews and unto the Gentiles throughout all the world in THE VERY SAME WAY! Peter recalled the word, “ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost”. Peter remembered the supremacy of Jesus Christ’s ministry above John the Baptist’s ministry and the supremacy of Jesus’ baptizing powers above John’s baptizing powers! What dawned upon Peter cannot be fully understood until we, like Peter, understand the three year earthly ministry of Jesus Christ in relationship to John the Baptist’s ministry, with all associating controversies in mind.

CHAPTER #19

Matthew's Cohesive Argument

that Jesus of Nazareth was and is the Messiah

The Messiah: The Fulfillment of the Moral and Ceremonial Law Walking in Bodily Form, on Earth and in Heaven

Section #1: An Introduction: Verified, Born, Hunted, Credentialed, & Distinct

Section #2: What His Deeds Preached: A Message, Ministry, and Person Defended & Confirmed!

Section #3: The Accolades of a Reformer during "The Time of Reformation"

An Introduction: Verified, Born, Hunted, Credentialed, & Distinct

“And *the Word* was made flesh, and dwelt among us...” – John 1:14

“For *all the promises* of God in Him are yea, and in Him Amen...” – 2 Cor. 1:20

To preach the gospel in our generation, one might preach the last 3 Chapters of the Gospel of Matthew. This may be sufficient, in some regard, for the mind of a heathen man...but not for a Jew. For a 1st century Jew to hear and understand the Gospel he would need to hear it preached just as Matthew wrote it Chapters 1 through 28 in full! The mind of a Jew would be utterly abhorrent to and unprepared for the death, burial, and resurrection of Jesus, if he was not first prepared by Matthew Chapters 1 through 25. The entire book of Matthew is, “The Gospel of Matthew”! Therein, from beginning to end, is one cohesive and scriptural argument which addresses every major controversy against Jesus Christ, refutes every major heresy of 1st century Judaism, confirms every event and doctrine relevant to the Gospel with infallible accuracy, to the end that a Jew might understand why and how Jesus of Nazareth is indisputably and unquestionably the long-looked-for Messiah promised to the Jews. What looks like, to a Gentile, an assortment of historical events randomly collected and chronicled is, to a Jew, a carefully thought-out and systematic argument Divinely inspired by God the Holy Ghost. The details and implications of the historical events accounted by Matthew (what Jesus said and did) were framed in perfect order and sharpness to unloose the common Jew from captivity and blind-servitude to the ignorance and dead religion of 1st century Judaism. All this being said, my reader, let us brace ourselves; we, being Gentiles, have need of some reflection and consideration as we read. What is unnoticeable and nearly unrecognizable to a Gentile’s mind is glaringly obvious to a Law-abiding Jew. Therefore if we are going to understand The Gospel of Matthew we need to understand the thought-process of a 1st century Law-abiding Jew (the audience to whom he wrote), and to understand this we must understand the Law.

In this masterful piece of Divine-argument the writer of The Gospel of Matthew cites five historical facts which support and verify Jesus Christ as the Messiah according to Old Testament prophecy. (#1) Verified by the Genealogical Record, (#2) How He was Born, (#3) Where He Was Born, (#4) The Calamity Surrounding His Birth, and (#5) Where He Grew Up.

1:1-17 → **Verified by the Genealogical Record:** The genealogical proof that Jesus is the Son of David, an heir to the Throne according to the flesh.

1:18-25 → **How He Was Born:** The Virgin Birth (1:23, Isa. 7:14) and the name of the child – JESUS, which means “Savior”, “for He shall save His people from their sins” (1:21).

2:1-12 → **Where He was Born:** The predestinated circumstances which forced the birth of the child in Bethlehem (2:6, Micah 5:2), and the subsequent and notorious visit of the Magi.

2:13-18 → **The Calamity Surrounding His Birth:** Herod’s fury, Jesus’ flight to Egypt (2:15, Hosea 11:1), and the subsequent slaughter of the newborns (2:18, Jer. 31:15); via parallelism, a slaughter which suggests the situation in which Moses (the deliverer of Israel from bondage and a typological forerunner of Christ –Deut. 18:15) was born into and scarcely escaped.

2:19-23 → **Where He Grew Up:** The death of Herod and the subsequent traveling of the family to Nazareth to take residence there (2:23, Num. 6, Isa. 11:1): “He shall be called a Nazarene”.

Being guided by inspiration, Matthew details the credentials provided by differing agents chosen by God to verify Jesus’ true identity in the visible and invisible world: (#1) The Greatest of the Prophets, (#2) Two Persons of the Trinity, and (#3) The Devil.

3:1-12 → **Credentialed by John the Baptist:** The Cry in the wilderness, John the Baptist (3:3, Isa. 40:3), declaring the imminent end of Judaism if no fruits of repentance were found (3:10-12). Jesus Christ, the Messiah, is the Judaism-Changer – upon His arrival, which was imminent, Judaism will never be the same! John said, “*He shall baptize you WITH THE HOLY GHOST, and with fire: Whose fan is in His hand, and He will thoroughly **purge** His floor, and **gather** His wheat into the garner; but He will **burn** up the chaff with unquenchable fire*” (Matt. 3:12)! For Jews, this is a staggering proclamation!

3:13-17 → **Credentialed by the Trinity:** An unprecedented confirmation and inaugural declaration wherein Jesus was heralded, “This is My beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased”, by God the Father’s voice from Heaven (3:16-17) and, secondarily, the endowing presence of God the Holy Ghost was descending upon Jesus to rest upon Him henceforth like a mantle (Note: the mantle was for the ministry!). For the first time in human history all Three Persons of the Trinity were *sensibly present* and *sensibly distinct* One from Another at *one single location* for a testimony to mankind!

4:1-17 → **Credentialed by the Devil:** The Devil bears witness of the undeniable truth that Jesus is “the Son of God” (4:3), and after his enticements were withstood, Christ began His ministry in the Land of Zebulun according to the prophecy (4:15-16, Isa. 9:1-2). You may wonder the veracity of this credential, my reader. You may be thinking, “How can one be credentialed by the Devil seeing that he is the father of lies?” To hold all scripture in balance we must consider, *firstly*, the significance of a personal visitation by the devil. Moreover, *secondarily*, we must look at the manner and content by which the devil tempted Jesus of Nazareth. Think of it, my reader. Why would the devil be visiting Jesus of Nazareth unless, like Job, He was the most righteous man on earth in His time? In the scenery of celestial glory this mysterious controversy arose between God Almighty and the Devil concerning Job; “*And the LORD said unto Satan, Hast thou considered My servant Job, that there is none like Him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and escheweth evil*” (Job 1:8)? Upon this statement, the trial of Job’s life began... a trial which Job failed to endure. But, to the Jesus’ credit, where Job failed Jesus of Nazareth prevailed! Furthermore, my reader, look at the content of the Devil’s temptations to Jesus. These are not ordinary temptations undergone by ordinary human beings! The Devil tempted Jesus to command stones to become bread! I have never been tempted to do this, my reader; I do not suspect that you have either. This is because the Devil *knew* that Jesus was the Son of God. The fact that Jesus was the Son of God was somehow evident to the whole hoard of unclean spirits which resided under the leadership of Satan. Every time unclean spirits encountered Jesus they were about to or did cry out, “Thou art the Son of God”, but the scripture states that Jesus “straitly charged them that they should not make Him *known*” (Mk. 3:9-12). The demons knew *the real identity* of Jesus of Nazareth, my reader. It is affirmed by scripture that, “they *knew* Him” (Mark. 1:34). One can only imagine the celestial conversations which transpired in

the invisible realm as a result of the incarnation and up-bringing of Jesus of Nazareth. *“Glory to God in the highest, and on earth peace, good will toward men”* (Lk. 2:14)!

With all the aforementioned details and verifications which credentialed Jesus as the Messiah and Christ, Matthew saw fit to overview a general introduction to His Ministry: (#1) Where His Ministry Began, (#2) What His Ministry Included, and (#3) How His Ministry was Distinct.

4:12-17 → Where His Ministry Began: Jesus Christ began His ministry in the Land of Zabulon according to the prophecy (4:15-16, Isa. 9:1-2).

4:18-25 → What His Ministry Included / How It Became Famous / What Made it Unstoppable (compare 4:18-25 with 8:14-17): Here we see the call and ingathering of the apostles at the onset of Christ's ministry, a ministry which was ignited by the working of miracles. The flames of widespread fame did burn up the whole Land (*“I am come to send fire on the earth; and what will I, if it be already kindled”*-Lk.12:49) because the Lord Jesus was full of healing power which cured sicknesses and diseases **in fulfillment of all the promised blessings via Old Testament Covenants** (Ex. 15:26, Deut. 7:15, Ps. 103:3, Isa. 53:4), a healing power which was **the fulfillment of prophecies foretelling the accomplishments of the Messiah** (the sick: Isa. 53:4, the lame: Isa. 35:6, the blind: Isa. 43:8, the deaf: Isa. 35:5, the dumb: Isa. 35:6, the dead: Hos. 6:2, 13:14, Isa. 25:8, 26:19, John 5:28-29), and, furthermore, the Lord Jesus had all authority to cast out and subdue devils of any sort **in fulfillment of what was foretold** as Christ's express purpose to overthrow, spoil, and punish the rulers, princes, and spirits which pertain to the invisible and worldwide kingdom of hell (*“And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; and it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel”* -Gen. 3:5; Rom. 16:20, Heb. 2:14-15, Isa. 24:21, Lk. 10:18, Rev. 12:7-8, 17, 1 Jn. 3:8, Col. 2:15, Rev. 20:10). Note: The Spirit in which Christ came (Lk. 9:55) to Israel was not to kill the demon-possessed or the adulteress, as the letter of the justice did righteously demand (demon-possessed: Ex. 22:18, Lev. 20:6, 27, 19:31, Deut. 18:10-12; adulteress: Lev. 20:10, Deut. 22:21-24)... the purpose of Christ's coming was not to enact the curse/justice of the Law but to bear it - to absorb it and take it upon Himself! His purpose was not to bring a famine upon the Land to punish the wicked doers according to their evil deeds... no, my reader. Rather, it was to bring streams in desert places and spiritual health to a hell-bound people until the dry land becomes a pool of water (Isa. 35:5-8, 41:18). My reader, this is the thesis of Christ's miracle ministry (see Matt. 8:14-17)! On this wise the Lord argued and testified, *“If I do not the works of the My Father, believe Me not. But if I do, though ye believe not Me, believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in Me, and I in Him”* (John 10:37-38). *“Believe Me that I am in the Father, and the Father in Me: or else believe Me for the very works' sake”* (John 14:11). *“If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloke for their sin. He that hateth me hateth my Father also. If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father. But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their Law, They hated me without a cause”* (John 15:22-25).

5:1-7:29 → How His Ministry was Distinct from False Judaism / What His Preaching Emphasized / A Comprehensive Refutation of Heretical Judaism (i.e. the tenets of inward religion re-clarified) / **The Moral Law Upheld:** The Lord Jesus upbraids the popular heresy of heretical Judaism in what is called, [The Sermon on the Mount](#). His intentions were not to *abolish* the Ceremonial or Moral Law, but to *fulfill* and *uphold* them both. Confessing this, Jesus said, *“Think not that I am come to destroy the Law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfill”* (5:17). Therefore let us understand: in whatever point Jesus Christ was denouncing and refuting heretical Judaism, He did so to establish and uphold true Judaism - not to *destroy* but to *fulfill*.

Having begun in the Land of Zabulon and from thence, being famed throughout the Land of Israel through miracles, the miracles made way for the message, *The Sermon on the Mount*. Thenceforth and in the wake of so great a denouncement of popular heresy and false Judaism, the false prophets vehemently pursued Jesus' defamation before the public-stage. This being the case – the stage being set: Truth vs Lie, The Messiah vs Popular Authority – a selected number of miracles which Jesus performed were recounted and narrated for the reader's observance and full

understanding. Doubtlessly, these events were controverted and slandered as they were reportedly sounded throughout the Land of Israel by the venomous tongues of bitter and envious Jews. In such a case, the events needed clarification by the true Disciples of Christ... What really happened? In what situational context? For what purpose? Who was present? And what does it all mean? The following historical events which Matthew recounts in Chapter 8 through Chapter 13 are an answer to the former questions. The historical events were not ordered by Matthew for the purpose historical chronology event-to-event, like a historian would be minded so to write. Matthew recounted and ordered a selected number of historical events for the sake of Gospel argumentation; he was trying to systematically persuade the Jews that Jesus of Nazareth is the Messiah. Therefore let us understand this most glorious fact: these miraculous deeds which Jesus did preached volumes of Gospel messages to a Law-enriched Jewish mindset! 1st century heretical Judaism with all the pomp of “established religion”, with the trust and title of the people and place of practical Judaism – even it could not withstand the impact of the Lord Jesus’ miraculous ministry because it was staged in perfect harmony with His majestic argumentation! The Lord Jesus’ deeds preached what the message, ministry, and Person of the Messiah existed to establish – A reformed, more perfect, and unprecedented Kingdom of God!

What His Deeds Preached: A Message, Ministry, and Person Defended & Confirmed!

8:1-4 → **The Unclean Leper Touched:** Jesus Christ, a seeming Law-breaker, TOUCHED an unclean Leper (Lev. 13:1-46, Num. 19:22) and it cleansed the unclean man... “*immediately his leprosy was cleansed*” (Matt. 8:3). Jesus Christ is, therefore, “the Law of the leper in the day of His cleansing” - reformed and fulfilled (Lev. 14:1)! He is, in other words, a greater sprinkling than the blood of birds sprinkled seven times; He is a greater water than the old-time washing and a more purifying ceremony than full-body shaving; He is a greater anointing than oil-sprinkling and oil-pouring; He is a greater sacrifice than the sin-offering which was offered for the old-time atonement (see Lev. 14:1-20)!

8:5-13 → **An Unclean Company Cleansed:** Jesus Christ agreed to go into the home of a Gentile Centurion to heal his servant (“*I will come*”, see Matt. 8:6-7), but because the Gentile man loathed the idea of defiling the Lord (apparently he was aware of the Law), he said, “Lord, I am not worthy that thou shouldest come under my roof: but speak the word only, and my servant shall be healed” (Matt. 8:8). Jesus Christ was about to enter the home of a Gentile, unashamedly... but how? If the Lord would have entered the Gentile man’s house He would have likely taken some refreshments while being in his company, thus the Lord Jesus would have been eating and drinking in the company and house of a Gentile man! The Jewish Law which forbade the company of Jews and Gentiles was common knowledge among Jews and Gentiles (“*Ye know how that it is an unLawful thing*”-Acts 10:28). Therefore because the Gentile Centurion believed in the Law (which commanded such things as Lev. 10:10, 11:47, 20:25, Ezek. 22:26, 44:23) he was abased in his own eyes. In this humility the Gentile man entreated the Lord that Jesus would not come to his house. Even though Jesus Christ never came into the house of the Gentile man (and instead healed the servant through the power of His spoken word), the Lord Jesus vindicated His intention to eat and drink with a Gentile man by a staggeringly relevant declaration: He foretold that non-Israelite Gentiles will come from far and distant Lands to *sit down and keep company, eating and drinking at the Table of the Kingdom of God with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob*, but “the children of the Kingdom”, the Jews, “shall be cast out” (Matt. 8:10-12)! The Lord Jesus was signifying why wisdom justified His entry and company within the House and presence of Gentiles, giving reference to the future state of the Kingdom of God [relevant citations: Acts 10:15, 25-29, 11:3, John 18:28-29]. This is shocking! Apparently, in Jesus’ presence, the unclean company is cleansed! According as it was written, “*And in that Day there shall be a root of Jesse, which shall stand for an ensign of the people; to it shall the Gentiles seek: and his rest shall be glorious*” (Isa. 11:10).

8:14-17 → **The Person and Work Foretold, A TOUCH-able Redemption** (the unLawful “TOUCH” & the demon-possessed unLawfully preserved alive): Jesus Christ encountered Peter’s sick mother-in-Law and it was written, “*He TOUCHED her hand*” (Matt. 8:15). This “TOUCH”, and many more like it, were famed abroad so much so

that it was written at a later time, “*as many as TOUCHED were made perfectly whole*” (Matt. 14:31, Mk. 6:56). This is because Jesus Christ is the embodiment of salvation (via OT promises: Ex. 15:26, Deut. 7:15, Ps. 103:3; via OT prophecies: Isa. 53:4, Isa. 35:6, Isa. 43:8, Isa. 35:5, Hos. 6:2, 13:14, Isa. 25:8, 26:19, John 5:28-29). Jesus Christ did, thereafter, heal as many as came to Him and cast out every devil (Matt. 8:16)! The unclean people who were defiled by disease did throng upon Jesus Christ... and as many as touched Him were healed! The unclean came and touched, and went away clean! According to the inspired writer this was in fulfillment of the prophecy, “Himself **TOOK** our infirmities, and bare our sickness” (Matt. 8:17, Isa. 53:4)! Jesus Christ “**TOOK**” them, the writer said! This verb emphasizes how Jesus Christ did, in some cases, reach forth and touch the helpless and hopeless to take away the wretched curse which crushed both body and soul – diseases which were ceremonially forbidden to touch! – and in the cases where the unclean took liberty to reach out and touch Christ, they did so by believing that He existed to take it away from them! Also here, in Matthew 8:14-17, another sort of uncleanness is cleansed on a widespread scale. Jesus Christ did forcefully and powerfully cast out formerly unconquerable devils from all who came to Him for help! Credibly, this attribute of redemption was prophesied and foretold, and here demonstrated: the expressed purpose to overthrow, spoil, and punish the rulers, princes, and spirits which pertain to the kingdom of hell (“*And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; and it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel*” -Gen. 3:5, Rom. 16:20, Heb. 2:14-15, Isa. 24:21, Lk. 10:18, Rev. 12:7-8, 17, 1 Jn. 3:8, Col. 2:15, Rev. 20:10). This is true, but this is not just a prophetic wonder but a Law-fulfilling wonder! The Spirit in which Christ came (Lk. 9:55) to Israel was not to kill the demon-possessed or the adulteress, for example, as the letter of the justice demanded (demon-possessed: Ex. 22:18, Lev. 20:6, 27, 19:31, Deut. 18:10-12; adulteress: Lev. 20:10, Deut. 22:21-24). Jesus Christ wielded a redemptive power instead of a damning power because His mission was that of mercy and not of penalty; in other words and in this case, the Lord Jesus wielded the power to cast out devils instead of killing the demon-possessed, according to the letter of the Law. The purpose of Christ’s coming was not to enact the curse/justice of the Law, but to bear it, absorb it, and take it upon himself! It was not to bring a famine upon the Land to punish the wicked (Deut. 11:17, 28:23-24)... rather, it was to turn the dry land into a pool of water (Isa. 41:18) – this is the metaphorical thesis of Jesus Christ’s miracle ministry conveyed by prophetic language (see Matt. 8:14-17)! This one attribute of the Man, Jesus Christ – **The TOUCH-able-ness of Human Redemption** – was so notoriously spread abroad that when the multitudes gathered around Him (accounted in Matt. 12:15-21 & Mk. 3:6-12) He asked that he might find refuge in a boat to preach to the people from a removed location. He did this, “lest they should throng Him. For He healed many insomuch that they pressed upon Him for to **TOUCH** Him, as many as had plagues. And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before Him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God. And He straitly charged them that they should not make Him known” (Mk. 3:9-12). Note: **The Ceremonial Law-fulfillment of His Touch**: As Jesus Christ went about Israel doing good, it became apparent that this Man was a body into which all sin would be imputed and absolved, from which all righteousness would be imputed and imparted to others.

8:19-20 → **Incomparable Humility & Loneliness** (a Ministry characterized by unexpected rejection): A learned scribe came to Jesus Christ, and said, “I will follow Thee whithersoever Thou goest”, thinking that Jesus Christ would probably live an honored life like his was for the past many years he spent learning the Law. Christ responded with confrontational boldness against flagrant apostasy! His response demonstrated the incomparable humility which Christ was predestined to undertake to save a sin-cursed people who didn’t want their Messiah (Php. 2:5-8, John 13:1-17). Jesus Christ was predestined to suffer an unexpected rejection by popular Judaism and the widespread public. This foretold lifestyle of Jesus Christ (its loneliness) brings in view an attribute of redemption which deserves grave and thoughtful reflection. Through the prophet Isaiah, the Lord said, “*And I looked, and there was none to help; and I wondered that there was none to uphold: therefore Mine own arm brought salvation unto Me; and My fury, it upheld Me*” (Isa. 63:5). Jesus Christ had power to accomplish human redemption standing-alone; He had the humility to suffer for and save a guilty and condemned people by Himself. Even when the Law stated and affirmed every man’s guilt and condemnation based upon their own deeds which they had committed, individually speaking (Ex. 32:32-33, Ezek. 18:20, 30), the Lord of glory has power to absolve every man’s Law-bound accountability to their disobedience through His own singular and stand-alone obedience! “*The gift by grace, which is by One Man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many*” (Rom. 5:15)! Every man’s Law-bound and individual accountability was punished by the

power of Divine-fury all throughout the centuries in such a manner that, shockingly, individual Israelites perished not alone in their iniquities! According to biblical history, the violent abhorrence that disobedience was to God, in essence, provoked a violent arousing of Divine-justice (Jonah 1:12-16, Num. 16:22, 17:13, Josh. 22:16-20, Num. 25:1-13, Josh. 7:25, 1 Chron. 21:15-17, Num. 32:14-15, 23), but the LORD did stir-up a more violent force of grace and love in Jesus Christ which, comparatively, is now manifest in reversed parallelism to the justice depicted in the aforementioned examples (examples where by one man's sin all men suffered the demise of overflowing wrath) – so that now, by One Man's obedience, collective redemption is unloosed in furious and overflowing grace upon all men who believe! *“For as by the one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of One shall man be made righteous. Moreover the Law entered, that the offence might abound. But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound”* (Rom. 5:19-20). In a stand-alone and redemptive obedience, the Man Jesus is resurrected and ascended with a great company of sinners clothed in His righteousness!

8:21-22 → Incomparable & Collective Royalty: Jesus Christ's mission (and its followers) were obliged to and bound by a greater obligation than what was demonstrated in the Law (by the holiness of the Priesthood: Lev. 10:6-7, 21:10-12; by the holiness of the Nazarites: Num. 6:3-7; and by the general holiness of Israelites: Num. 19:11), thus Jesus Christ said, like in the aforementioned citations, *“let the dead bury their dead”* (Matt. 8:22). Consecration from the defilement of dead bodies was for Divine-reception unto a Divine-purpose of grave importance, and how much more the ministry and mission of Jesus Christ – The Priesthood of Melchisedec (Heb. 7:17)! When men were in near-proximity to Jesus Christ's bodily presence in the 1st century, the location at which they stood was as if they had entered a holier place than the Temple of God itself. Speaking of Himself, Jesus said, *“in this place is One greater than the Temple”* (Matt. 12:6)! Therefore as the Priests of old-time did go to and fro throughout the Temple to accomplish their employment of work on the Sabbath day (Matt. 12:5), the disciples of the Lord went to and fro in attendance to Jesus Christ. The special necessity of Priestly labors necessitated a special exception from otherwise undeniable obligations of Law. In the historical situation accounted by Matthew 8:21-22, special exception to the Law which commanded to honor one's father and mother is allowed (Ex. 20:12, Deut. 5:16). In the historical situation accounted by Matthew 12:1-8, special exception to the Law which forbade work on the Sabbath day was allowed (Ex. 20:8-11, Num. 15:32-36). In both occasions the 1st century disciples of the Lord Jesus became more holy than Old Testament Priests because of a new Priesthood (the order of Melchisedec-Heb.7:17), a Priesthood which was irrespective of one's physical lineage via the seed of Aaron (Ex. 28:43, Num. 16:40)! – This was a collective Priesthood active in a superior royalty which *appeared* contrary to the Law! A Priesthood which would soon include the Gentiles, of all people (*“a royal Priesthood”*-1Pet.2:9)!

8:23-27 → Unconquerable & Stand-Alone Authority (a Mission so impossible there will be an unexpected victory by a Man of stand-alone authority): The journey of salvation for the disciples is thus demonstrated in this with pictorial vividness: a tempestuous storm crashing over the boat and well-nigh drowning the un-believing believers, but Christ will arise in due time and rebuke the seeming impossible circumstance to absolute stillness at the instant His command was uttered – demonstrating unconquerable & stand-alone authority. Jesus Christ had authority to hush and still all the plagues of God's wrath (i.e. the overflowing waters; see Ps. 89:8-9, 107:24-29) with a single word. He did this standing-alone---without any ceremony to merit Divine-favor, without any judgment to appease Divine-justice, contrary to all the historical instances in the Law where such things were necessary to pacify the wrath of God (Jonah 1:12-16, Num. 16:22, 17:13, Josh. 22:16-20, Num. 25:1-13, Josh. 7:25, 1 Chron. 21:15-17, 22, Num. 32:14-15, 23)... this was an unprecedented expression of authority which was simply unheard of and borderline blasphemous, except this Man be GOD!

8:28-34 → The Man: A Stand-Alone Eradication & Expulsion of All Uncleaness: By appearance, it seemed that Jesus did not abide by the Clean and Unclean Laws which the Old Testament commanded (Lev. 10:10, 11:47, 20:25, Ezek. 22:26, 44:23). Moreover when Jesus encountered demon-possession people, instead of killing them He cleansed them (Ex. 22:18, Lev. 20:6, 27, 19:31, Deut. 18:10-12)! In this short passage the unclean spirits were expelled, unclean beasts and the associated enterprises which made a business out of uncleaness were destroyed, and an unclean society rejected the Clean Man because they were terrified of His cleansing wave! The

demon-possessed came from the tombs (which were unclean, see Num. 19:16-22), the Israelites were herding swine for an unclean enterprise (Lev. 11:7, Deut. 14:8, Lev. 20:25-27), and, shockingly, all of it was suddenly driven into destruction as the aftermath of Jesus' command to the devils (Matt. 8:30-32; Note: unclean spirits desire to inhabit unclean places). As a consequence to this, the whole unclean city came together for fear of Jesus' power to cleanse and eradicate uncleanness in all its forms! They plead with Jesus Christ, saying, "depart out of [our] coasts" (Matt. 8:34), which they wished to remain unclean and un-TOUCHED by The Man who cleansed everything in near-proximity! What a staggering event! Every man must choose *cleanness* or *uncleanness* when and if the Man, Jesus, who is the fulfillment of all cleanliness in bodily form, walks into a Land or City in bodily form... thus were all men in an upheaval for or against Jesus Christ! When men interacted with Jesus it made them want to kill Him or die to self, one or the other.

9:1-8 → **A Sin-Absolving "Blasphemer"** (spiritual uncleanness is forgiven): The Pharisees said, "This man blasphemeth", because the Lord Jesus said to the man with palsy, "Thy sins be forgiven thee". Forgiveness was granted without any OT ceremony or sin-offering for atonement because it was written, "He shall bear their iniquities" (Isa. 53:11). Shockingly, He was able to offer the salvific virtue which was yet to be accomplished (which, also, had been accomplished from eternity past –Rev.13:8, 5:6), which, apparently, was alive in real time inside of Himself!

9:9-13 → **An Unclean Company Cleansed:** The man, Matthew, found by the Lord sitting at a table of uncleanness ("*sitting at the receipt of custom*"-Matt.9:9), responded to the call, "Follow Me". So gloriously did Matthew experience saving conversion that, thereafter, "Jesus sat at meat" in his house at a great feast he had prepared for the Lord and a multitude of guests (Lk. 5:29). These guests were there to behold the spectacle which the conversion experience of Matthew beckoned ("*old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new*"-2Cor.5:17) and to hear from the Lord Jesus the words of Life. The Lord Jesus preached everywhere He went! The Pharisees, looking on, were in utter disbelief that Jesus Christ is the Messiah. They did not believe He was the Man or the Message of salvation for Israel, thus they scorned the miracle of salvation. All the Pharisees could see was, "Jesus sat at meat in the house...behold, many publicans and sinners came and sat down with him and his disciples" (Matt. 9:10). All the Pharisees could say was, "Why eateth your Master with publicans and sinners" (Matt. 19:11)? They did not understand that the unclean company of sinners was being cleansed by encountering the walking fulfillment of the Ceremonial and Moral Law in bodily form. What the Pharisees were beholding was a new ceremony! It was the ceremony of a new salvation via an evangelistic outreach! – an outreach that they should have marveled at because of the glory of salvation working within needy sinners, but instead it was an outreach they marveled at because of the Law-fulfilling method of salvation in Christ which was not apparent to them and seemingly contradictory to the letter of the Law.

9:14-17 → **An Unprecedented Man Calls-for Unprecedented Conduct:** The aforementioned situation provided the Pharisees with ammunition to slander the name of Jesus. Doubtlessly, they pointed out the differing behavior and conduct of John the Baptist and Jesus Christ. Being motivated by this controversy, the disciples of John came and inquired of the Lord concerning this difference. The subject of "eating" is at hand, because Christ's company with which He ate was unprecedented by any other person for fear that the individual would break the Law and become unclean... but every unclean place or person which Jesus Christ ventured into or touched, He cleansed! Thus, an unprecedented Man performing an unprecedented salvation (physically and spiritually) necessitates an unprecedented behavior from the salvation-enriched followers of Jesus. This principle is communicated by Jesus via the reference of a Wedding, New and Old Garments, and New and Old Wine. The Bridegroom, who is the life and center of the Wedding Ceremony, determines the conduct of all its attendees... thus while Christ is among His disciples they are salvation-enriched (i.e. if this new conduct existed in the old circumstances it would be sin – ruinous to the soul and transgressing of the Covenant). If this new conduct, like a new patch, was applied to the circumstances of the Old Covenant (even the greatest of the prophets of the Old Covenant), the perfectly woven Covenant would be rent/transgressed. If this new conduct, like new wine, was applied to circumstances in the Old Covenant (even the greatest of the prophets of the Old Covenant), the very

casement of the Old Covenant would be rent/transgressed. Jesus Christ lived-out and exemplified a conduct which was in truth, Law-fulfillments of every inspired letter of the Old Covenant, but the Law-fulfillments were accomplished via a superior virtue than what the letter offered.

9:18-26 → **Defiled by the Dead and Touched by the Unclean:** Illustrating this, the seekers of salvation take the Kingdom of God in the violence of unprecedented conduct and behavior! They don't abide among the funeral dirge and isolate themselves among his unclean companions. They don't isolate themselves for seven days so that they, who are defiled by the dead, refrain from spreading uncleanness throughout the Land (*"This is the Law, when a man dieth in a tent: all that come into the tent, and all that is in the tent, shall be unclean seven days"*-Num.19:14). Or in the case of uncleanness via a running issue, they don't isolate themselves for seven days lest they spread uncleanness throughout the Land (*"And if a woman have an issue, and her issue in her flesh be blood, she shall be put apart seven days: and whosoever toucheth her shall be unclean until even"*-Lev.15:19). No... In either case, because of the unprecedented near-presence of the cleansing Man, the Messiah, the people were allowably diverting from the instruction of the Law (seemingly Law-breaking) because there is a greater fulfillment available (*"The time is fulfilled, and the Kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the Gospel"*-Mark1:15). The new and unprecedented behavior is allowed because of the presence of the unprecedented Man, the Bridegroom. The unclean man who had been defiled by the dead sought out Jesus and cried, "come and lay Thy hand upon her" (an act which would have defiled Christ on two points: (1) by entering the house and (2) touching the dead)... a thing which Jesus did with all boldness: "He went in and *took her by the hand*, and the maid arose" (Matt. 9:18, 25)! The unclean woman traversed across society and pressed through crowds endeavoring TOUCH Jesus Christ (an act which would defile Christ if He were an ordinary man), but when she "TOUCHED the hem of His garment" she was cleansed and healed (Matt. 9:20)! Jesus Christ is the greater fulfillment of the Old Testament "purification for sin" which was prescribed for those who were defiled by the dead (Num. 19:1-22). Jesus Christ is a greater sacrifice than "two turtles" or "two young pigeons" (Lev. 15:29), and a greater atonement than any Old Testament sin-offering (Lev. 15:30). *"In that Day there shall be a Fountain opened to the House of David and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem for sin and for uncleanness"* (Zech. 13:1). Hallelujah!

9:27-34 → **Boundless Powers of Healing & Restoration** (insomuch that the blind see and the dumb speak, according to prophecy): The blind men followed Christ, saying, "Thou Son of David, have mercy on us", acknowledging that Jesus was the Christ (foretold to be the Son of David and a healer of the blind; *"the eyes of the blind shall be opened"*-Isa.35:5). The restoration of their physical sight was a result of their spiritual sight – thus, and because of this, the blind men boldly and violently approached the Man from which proceeded a fountain of saving power and physical restoration (*"the violent take it by force"*-Matt.1:12)! This is a literal fulfillment of a Messianic regathering and restoring of Israel foretold by prophecy, saying, *"Bring forth the blind people that have eyes, and the deaf that have ears"* (Isa. 43:8)! When they were thus allowed to approach the One who captured their eyes of faith, it was written, "Then TOUCHED He their eyes, saying, According to your faith be it unto you" (Matt. 9:29). Amen! The Man, Jesus, was an absorbent vacuum of every sin-caused malady which assailed the common public, and this, so much so, that even blind men could see that Jesus was the long-looked-for and promised Messiah, the Son of David! The entire environment of the visible and invisible creation was so captivated by the Messianic powers which emanated from the bodily frame of the God-Man that, shockingly, in the event that, haply, the chosen people held their peace from shouts of praise and lauds of adoration, at this time "the stones would immediately cry out" in their place (Luke 19:40)! And so it was moreover testified and proven again and again, *"As they went out, BEHOLD, they brought to Him a dumb man possessed with a devil. And when the devil was cast out, the dumb spake: and the multitudes marveled, saying, It was never so seen in Israel"* (Matt. 9:32-33). The manifestation of the Messiah could not be foretold any clearer! It is written, "the tongue of the dumb shall sing!" Hallelujah! *"Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped. Then shall the lame man leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing: for in the wilderness shall waters break out, and streams in the desert. And the parched ground shall become a pool, and the thirsty land springs of water: in the habitation of dragons, where each lay, shall be grass with reeds and rushes. And an highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called The way of holiness; the unclean shall not pass over it; but it shall be for those: the wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err therein."* – Isaiah 35:5-8

9:35-38 → **Immeasurable Compassion & Heart-Moving Tenderness** (the Church is thereby established as an outlet or channel for His love to continue!): In the aforementioned words and deeds heretofore detailed, the Lord Jesus was known so to behave. He “went about all the cities and villages” – “teaching” & “preaching” – and “healing every sickness and every disease among the people” (Matt. 9:35), and as it was all said and done He was not satisfied! “*But when He saw the multitudes, He was moved with compassion on them, because they fainted, and were scattered abroad, as sheep having no shepherd. Then saith He unto His disciples, The Harvest truly is plenteous, but the labourers are few; Pray ye therefore the Lord of the Harvest, that He will send forth labourers into His Harvest*” (Matt. 9:36-38). My reader, do you know the love of Christ? It was Paul’s prayer that the Church may be enabled to “*comprehend with all saints what is the breadth, and length, and depth, and height; And to know the love of Christ, which passeth knowledge, that ye might be filled with the fullness of God*” (Eph. 3:18-19). As you will soon see, my reader, the Lord Jesus is not satisfied to lay His hands on the Lepers and the diseased, being compelled by so great a zeal for the wellbeing of sinners Jesus of Nazareth laid His hands on called-out disciples to impute and impart the virtue of cleansing power so that they, alongside of Him, would fill the Land of Israel full of the goodness which flows from Jesus’ Name.

10:1-8 → **A Church-Body to Spread the Restoration Power of Christ in Greater Magnitude** (Christ living through Christians): In the aforementioned heart and desire the Lord called, anointed, and endowed twelve disciples as apostles and sent them abroad. They were sent so to do exactly what Christ was doing (Matt. 10:7-8). By message and miracles, the Kingdom of God was effectually proclaimed! Their mission was directed toward the House of Israel and not the Gentiles (Matt. 10:5-8); “*to the Jew first, and also to the Greek*” –Rom. 1:16. Oh, my reader, take note! The inspired text said, “also to the Greek”! The love of Christ which began in Israel must travel abroad into all the world, my reader, but He is looking for channels through which the mighty waters will flow! The eyes of God are upon 20th century Christians that they would yield themselves to God so to be, like exemplified in Israel, but in the Gentile countryside. If Christ’s love is comprehended by any Gentile Church Age saint... it is a comprehension which surpasses the confinements of earthly intelligence (“*the love of Christ which passeth knowledge*”-Eph.3:19). Oh that we could grasp the unknowable! That we, like the 1st century disciples, would become bodies through which the life of Jesus could flow! That we, like Him, could become walking Law-fulfillments of cleansing power! So that we, like Christ, would be ambassadors of this TOUCH-able redemption which was prophesied to spread throughout all the world! If we truly understood the love of Christ that motivated Him to lay His hands upon the apostles and, thus, envision the innumerable company of Christians which would be conformed to the image of the Jesus through their endowment as apostles, we all, as Christians, would feel as though the holy hands of our Lord are reaching toward us right now! Every blessing and virtue of their endowment is our anointing, dear saints! Thus when we pray we are exhorted to be reflective of this most glorious mystery, “the power that worketh in us” (Eph. 3:20)! Hallelujah! May we see this glory again in its 1st century purity and virginity, according to the witness and testimony of the New Testament! After all, the New Testament is the only sure and infallible definition of what normal Christianity is.

10:9-31 → **A Clean Man & Message REJECTED by an Unclean Land / Salvation & Damnation in Terms of Territorial Cleanness & Uncleanness**: The targeted people for whom the missionary journey existed were the Israelites, a people who were supposed to be clean (the people, their possessions, Homes, territories, Cities, and Land). This being the case, inquiry was to be made in each City the apostles entered. The inquiry was in search for what Christ called, “*son of peace*” (Lk. 10:6). Who is this man? This is a man who receives the message and Man of the Gospel, apparently. Upon finding him (the son of peace), the apostles were instructed to abide in his house because it is worthy/clean (Matt. 10:11-13). If the house was unworthy/unclean it was because the people of the household were unclean via rejecting Christ (“*whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words*”-Matt. 10:14). Notice carefully the terms of damnation, my reader. Whoever rejected the *apostles* did thereby reject *Christ*! Jesus Christ was being represented and expressed via the messengers, their message, and the associated miracles which were all performed in His Name; therefore, Christ said, “*He that receiveth you receiveth Me, and he that receiveth Me receiveth Him that sent Me*” (Matt. 10:40). This is an amazing statement! Jesus Christ had power to impute and impart cleanness inside of ambassadorial messengers who will, thereby, become walking Law-fulfillments of cleansing power in the Name of Jesus unto all who will receive the Man of their message through them! This has become,

therefore, through the Church (“which is His body”-Eph.1:23), a TOUCH-able redemption spreading through ambassadors who express the Man, message, and miracles necessary for salvation (a faith-inspiring reaction within unbelievers enabling them to engage the Living God)! This reality was so real and actual – through missionary journeys via the Church – we can see the operation of salvation and damnation via the terms of **territorial uncleanness**! This was proven when, according to the Lord Jesus’ instruction, the apostles encountered a City where all the men therein were unclean, it was then that the whole Land was left without hope and help thereby... but how is this discerned? It was discerned by the rejection of the Christ-sent missionaries who represented Him! Upon finding no House and no man within a City to receive the messengers of Christ, a declaration of *public testimony* needed to be made to the apostate people. The Lord’s instruction was shocking! He said, “When ye depart out of that House or City, shake off the dust of your feet” (Matt. 10:14)! Adam Clarke gives helpful commentary on the meaning of this demonstration,

“**Shake off the dust of your feet** - The Jews considered themselves defiled by the dust of a heathen country, when was represented by the prophets as a polluted land, [Amo 7:17](#), when compared with the Land of Israel, which was considered as a holy land, [Eze 45:1](#); therefore, to shake the dust of any city of Israel from off one’s clothes or feet was an emblematical action, signifying a renunciation of all farther connection with them, and placing them on a level with the cities of the Heathen. See [Amo 9:7](#).” – Adam Clarke.

The individuals, Households, Cities, and Lands which rejected Christ’s message via His messengers (Matt. 10:40-42) were thereby reduced into such an abhorrent estate of wickedness before God Almighty that, shockingly, they were more *unclean* and *defiled* than the Land of Sodom and Gomorrah (Cities which were given over to all manner of uncleanness, fornication, and “going after strange flesh”, Cities which the common public knew were “set forth an example” in how they were utterly annihilated by the wrath of God; see Jude 1:7). Notice how Christ pronounced woe upon the “City” as a territory – a territory that had been blackened by a more terrible uncleanness than the territorially unclean “Land” of Sodom and Gomorrah (which was defiled by strange flesh; see Matt. 10:15 & Rom. 1:24, 26-27). A territorially unclean and God-forsaken City is witnessed against by an action which communicated territorial uncleanness & territorial damnation, like heathen Lands and nations. Christ pointedly confirmed the meaning of this by comparing “that City” to “the Land of Sodom and Gomorrah” – both of them as territories of uncleanness – only in this case, shockingly, the Israelite was more abominable than the Sodomite! This is utterly astonishing! How offensive would this be to the Jews, my reader!

No wonder then, seeing that these Cities and Lands were crawling with unclean men... Christ called them “wolves”. He said, “beware of men”, for they will use their synagogues of *worship* and councils of *righteous judgment* as scourging arenas to discipline and murder clean men (Matt. 10:17-22) – so much so that the God-sent and holy apostles were considered as unclean as “Beelzebub” himself (Matt. 10:23-25)! What a staggering thing! The most clean were, by the most unclean, considered the most unclean! Truly, “An unjust man is an abomination to the just: and he that is upright in the way is abomination to the wicked” (Prov. 29:27)!

10:32-42 → **A Family/City/Nation- “Rebel” and a Curse-Burdened “Criminal” Doomed for the Crucifix** (a rebel: Micah 7:6 & Matt. 10:35-36, a cursed criminal: Gal. 3:13 & Matt. 10:38): In such a circumstance (formerly detailed) Christ did not come to bring peace. “*What peace, so long as the whoredoms of thy mother Jezebel and her witchcrafts are so many?*” The Lord Jesus sent his disciples to contradict the lies and liars of popular Judaism by unashamedly confessing the true Messiah (Matt. 10:32-33). The Lord Jesus and His followers would not behave in any way which could be considered “peaceful” conduct in a society at war against God; at war by religious creed, mind you! Society-conformity in this 1st century situation would have been truth-apostasy. Though the entire society calls Jesus Christ and His followers, “Beelzebub”, the Lord chooses the hard truth: to be a curse-burdened rebel of their society’s religious code. The truth meant self-sacrifice, in this society. Expressing this the Lord quoted Micah 7:6 as a satirical rebuke to men who suppose they represent true Judaism. Apparently Jesus Christ was accepting and unashamed of the false-identity they tagged him with, boldly stating the hard truth of a ministry of revival in the midst of apostasy: “*For the son dishonoureth the father, the daughter riseth up against her mother, the daughter in Law against her*

mother in Law; a man's enemies are the men of his own house" (Micah 7:6, Matt. 10:35-36). Jesus Christ chose obedience, even if He *appeared* to be a cursed Law-breaker or a rebellious up-riser, as the prophet Micah spoke of. I say again, Jesus knew that peace in this Judaistic society meant war against God! With these things in mind and with all boldness, Christ illustrated the pathway of salvation as a curse-burdened and cross-bearing pathway, a road trod by those who lose their temporary livelihood to keep it for eternity (Matt. 10:37-39)! Jesus Christ preached Himself as the cursed man who was doomed to hang on a tree ("*for he that is hanged is accursed of God*"-Deut.21:23, Josh. 10:26-27), for the redemption of a cursed and unclean society which was otherwise doomed. It was written, "*Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the Law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree*" (Gal. 3:13). Because Jesus Christ was a Clean Man in an Unclean Land, He became a cursed, rejected, and crucified Man!

11:1-19 → **The Inquiry of the Greatest Prophet / John the Baptist Offended at Jesus' "Unclean Practices" / The Notorious Offenses of Christ Offended John the Baptist:** After the Lord Jesus had been slandered and misrepresented all across the Land of Israel, John the Baptist was noticeably affected. Can a Messiah be so hated and slandered? Would the Messiah utterly trespass the framework of 1st century Judaism as Jesus had? Could the Messiah be so misunderstood and infamous? On one occasion, for example, the Lord Jesus was compelled to defend Himself against the accusations of his own family members who supposed Him to be crazy. The justification for Jesus' actions were easily explained. He said to his family members, "The world cannot hate you: but Me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil" (John 7:7). This was truthful for his carnal family members, this is for sure... but in Matthew 11 John the Baptist is offended – Jesus' beloved cousin and forerunning prophet who was filled with the Holy Ghost from the womb! Consider it, my reader: what compelling Jewish controversies would have been able to dissolve the confidence of John the Baptist's faith in Jesus – the same man who testified before the multitudes, "He must increase, but I must decrease" (John 3:30). The same man who cried out, "Behold the Lamb of God, which taketh away the sin of the world" (John 1:29)! My reader, the controversies were compelling... to say the least. It was surely purported by many that John the Baptist would not have received Jesus as the Messiah, given Jesus' outrageous misconduct and seeming disregard for Jewish Law. Jesus was made-out to appear completely insubordinate to Jewish Law by every major authority in the Jewish sphere of religious influence.

With all this in mind, what would the Lord respond to the inquisitive messengers sent by John the Baptist? What answer would settle the heart of the seemingly unshakable prophet, His beloved cousin? The Lord Jesus answered the inquiry of John the Baptist by deeds, not mere words. "*Jesus answered and said unto them, Go and shew John again those things which ye do hear and see: The blind receive their sight, and the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, and the deaf hear, the dead are raised up, and the poor have the gospel preached to them. And blessed is he, whosoever shall not be offended in me*" (Matt. 11:4-6). Jesus expected John the Baptist to discern if He was the Christ through these mighty acts, for good reason. Such acts speak for themselves because they were a confirmation of the word of God.

The flames of widespread fame did burn up the whole Land ("*I am come to send fire on the earth; and what will I, if it be already kindled*"-Lk.12:49) because the Lord Jesus was full of healing power which cured sicknesses and diseases **in fulfillment of all the promised blessings via Old Testament Covenants** (Ex. 15:26, Deut. 7:15, Ps. 103:3, Isa. 53:4), a healing power which was **the fulfillment of prophecies foretelling the accomplishments of the Messiah** (the sick: Isa. 53:4, the lame: Isa. 35:6, the blind: Isa. 43:8, the deaf: Isa. 35:5, the dumb: Isa. 35:6, the dead: Hos. 6:2, 13:14, Isa. 25:8, 26:19, John 5:28-29), and, furthermore, the Lord Jesus had all authority to cast out and subdue devils of any sort in fulfillment of what was foretold as Christ's express purpose to overthrow, spoil, and punish the rulers, princes, and spirits which pertain to the invisible and worldwide kingdom of hell ("*And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; and it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel*" - Gen. 3:5, Rom. 16:20, Heb. 2:14-15, Isa. 24:21, Lk. 10:18, Rev. 12:7-8, 17, 1 Jn. 3:8, Col. 2:15, Rev. 20:10). **Note:** The Spirit in which Christ came (Lk. 9:55) to Israel was not to kill the demon-possessed or the adulteress, as the letter of the justice did righteously demand (demon-possessed: Ex. 22:18, Lev. 20:6, 27, 19:31, Deut. 18:10-12; adulteress: Lev. 20:10, Deut. 22:21-24)... the purpose of Christ's coming was not to enact the curse/justice of the Law but to bear it - to absorb it and take it upon Himself! His purpose was not to bring a famine upon the Land to

punish the wicked doers according to their evil deeds... no, my reader. Rather, it was to bring streams in desert places and spiritual health to a hell-bound people until the dry land becomes a pool of water (Isa. 35:5-8, 41:18). My reader, this is the thesis of Christ's miracle ministry (see Matt. 8:14-17). Jesus Christ was expecting John to discern the same matter which was appealed to others in clear argumentation: "*If I do not the works of the My Father, believe Me not. But if I do, though ye believe not Me, believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in Me, and I in Him*" (John 10:37-38). "*Believe Me that I am in the Father, and the Father in Me: or else believe Me for the very works' sake*" (John 14:11). "*If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloke for their sin. He that hateth me hateth my Father also. If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now have they both seen and hated both me and my Father. But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their Law, They hated me without a cause*" (John 15:22-25).

By the statement, "*blessed is he whosoever shall not be offended in Me*", it is clear that John the Baptist was temporarily overtaken in offense. But what was so offensive about the Person and Work of Jesus Christ, very specifically speaking? After affirming John the Baptist's superiority over all former prophets in Matthew 11:7-15 (quoting Mal. 3:1 in Matthew 11:10 & Mal. 4:5 in Matthew 11:14), the Lord Jesus addressed the primary matter of offense which was being noised abroad (this underlying issue was hinted at before in Matthew 9:14). Think of it, my reader. John the Baptist's disciples had more in common with the Pharisees than Jesus' disciples did, therefore the disciples of John are compelled to ask Jesus, "*Why do we and the Pharisees fast oft, but thy disciples fast not*" (Matt. 9:14)? More questions could be asked in connection to this distinction of conduct, this is for sure. Jesus Christ goes straight at the matter, and said, "*For John came neither eating nor drinking, and they say, He hath a devil. The Son of Man came eating and drinking, and they say, Behold a man gluttonous, and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners. But wisdom is justified of her children*" (Matt. 11:18-19). With the central issue then brought to the surface of the reader's attention, Matthew is preparing to make a point of argument thereafter... but, as of now, let the reader understand the foremost issue of notorious offense which pervaded the Land of Israel insomuch that John the Baptist was offended: Jesus' blatant disregard to the letter of the Law as it pertained to the Clean and the Unclean according to the Old Testament. Howbeit, my reader, what appeared to be Law-breaking was actually Law-fulfilling! If the Jews only knew...

11:20-30 → The Man & Relationship Upon Which Hinged All Cleanness and Uncleanness / All Who Received Jesus Became Clean & All Who Rejected Jesus Became Unclean: Shockingly, the Clean Man was received by unclean companies of people who were thereby cleansed ("*publicans and sinners*"-Matt.11:19), but He was expelled from the "*clean people's*" Households, Cities, and Lands... so it seemed (Chorazin, Bethsaida, and Capernaum-Matt.11:20-24). Note: These are the same people who are offended that Jesus does not keep the Clean and Unclean Laws written in the Old Testament. Those people who by letter appeared to be clean were actually unclean and unconverted in truth, and those who by letter appeared to be and in truth were unclean... they were made clean! Why? Such a question could be answered by correlating arguments uttered by the Lord Jesus on other occasions:

(#1) "*Jesus said, For judgment I am come into this world, that they which see not might see; and that they which see not might see; and that they which see might be made blind. And some of the Pharisees which were with Him heard these words, and said unto Him, Are we blind also? Jesus said unto them, If ye were blind, ye should have no sin: but now ye say, We see; therefore your sin remaineth*" (John 9:39-41).

(#2) "*And when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto His disciples, Why eateth your Master with publicans and sinners? But when Jesus heard that, He said unto them, Thy that be whole need not a physician, but they that are sick. But go ye and learn what that meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice: for I am not come to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance*" (Matt. 9:11-13).

You see, my reader. These Pharisees were wise in their own conceits and supposed that they could see (discern what is righteousness and who is righteous), therefore their sin remained uncleansed! But, on the contrary, the publicans were those who were humbled/blinded from the damnable conceit of hypocritical Pharisees who trusted in themselves that they were righteous. Because of the shame of what could be easily detected as sin, the publicans and

sinners were thus humbled... therefore they, relating to Christ as a blind man in need of sight, were given sight! As much as the Pharisees said in their hearts, “We see”, or in other words, “We are the righteous”, they were blinded and deafened to the identity and call of Jesus Christ which would lead them into saving repentance! According to Luke 18:9-14 the Pharisees “trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others”. In denouncement of this hypocrisy (directly following the notorious controversy [Matt. 11:18-19] stirred up by the unconverted Jews), the Lord Jesus declared the truth of the matter!

While the Lord Jesus was notoriously considered to be unclean by the companionship of unclean company (Matt. 11:19) because the unbelieving Jews were blinded to the cleansing-power of faith in Christ (the unsuspected Law-fulfillments of the Messiah), Jesus attempted missionary endeavors to convert the public mass which was supposedly, on the contrary, “a clean people”... but He was notoriously rejected by Chorazin, Bethsaida, and Capernaum. Matthew cites the consequence of this to answer the notorious controversy which well-nigh subverted John the Baptist. As a consequence of the supposed “clean people” and “clean places” rejecting Jesus, the Lord denounced them in terms of damnation via territorial uncleanness! As a declaration of what truly happened, the Lord Jesus relayed a message to express that these cities were overtaken in territorial uncleanness and thereby they rejected God’s Clean Man and Cleansing Message, thus they are worse off than Tyre and Sidon (two heathen cities Lawfully and territorially unclean), doomed to be subjected to greater torments than the Land of Sodom itself (the most notorious Land of uncleanness of all time)! These are the most staggering and insulting denouncements which could have been declared to the self-righteous and hypocritical Jews of the 1st century (and in the wake of so great a false controversy they have been spreading throughout the Land of Israel!). This rebuke (in Matt. 11:20-24) is much like the rebuke delivered to Jesus’ home town in Nazareth. In Luke 4:23-27 the Lord Jesus justified the absence of the miraculous power which visited Capernaum by citing how Elijah did not visit with, abide among, provide for, or cleanse any Israelite during the years of famine. Instead, Elijah abode with a Gentile woman who was a widow in the city of Sidon, and cleansed the Gentile name Naaman, the Syrian.

Some notable and thematic conclusions which need to be made on behalf of this integral chapter in continuity to the entire argument delivered by Matthew heretofore: This notorious controversy took occasion through the easily discernible difference of conduct exhibited by John the Baptist and Jesus Christ, and John was recognized by all as a true prophet before Jesus even began His ministry. These distinctions of conduct and method can be justified through understanding how, **firstly**, John the Baptist abode in the wilderness before the days of his ministerial appearing to escape the rampant uncleanness and widespread apostasy of 1st century Judaism, and, thus, in confirmation to this, in the hour of John’s appearing he preached a water baptism of repentance for the remission of sins through a ceremonial washing, so to speak (a typological and symbolic experience which represented the Lawful and ceremonial washing/cleansing necessary to remove all the uncleanness’ of the people), and, **secondarily**, this is relevant to Jesus Christ in that, John said, “He that cometh after Me is mightier than I...He shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost” (Matt. 3:11). This same thing Jesus confirmed, saying, “John indeed baptized with water; but ye shall be baptized with the Holy Ghost” (Acts 11:16). This is the radical difference between John and Jesus! Think of it, my reader: both of them were baptizers... but John’s baptism was inferior to Christ’s baptism. The former was of water and the latter of the Spirit. The former was visible but the latter invisible. Needless to say, John’s Divinely-commissioned *method* of cleansing uncleanness was inferior to Jesus’! John’s baptism drew men into the wilderness so that (like in the days of Moses in Exodus 33:7) everyone who sought the Lord needed to withdraw themselves from the territorial uncleanness’ which pervaded the Land and, thus, be cleansed via water baptism, but Jesus Christ was a Spiritual Fountain whereby men were baptized in the Holy Ghost! This baptism was not with mere water, oh no! This baptism was not of earthly significance in the Ceremonial Law of the Old Testament, no! This baptism originated from Heaven and its essence was GOD. This baptism so far exceeds the cleansing power of John’s water baptism like the chasm between earth and heaven! Seeing this great difference between the two men and their ministries, Jesus Christ was able to behave differently as He traversed the Lands of Uncleanness on foot. Jesus Christ invaded the Lands of uncleanness with cleansing power like floods of waters breaking forth into a desolate wilderness (Isa. 35:6-7)! Everywhere He went, everything He did, and everything He said communicated the cleansing-power of the Kingdom of God (“*For the Kingdom of God*

is not in word, but in power”-1Cor.4:20) so that the otherwise unclean, hopeless, and un-TOUCH-able people were cleansed and redeemed! [Note: The Book of Acts is organized as a careful answer to the notorious controversy raised against Christ by false Judaism (Matt. 9:9-13, 11:19, Acts 10:28-29).] This glorious distinction between John and Jesus and the superior salvation which Jesus Christ performed among Israel was only observable and understandable by the elect individuals whom God gave eyes to see (Matt. 11:25-30).

12:1-8 → A Corn Gathering Sabbath-Breaker: What is so controversial about gathering corn on the Sabbath day? According to the letter of the Law there is great occasion for concern in this. If men were caught gathering anything at all which could appear to be work on the Sabbath day, the consequences were grave. Demonstrating this, a man was once put to death for “*gathering sticks*” on the Sabbath day (Num. 15:32-36). Seeing that the Lord and His disciples were *gathering corn* on the Sabbath day, an occasion for accusation was provided and taken by the *merciless* and *blind-eyed* Pharisees.

Merciless, I say, because the Lord and His disciples were poor men (“*The foxes have holes, and the birds of the air have nests; but the Son of Man hath no where to lay His head.*”-Matt.8:20). The Pharisees should have been merciful to the poor, like the Law demands (Prov. 19:17, 14:21, 28:27). The Pharisees should have been provisional for the poor, like the Law exemplified (Lev. 19:10, Deut. 24:21). If the Pharisees had mercy then they “*would not have condemned the guiltless*” (Matt. 12:7).

Blind-eyed, I say, because the Pharisees did not understand the potential of Lawful exceptions to the letter of the Law as it was exemplified in inferior circumstances to the present situation of the Messiah, a situation that they murmured against and ferociously condemned. The Lord Jesus defended Himself and His disciple’s actions through citing David as an example – a situation where circumstances permitted the otherwise unLawful to happen without blame. In this circumstance David was on the run for his life (and in a masterful and dignified way, so was Jesus), he had no time or ability to provide for himself on the journey he was compelled to suddenly take (and in a masterful and dignified way, so was Jesus), so the High Priest gave him the holy bread to eat which was ordinarily and Lawfully “*only for Priests*” (Matt. 12:4). This circumstance for David was not altogether unrelated to the ordinary and repeated event at which “*the Priests in the Temple profane the Sabbath and are blameless*” (Matt. 12:5). Jesus Christ was making the point very clear: extraordinary circumstances do justify otherwise unLawful behavior on the Sabbath, according to scripture. We can say for sure that if anyone is commissioned and employed in a holy order of New Testament Priesthood which is comparable to the Old Testament Priesthood, it is Christ and the apostles! Therefore if anyone is privileged in a like-circumstance to, as some might accused according to the letter, “*profane the Sabbath*”, it was Jesus and His disciples.

Moreover the Lord did, in another Gospel account, clarify the reason the Sabbath existed in the first place (Mk. 2:27). We can be sure that the Sabbath did not exist [1] to starve mankind when preparations were not possible (Matt. 12:3-4) or [2] to provide occasions for harm or pain in unpredicted but presently preventable situations involving animals or humans (see Matt. 12:9-14), for God is a merciful God. Furthermore and above all other arguments of potential justification for Jesus’ and His followers’ “Sabbath-Breaking” deeds, if the Jews knew the identity of the One who walked among them they would not have dared to accuse Him (Matt. 12:6)! That which is done on every Sabbath day within the Temple is never contested because of the stature and dignity of the Priesthood... the work of holy men continued on holy days even when all others rested! Speaking on this wise, Jesus Christ said, “*But I say unto you, That in this place is One greater than the Temple*” (Matt. 12:6)!

In each one of the circumstances over which the Pharisees stumbled, arguably in all of them, the Pharisees were misinterpreting the Law because they did not believe that Jesus Christ was the Messiah: in other words they disagreed with the superiority and progress of His mission above the aforementioned examples. Therefore when Jesus and others were found in extraordinary circumstances which “appeared” to be in transgression to the Law, the Pharisees sought to defame and incriminate Jesus based upon appearance even though they would justify *a person of inferior holiness* doing the same actions in *a place of inferior holiness* in *a time of inferior redemption* than when in

the 1st century... shockingly, the God-Man walked among them! My reader, “*In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God...And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld His glory, the glory of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth*” (John 1:1, 14)! Therefore the subject is settled: “*the Son of Man is Lord even of the Sabbath day*” (Matt. 12:8)!

12:9-14 → **A Traditional “Sabbath-Breaker” via Healing** (unbiblical traditions defied and refuted): In continuation of purpose to the former verses found in Matthew chapter 12, Matthew narrates a historical event which refutes an *unbiblical tradition* incorporated in 1st century Jewish Sabbath Rules. Herein it is proven that the Sabbath did not exist to provide occasions for harm or pain in unpredicted but presently preventable situations involving animals or humans. With majestic power and authority Jesus broke-through the iron bars of unbiblical tradition! By way of summary, my reader, let us understand the follow:

Two Distinct Reasons for Blamelessness of Every Accusation Delivered by the Jews

(#1) Blamelessness because of the dignity, holiness, and power of Jesus to be the fulfillment of the Law in every circumstance. Note: this blamelessness exists even though the letter of what was written in the Law is apparently defied, thus Christ fulfills the Law in Kingdom realities which are unpredicted by and superior over the Old Testament Law.

(#2) Blamelessness because the seeming transgression of the Law which Jesus stands accused of is actually a man-made tradition (a misinterpretation of the letter of the Law), thus all of Jesus’ defiance of these things is justifiable!

12:15-21 → **A KING Who Does Not Fight, A Sword-less King / A King Who Would, by Sacrifice & Surrender to Injustice, Establish Justice & Worldwide Dominion:** After Jesus Christ had seemingly and justifiably defied the letter of the Law pertaining to the Sabbath (Matt. 12:1-8), and then, afterward, back-to-back (according to the argument written by Matthew), the Lord Jesus defied the unbiblical Sabbath day tradition fabricated by the Pharisees which forbade healing and doing good on the Sabbath day (Matt. 12:9-14)... Matthew emphasizes that, because of this, “*Then the Pharisees went out, and held a council against Him, how they might destroy Him*” (Matt. 12:14). Having defied the idolatrous shrine created by the Pharisees – the Sabbath Day tradition – and having a seeming disregard to all the tenets of Jewish conduct theretofore (according to the demented mind of an unbelieving and blind Pharisee), the Pharisees were then, at this point, driven into the fury of murderous conspiracy (see Matt. 12:14). Upon this circumstance, ordinarily, the to-be-KING of Israel would not retreat or surrender but take-up-sword and fight! This cannot be understated, my reader! Kings were raised up for the purpose of sword-in-hand battles to overthrow every cause of injustice and establish all necessary righteousness in and among the physical nation of Israel (Ps. 18:32-50, 1 Chron. 20:1, 1 Kings 10:9, Jer. 23:5, Psalm 72). This was the common and consistent behavior of all the Kings of Israel and Judah, generally speaking, noted throughout the pages of biblical history... and yet, Jesus, the greatest KING Israel had ever seen, at the moment he “knew” how the Pharisees sought to “destroy Him” by bloodshed and murder --- He “withdrew Himself” (Matt. 12:14-15). Because this conduct is so contrary to the ordinary, biblical, and historical behavior of every righteous King in Israel or Judah, and because this conduct is contrary to the popular opinion of what the Messiah would do when and if He appeared in Israel, Matthew was compelled to make a defense.

Matthew argued that Jesus acted in fulfillment of a prophecy from Isaiah which foretold that the Messiah would not be a man of physical war or carnal brutality for the establishment of *all* justice and judgment in the 1st Advent (“*He shall not strive, nor cry; neither shall any man hear His voice in the streets. A bruised reed shall He not break, a smoking flax shall He not quench, till He send forth judgment unto victory. And in His Name shall the Gentiles trust.*”-Matt.12:19-21). Rather, in the 1st Advent, the Messiah would behave in such a way in the midst of physical conflict (conflict which threatened to overthrow the future hope of the Messiah’s Kingship in Israel, so it seemed) which would lead to a worldwide dominion over the Gentiles via His betrayal and substitutionary death! But how... you wonder? According to prophecy, Christ would be betrayed for blood-money (Zech. 11:12, Matt. 26:14-15), by a “*friend*” (Ps. 55:12-14, 41:9, Zech. 13:6, Matt. 26:49-50), and the unsuspecting disciples which followed Him would forsake Him (Zech. 13:7,

Matt. 26:56, Mk. 14:27), only then to be accused by false witnesses before an assembly of Jews (Ps. 35:11, Matt. 26:59-60), to be interrogated and condemned by the heathen ruler Pontius Pilate (“*And He answered him to **never a word**; insomuch that the governor marveled greatly*”-Matt.27:14), and, thus, moreover, He would be smitten, beaten, bruised, and spat upon (Isa. 50:6, 53:5, 7, Matt. 27:12-14, 26, 29-30) --- all the while remaining silent! This is profound behavior for a KING in the thrall of injustice! Yes, and therefore Matthew was compelled to put the Jews in memory of this profound prophecy by Isaiah concerning the Messiah’s unexpected behavior. Do you remember when the Lord Jesus willingly surrendered Himself into the hands of injustice, saying to Peter, “*Put again thy sword into his place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword*” (Matt. 26:52)? Do you remember how Jesus said to Pilate several hours after His surrender, “*My Kingdom is not of this world: if My Kingdom were of this world, then would My servants fight, that I should not be delivered to the Jews: but now is My Kingdom not from hence*” (John 18:36)! This is no ordinary King or Kingdom... this is for sure.

Doubtlessly, if Jesus Christ would have *opened His mouth* to make a defense before the court of Jews which examined Him on that predestined night of Christ’s substitutionary condemnation, all men would have been unraveled from their mischievous cause insomuch that Jesus would have been freed and His accusers punished! Yea, but instead... “*Jesus held His peace*”. The High Priest could hardly believe Jesus’ behavior, and said, “Answerest thou nothing” (Matt. 26:62-63)!? If Jesus Christ would have made a defense of Himself at any time *in word only*, without any physical force, the multitudes of both the Jews and the Gentiles would have been undone from the spell of Satan and, finding the Man innocent, would have ushered Him away from the scourging court, out from the interrogation shackles, far yonder from the road to Calvary’s hill! We can be sure that if, at any time, Jesus would have given *a verbal defense* of His Person and Work... the events which would have transpired would have been just as it always was in every previous instance when He opened His mouth to speak! – the multitudes would have stood in silent admiration and astonishment (Matt. 7:28-29, 9:8, 26, 31, 33), the common people would have believed on Him (Mk. 12:37, Matt. 12:23), the Pharisees, Lawyers, and Scribes would have been unable to answer Him (Matt. 22:46, Mk. 12:34, Lk. 20:40), and the soldiers who had been sent to seize Him would have been utterly disarmed (“*Never a man spake like this man*”, the soldiers confessed!-John7:46) or fallen backward upon the ground (“*As soon then as He had said unto them, I am He, they went backward, and fell to the ground*”-John18:6)! But, alas, and glory to God the Father and our Lord Jesus Christ, “*He was oppressed, and He was afflicted, yet He **OPENED NOT HIS MOUTH**: He is brought as a Lamb to the slaughter, and as a sheep before her shearers **is dumb**, so He **OPENETH NOT HIS MOUTH***” (Isa. 53:7)! Contrary to the popular opinion of 1st century Judaism, when the promised Messiah did appear it was for this a carefully detailed and foretold cause – Self-sacrifice, Self-surrender, and Silent-Endurance! Therefore in the hour of Jesus’ betrayal and in times of distress, times where Kings were expected to fight and overcome their adversaries to begin their Kingdom from thenceforth, Jesus Christ surrendered. He was not an ordinary King of Israel whose reign is temporary, whose Kingdom is of this world, whose swords were swung by arms of flesh and blood... Christ said, “*My Kingdom is not of this world*” (John 18:36)! The common Jew (the disciples included) was so estranged from the aforementioned characteristics of the Messiah’s conduct during the 1st Advent that Peter, of all people, took Jesus aside and “*began to rebuke Him*” when the Lord began to confide the secrets of His coming death and resurrection to His closest disciples (Matt. 16:16-28). It seemed so contrary to every former King of Israel, and it was! The Lord Jesus was about to surrender Himself to a conspiracy of injustice that former Kings would have fought against and subdued by brute force! This conduct was supported by the letter of the Law in every other circumstance except that of the coming Messiah, according to prophecy. Jesus Christ had power to reign as King in worldwide dominion over the Jews and Gentiles by the most unexpected means --- by Self-Sacrifice and Self-Surrender to the cause of criminal injustice! Unlike every other King of the Jews which went before Him, Jesus Christ could not die! If the Jews only knew this it would have given them some pause. They had a greater problem on their hands than what death could silence into forgetfulness! Glory to God the Father and our Lord Jesus Christ, He is alive!

Before moving forward in the Book of Matthew, one further note needs to be made concerning Matthew 12:15-21. This one attribute of the Man, Jesus Christ – **The TOUCH-able-ness of Human Redemption** – was so notoriously spread abroad that when the multitudes gathered around Him (accounted in Matt. 12:15-21 & Mk. 3:6-

12) He asked that he might find refuge in a boat to preach to the people from a removed location. He did this, “lest they should throng Him. For He healed many insomuch that they pressed upon Him for to TOUCH Him, as may as had plagues. And unclean spirits, when they saw him, fell down before Him, and cried, saying, Thou art the Son of God. And He straitly charged them that they should not make Him known” (Mk. 3:9-12). Amazing! This is truly amazing. This was no ordinary Man. This was no ordinary King! “*But Jesus called them unto him, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them. But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister; And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant: Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many*” (Matt. 20:25-28).

12:22-45 → **The Manner of the Messiah’s Coming** (signified by the statement, “*The Kingdom of God is come*”): The Lord Jesus, having defied the Jewish expectancy of the Messiah’s conduct in full volume, theretofore becoming a spectacle of misconduct and a reproach to 1st century Judaism, and then, as a consequence, the stage was set for His murder insomuch that He was compelled to “*withdraw Himself*” (Matt. 12:14-15), Matthew pointed out the end-all interaction which severed Christ from Pharisaical Judaism once and for all! This end-all point of no return for the Jews was attested to by Matthew here, at this point (in Matt. 12:22-37), signifying the manifestation of utter reprobation to be blasphemy against the Holy Ghost (Matt. 12:31-32).

Upon the event wherein the Pharisees did utterly condemn themselves, the Lord saw fit to declare the root issue which led to their demise – their lack of *inward* religion. The Lord Jesus conveyed the spiritual anatomy of *inward* religion in Matthew 12:33-37. The Pharisaical Jews were, therefore, “A generation of vipers”, and how can such men “speak good things” (Matt. 12:34)? Because they lacked *inward* conversion toward God, and because they were utterly bankrupt from all the necessary influences of the Spirit of God (Matt. 13:9-16, John 6:44, 63, 7:16-17, Rom. 11:7-10), the coming of the Messiah and His Kingdom was utterly indiscernible to the once-born Jews. Jesus Christ did declare the manner of His Kingdom and His Kingship, how he opposed the Kingdom of Satan, bound strong men, spoiled their possessions, and liberated their captives! By these deeds the point was proven, “*If I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the Kingdom of God is come unto you*” (Matt. 12:28). The Lord Jesus was declaring the discernible fruits of the Messiah and His Kingdom which, evidently, was not of this world! This is a spectacle to be wondered at by the Jews!

If the Messiah came to defend a Kingdom which was of this world, like all the biblical and God-sent Kings of Israelite history did exemplify, the King of the Jews would have taken out his sword and fought for a physical Kingdom, and, furthermore, anytime he would have encountered a demon-possessed person he would have taken a sword in his hand and slain the cursed person, according to the letter of the Law (Ex. 22:18, Lev. 20:6, 27, 19:31, Deut. 18:10-12). The fact that the Lord Jesus battled the Kingdom of Satan from an unprecedented dimension proves the point that He is an unprecedented King of Israel! According to prophecy, the Lord Jesus had all authority to cast out and subdue devils of any sort in fulfillment of what was foretold as Christ’s express purpose to overthrow, spoil, and punish the rulers, princes, and spirits which pertain to the invisible and worldwide kingdom of hell (“*And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; and it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel*” -Gen. 3:5, Rom. 16:20, Heb. 2:14-15, Isa. 24:21, Lk. 10:18, Rev. 12:7-8, 17, 1 Jn. 3:8, Col. 2:15, Rev. 20:10). And having this authority, the Lord Jesus did not slay the demon-possessed (which was just, according to the Law) --- He forgave and liberated them! What a wonder! This is the Kingdom of the Messiah at hand, truly! The Spirit in which Christ came (Lk. 9:55) to Israel was not to kill the demon-possessed or the adulteress, as the letter of the justice did righteously demand (demon-possessed: Ex. 22:18, Lev. 20:6, 27, 19:31, Deut. 18:10-12; adulteress: Lev. 20:10, Deut. 22:21-24)... the purpose of Christ’s coming was not to enact the curse/justice of the Law but to bear it - to absorb it and take it upon Himself (“*the chastisement of our peace was upon Him*”-Isaiah53:5)! Or, in other words, His purpose was not to bring a famine upon the Land to punish the wicked doers according to their evil deeds (Deut. 11:17, 28:23-24)... no, my reader. Rather, it was to bring streams in desert places and spiritual health to a hell-bound people until the dry land becomes a pool of water (Isa. 35:5-8, 41:18).

*Jesus came down, from Heaven up high, having been sent to every earthly kingdom to proclaim the reason why.
 Because God looked down, hearing the sinners cry, in Satan's misery held fast and justly doomed to die.
 Jesus came forth, walking to and fro, to taste of humanities misery and all their sufferings know!
 To drink of the cup of wrath, to let the sinners go, to go back to the Father and make all the world know.
 God became a Man, it was a predestinated plan, to punish Satan's pride and let the oppressed go free!
 Where death abounded, and misery remained, the blind were astounded and the dumb did proclaim!
 Christ The Life, did all people astound, as mercy like rivers did circle the starving people all around!
 The people came and drank, the Life-giving power, every man finding relief from their sin-sick hour!
 Because as sin did abound, **much more** grace was found, till every devil in proximity around cried out,
 "MERCY!" ...but none was found.*

**"I will ransom them from the power of the grave; I will redeem them from death:
 O death, I will be thy plagues; O grave, I will be thy destruction: repentance shall
 be hid from Mine eyes." – Hosea 13:14**

*The Punisher came from heaven, to send forth the eleven,
 to plague the grave and undo death, persecuting the devil!
 Christ's plagues blew in, they brought LIFE to everything,
 till sinners round about them were compelled to SHOUT and SING!
 A world-wide proclamation, heralded by healing-miracles and bread from Heaven,
 the preachers of Christ's Kingdom announced Jesus Christ's resurrection!
 So that those bound in sin, in death's misery detained,
 were all welcomed in to feast on Christ's liberty displayed!
 The fruits of Christ's Kingdom were all in hand,
 they bore them up for show before every fallen man,
 gazing upon them – promises indeed – they were eaten by all who were in need,
 because all who drew near to this Incarnate Man, He FREED!
 a foretaste Divine, of what shall be wrought by the resurrection in time!
 Because it was for us He died, He wants us to know the reason why,
 to taste of the Fountain of Life and feel, we need not ever die!
 Because, Jesus said, "Whosoever believeth in Me shall never die."*

12:38-42 → A Turning to the Gentiles / The Gentiles Justified & the Jews Condemned at the Balance of Divine Judgment: The Pharisees had become human-beasts of the most contemptible sort, like vipers are the abhorrence of all men, thus they saw fit to kill and remove from among all mankind the Prince of Life Himself, Jesus Christ! Their conspiring was already underway (and already introduced in the context since Matt. 12:14) and thus the Lord Jesus gave His infallible opinion on the matter that He knew was secretly in-the-making. All people who would truly believe by seeing signs and wonders (see Matt. 11:3-6), to them Christ was exceeding abundant in goodness and mercy! Yes, He shewed them many signs over and over again (*"Except ye see signs and wonders, ye will not believe"*—John 4:48)! But to those who would not believe even after they had personally seen and heard of many signs and wonders (Lk. 4:23), and, furthermore, after all of mankind was stirred into a frenzy over the impact of the many signs and wonders being performed in every place (John 11:48), yes, I say, after the matter was an undeniable fact which could be reasonably denied by no one (John 11:47-48, Acts 10:37-38, 26:26), then did the Pharisees make their feigned request: *"Master, we would see a sign from Thee"* (Matt. 12:38). To them, Christ said, *"An evil and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign; and there shall no sign be given to it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas"*.

Masterfully, the Lord Jesus was alluding to His own death (the success of their secret conspiracy begun in Matthew 12:14). The Lord was not deceived by their feigned request. Instead, He relayed to them the sign which they shall soon see and know, His death, burial, and resurrection! Christ identified His own ministry to be that of contempt to Jewish pride, like the prophet Jonah's ministry was a sacrilege to the merciless and insidious self-righteousness of

the Jews in Jonah's day - namely because Jonah was the only prophet in biblical history who was personally sent to the Gentiles to prophesy in the polluted land of the heathen, and that, with success! Consequentially Jonah was a man who was rejected by the Jews for this unprecedented deed, but, I say again --- the man was received by the Gentiles of Nineveh! The Lord was hereby conveying to the Pharisees that they are worse off and more vile than the heathen nation of Nineveh, and that Pharisees, who supposed they are superior in holiness and goodness above any Gentile Nation, would be condemned by a Gentile woman from the south in the day of Judgment (Matt. 12:41-42). Superior greatness belonged to Christ, above Jonah and Solomon, thus superior wretchedness belonged to the Jews and the Pharisees!

Though the Pharisees would succeed in their evil cause to murder the Lord Jesus, He would rise again... an event which would be heard of around the world! From thenceforth will the Pharisees know the sign of Jonah because, yet again, like in Jonah's day, the world of Gentiles will hear from the Man who came back from the heart of the earth like Jonah came back from the great deep! Think of it, my reader! The sign of Jonah's resurrection from his watery grave was spread throughout the heathen world by the time Jonah stepped foot in the Land of Nineveh. The ship-mates at sea with Jonah filled the countryside with their staggering report! Thus, Nineveh had heard all about the man who was cast off the ship while at sea, only to be swallowed up by a whale. They heard all about how, before this, the heathen men appealed each one to his own gods to no avail. They heard how the ship-mates discovered the man Jonah was asleep in the boat for sorrow. They heard how, at last, Jonah took the blame upon himself and gave the ship-mates instructions whereby they would save their own lives because the storm was for his sake. They heard how, at last, when all hope was lost and every other plan failed, the ship-mates casted Jonah into the sea only to find his words proven true! With the angry Deity immediately assuaged, the unrelenting storm which endangered all of their lives came to a startling halt! Therefore, at last, when the man, Jonah, was alive from the great deep (and he, having told the ship-mates about his unwillingness to obey the voice of the Lord), Nineveh heard the message from a resurrected man! Even so, at last, the world of Gentiles will hear Jesus - they will repent, believe, and be converted, to the bitter and angry jealousy of the once-born Jews! Shockingly, and seemingly contrary to the letter of the Law (Gen. 26:4, Jer. 33:19-26), the redeemed multitude of the Gentiles have become "Abraham's seed" (Gal. 3:29) through Christ! To the Gentiles, it was spoken, "*If ye be Christ's, then are ye Abraham's seed, and heirs according to the promise*" (Gal. 3:29).

12:43-45 → **An Unclean Nation Possessed by Unclean Spirits:** Though the King and Kingdom of the Messiah was altogether indiscernible to apostate Judaism, the Lord Jesus made His presence known among them by the accompanying signs which dignified Him as King (i.e. power to overthrow and pillage the captives and possessions of the Satan's Kingdom; Matt. 12:28). Albeit, when Jesus' tour among them does cease and the witnesses of His resurrection, the apostles, go into all the world in Gentile-saving-power as a testimony to the God-forsaken Jews, the latter end of the Jews will be worse for them than in the beginning. Though the physical nation of Israel and the infrastructure of the Kingdom of God existing in the fleshly lineage of Abraham was so exceedingly blessed by the incarnation and touring of their long-looked-for Messiah - and though the Lord Jesus did cast out devils, heal the sick, raise the dead, cleanse the lepers, and go about Israel doing good to all men who were oppressed by the Satan (Acts 10:38)! - the latter end of national Israel (Abraham's literal seed) will be worse for them than at the beginning! At the beginning, before the Lord did ever come and bind the strong man's grip over their lives and people for a space of time... this was a better estate than how they shall be! Alas, this evil end! The Lord said, "Even so shall it be also unto this wicked generation" (Matt. 12:45)! Israel was an unclean and polluted nation which was temporarily relieved by a Fountain for Cleansing sprung up in their midst! But then, at last, after they can no longer endure the rivers of cleanliness which did meander abroad throughout the Land, they will kill the Prince of Life by hanging Him on a Cross! They will thus curse the man who came to bless! And in national Israel's latter end Satan's Tyranny will resume its former regiment in 7-fold greater power and wickedness than before, ending in the 70 AD annihilation of all they called life! Foretelling this event, as Jesus journeyed down the final boulevard of the murderous conspiracy preplanned by the Jews and predestinated by God, Jesus said, "Daughters of Jerusalem, weep not for Me, but weep for yourselves, and for your children" (Lk. 23:28).

12:46-50 → **Nationalistic & Familial Alliances Announced as Irrelevant:** Now, at last, with the doom of Abraham's literal seed prophetically declared by Jesus Christ, their soon-to-be crucified King, Matthew points the attention of all men to understand the anatomy of the Kingdom of God which shall exist thenceforth. The Kingdom of God will exist, irrespective of flesh and blood and impartial toward literal Israel, so much so that Jesus' literal and physical Mother, brothers, and sisters, will be left outside of "The Family", so to speak. The Family and Lineage of this Kingdom will exist otherwise, "For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in Heaven, the same is My brother, and sister, and mother" (Matt. 12:50), Jesus said. Upon this final answer Jesus left His mother, brothers, and sisters disrespected (in a carnal sense) and outside of the Family, so to speak, when they "stood without" desiring to speak with Him (probably thinking Jesus had gone mad; see Mk. 3:21, John 7:1-5). Jesus unashamedly gestured toward those who stood around Him to hear the word of God by faith (contrary to His carnal family), saying of them, "Behold My mother and My brethren" (Matt. 12:49)! With godly impartiality and sincerity the Lord Jesus delivered the faithful judgments of the Kingdom of God just as He had received them from God: to His greatest enemies and His closest friends, carnally speaking. Because Jesus showed no partiality toward his Mother, brothers, and sisters, neither should His followers. Today, in this generation, for the cause of Christ's Kingdom and for the good of every Christian's carnal family and friends, a parallel witness should be upheld! One day, my reader, not too far yonder: the entire number of individuals from every generation who became the Family of God in truth will dine together in a heavenly fellowship God's Family Reunion, just as Christ foretold in Matthew 8:11-12, saying, "*many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven. But the children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth*" (Matthew 8:11-12). Hallelujah!

13:1-52 → **The Messiah's Kingdom in its Beginning, Continual Rise, & Consummation** (via seven parables which express unutterable mysteries): The Messiah's enthronement is an unexpected and mysterious Kingdom in its *beginning* and how it would *progress*, a mystery "which none of the princes of this world knew: for had they known it, they would not have crucified the Lord of glory" (1 Cor. 2:8). It was, alas, "hid" from their eyes (Lk. 19:42)! And the Gentiles shout – "Alas, and did my Savior bleed, and did the Sovereign die?!" Christ lamented at their blindness to God's mystery, and that for this – **their blindness** – He said to Israel: "thou **knewest not** the time of thy visitation" (Lk. 19:44). The mystery of the Messiah and His Kingdom was revealed to a chosen remnant who were elected to believe. Christ said to them, "Blessed are **your eyes**, for they see: and **your ears**, for they hear. For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them" (Matt. 13:16-17, see also Romans 11:5-7). Beloved readers, Christ revealed these things to His disciples, a "little flock" (Lk. 12:32), while the vast and numerous Israelite nation groped in spiritual blindness, deafness, and confusion of face. Christ preached IN THEIR HEARING, the mysterious *beginning* and continual *rise* of His Kingdom, how He would be the rejected by the Jews, how this would turn and allow the engraftment of the Gentiles (Rom. 11:7-25), and how that finally, through the Gentiles, a final salvation of physical Israel would consummate the ages – a consummation which, shockingly, would usher the whole world into a regeneration of sinless bliss and paradise – somehow, a worldwide experience described as "life from the dead" (Rom. 11:12, 15), where the creation itself will be "delivered from the bondage of corruption into the glorious liberty of the children of God" (Rom. 8:21)! Hallelujah!

Who can expound such mysteries? To so unlearned a people? In so few sentences? By open air sermons? To an impatient, unbelieving, proud, and self-confident Israel? Through **parables**, my reader, Christ did. Why parables, you ask? For good reason. Christ used parables to explain the untold "mysteries of the Kingdom of Heaven" (Matt. 13:11) because, by using parables, He **hid the meaning** of the parables from the damned and **revealed it** to the elect. These parables would metaphorically and pictorially reveal: **(Firstly)** how the Kingdom would suddenly *begin* and *rise* in power – through the death of One Man, as a mustard seed (Matt. 13:31-32), falling into the ground and dying (John 12:23-24). This marks the beginning of the Messiah's everlasting, unconquerable Kingdom and Throne (Dan. 2:44-45), the throne of David (Isa. 9:6-7, Zech. 14:9, Ps. 72:8-11, 110:1-7, Acts 2:22-36), and this Kingdom, **(Secondarily)** though it be by the smallest of beginnings, like as a pitiful mustard seed is the smallest of seeds (Matt. 13:31-32), it will one day rise from the earth in which it was buried, and it, surpassing all other trees, will

extend its branches into the very heavens above. By interpretation, the Messianic Kingdom will consummate in *worldwide sovereignty*, thrusting earthly humans upward into heavenly citizenship, calling heaven's otherworldly powers to come down for earthly regenerations. Its roots extending down into the earth, its branches high into the heavens, it will come to be that, in Christ, heaven is the home of clay-made humanity while they abide on earth, whereabouts staggeringly, heaven cometh down to earth and earth up to heaven (Col. 2:20, 3:1-4, Matt. 6:9-10, Heb. 3:1, Rev. 21:2, 22:16-17)! Alas, and did my Savior bleed, and did the Sovereign die?! So that, for me, even for me...I see "a ladder set up on the earth, and the top of it reached to heaven: and behold the angels of God ascending and descending on it" (Gen. 28:11-12)! Do you understand? Do you have ears to hear? My reader, the parables of Christ explain the mysterious beginning of Christ's Kingdom, how that, in its continual rising, it is undetected and unconquerable in progress, to the end that an eventual and unthinkable consummation would fulfill all things. [For a comprehensive and detailed overview of Matthew Chapter 13 see [Chapter 14](#).]

13:53-38 → **From Whence Cometh This Man:** The question is not, "Whence hath this man this wisdom, and these mighty works?" The real question is, From whence cometh this Man? If only they knew and believed the scripture which they have grown up hearing! Even as Isaiah prophesied, saying, "*Therefore the Lord Himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and shall all His Name Immanuel*" (Isa. 7:14)! "For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end, upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgment and with justice from henceforth even for ever. The zeal of the LORD of hosts will perform this" (Isa. 9:6-7). Aye, Jesus' home town! They who could have been the most blessed became the most cursed! What a tragedy! What an ungodly familiarity they had with the God-Man! Oh, let it not be so in our day, dear Lord! This was not Joseph's son but *God's Son*! – And we His *brethren*... (Heb. 2:11-12). This is a mysterious Kingdom indeed! All of Israel was happy to hear that Saul was King (for, "*he was higher than any of the people from his shoulders and upward*"-1 Sam.10:23). Samuel said, "*See ye him whom the LORD hath chosen, that there is none like him among all the people? And all the people shouted, and said, God save the King*" (1 Sam. 10:24). But of this Jesus, it was written, "*there is no beauty that we should desire Him*." Would to God that all men would desire Him! But, shockingly, He is sprung up from the most unexpected of places, to begin a Kingdom of unexpected infrastructure, to surmount all Kingdoms with unprecedented power! "*For He shall grow up before Him as a tender plant, and as a root out of a dry ground: He hath no form nor comeliness; and when we shall see Him, there is no beauty that we should desire Him. He is despised and rejected of men; a Man of sorrows, and acquainted with grief: and we hid as it were our faces from Him; He was despised, and we esteemed Him not*" (Isa. 53:2-3). The devils "knew" Jesus but His hometown didn't...

The Accolades of a Reformer during "The Time of Reformation"

"Who hath believed our report? And to whom is the arm of the LORD *revealed*?" – Isaiah 53:1

"At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast **hid** these things from the *wise and prudent*, and hast revealed them unto *babes*. Even so, Father: for so it seemed good in thy sight. All things are delivered unto me of my Father: and no man knoweth the Son, but the Father; neither knoweth any man the Father, save the Son, and *he to whomsoever the Son will reveal him*." – Matthew 11:25-27

"The Time of Reformation" is a time wherein the Law is *fulfilled* and not *destroyed*, though it is fulfilled in the most unexpected ways to an unbelieving public from whom it was hidden (Matt. 11:25-27). The truth is, if Jesus Christ was not God manifested in human flesh – the embodiment and fulfillment of the Moral and Ceremonial Law – the various miracles which He did would have been Law-breaking according to scripture. If, and only if, Jesus Christ was not God... He was breaking the Law. In other words, if, and only if, Jesus Christ was not the embodied fulfillment of the Ceremonial Law, the Man from whom proceeds all the virtue and substance which the shadows of the Old Testament

typologically represented, then the Law-breaking deeds or miracles that He performed would have been Law-breaking miracles! Albeit, in truth, Jesus Christ was a more glorious fulfillment of Old Testament salvation! He was a more effectual Savior than what Old Testament salvation provided as means of redemption for the sin and ceremonial problem of man. But because Jesus Christ forgave, cleansed, and saved by an ulterior means besides what the letter of the Law explicitly offered via shadows (the Jews being blinded to prophecy and shadow-to-reality fulfillments of the Law), the once-born Jews rejected him with “scriptural arguments”. The Jews were able to incriminate the Lord Jesus on substantial grounds according to scripture if *in fact* Jesus Christ was just a regular Jew... but He wasn’t. Since the Jews were unbelieving that Jesus Christ was GOD, they were bent upon a seemingly justifiable zeal which was supported by scripture, so it appeared (according to the wisdom and prudence of the unbelievers; i.e. “the wise and prudent”), and thereby they were able to estrange the mind of the common people who were intimidated by the oppressive exercise of their authority (an authority which monopolized the means of salvation in Old Testament terms: “*the Jews had agreed already, that if any man did confess that He was the Christ, he should be put out of the synagogue*”-John9:22). Albeit, an unprecedented Man performing an unprecedented salvation (physically and spiritually) necessitates an unprecedented behavior from the salvation-enriched followers of Jesus, “the Way, the Truth, and the Life” (Jn. 14:6).

- 1) **Power to cleanse Lepers** (by TOUCH: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 8:1-4, shadow: Lev. 14:1-20]
- 2) **Power to cleanse Gentiles** (by TOUCH: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 8:5-13, shadow: Lev. 10:10, 11:47, 20:25, Ezek. 22:26, 44:23] Note: *The future state of the Kingdom of God is foreshadowed and foretold.*
- 3) **Power to heal all sickness & diseases** (by TOUCH: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 8:14-17, shadow: Ex. 15:26, Deut. 7:15, Ps. 103:3, Isa. 53:4] Note: *Jesus Christ is the manifestation of, “The Word”, or in other words He is the manifestation of every Old Testament promise given to Israel existing in bodily form. To fulfill the promises which God gave to Israel, God gave Israel His only begotten Son.*
- 4) **Power to overthrow the Kingdom of Satan via the casting out of devils instead of killing the demon-possessed** (a mercy: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 8:14-17, shadow: Ex. 22:18, Lev. 20:6, 27, 19:31, Deut. 18:10-12]
- 5) **Humility to suffer for and save a guilty & condemned people standing-alone** (a collective justification: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 8:19-20, Rom. 5:15, 19-20, shadow: Ex. 32:32-33, Ezek. 18:20, 30, Jonah 1:12-16, Num. 16:22, 17:13, Josh. 22:16-20, Num. 25:1-13, Josh. 7:25, 1 Chron. 21:15-17, Num. 32:14-15, 23]
- 6) **Royalty & Holiness Superior to all former codes which allowed for the dishonor and neglect of otherwise undeniable duties** (a collective, all-tribe, and all-race royalty: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 8:21-22, shadow: Ex. 20:12, Deut. 5:16, Ex. 28:43, Num. 16:40]
- 7) **Stand-Alone Authority to hush and still all the plagues of God’s wrath with a single word** (a pacification of wrath: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 8:23-27, shadow: Ps. 89:8-9, 107:24-29, Jonah 1:12-16, Num. 16:22, 17:13, Josh. 22:16-20, Num. 25:1-13, Josh. 7:25, 1 Chron. 21:15-17, Num. 32:14-15, 23]
- 8) **Power to expel all uncleanness, its agents, and its enterprises, becoming a cleansing wave of terror to men at peace with the Judaistic norm of Satanic and swine-like uncleanness** (a cleansing: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 8:28-34, shadow: Lev. 10:10, 11:47, 20:25, Ezek. 22:26, 44:23, Ex. 22:18, Lev. 20:6, 27, 19:31, Deut. 18:10-12, Num. 19:16-22]
- 9) **Power to forgive sins without OT ceremonies, sacrifices, or judgments** (a forgiveness: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 9:1-8, Isa. 53:11, Rev. 13:8, 5:6, shadow: Numbers 15:27-28, Ex. 32:32-33, Ezek. 18:20, 30]
- 10) **Power to cleanse Unclean Company** (in TOUCH-able radius which was seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 9:9-13, shadow: Lev. 10:10, 11:47, 20:25, Ezek. 22:26, 44:23]
- 11) **Conduct which lived-out Law-fulfillments by a virtue superior than what the letter offered** [Matt. 9:14-17]
- 12) **Power to cleanse the Dead** (by TOUCH: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 9:18-26,

shadow: Numbers 19:14]

- 13) **Power to cleanse unclean persons defiled by running issues** (by TOUCH: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 9:18-26, shadow: Lev. 15:19]
- 14) **Power to impute and impart Cleanness inside of ambassadorial messengers** who would thereby become walking Law-fulfillments of cleansing power in the Name of Jesus for all who would receive the Man of their message (TOUCH-able redemption spread through ambassadors who express the Man, miracles, and message necessary for cleanness: seeming Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 9:35-10:31, shadow: Lev. 10:10, 11:47, 20:25, Ezek. 22:26, 44:23]
- 15) **Power to Denounce “Clean Territories” (i.e. Israelite Territories) as Unclean Territories** because of their relationship to the Clean Man and His messengers (a curse: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 10:9-31, shadow: Ezek. 45:1, Amos 9:7]
- 16) **Power to rebel against family** (a dishonor: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 10:32-42, shadow: Ex. 20:12, Deut. 5:16, Ex. 32:26-29, Deut. 33:8-10]
- 17) **Power to be a cursed Man** (to absorb the curse of all mankind and absolve it via the Crucifix) [reality: Matt. 10:32-42, shadow: Deut. 21:23]
- 18) **The Notorious Unclean Man Who Eats and Drinks With Sinners** (an outreach: seeming Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 11:1-19, shadow: Lev. 10:10, 11:47, 20:25, Ezek. 22:26, 44:23]
- 19) **Power to Denounce “Clean Territories” (i.e. Israelite Territories) as Unclean Territories** because of their relationship to the Clean Man and His messengers. Contrary to popular controversy and regardless of the letter of the Law, to reject Christ means personal, Household, City-wide, or National Uncleanness [reality: Matt. 11:20-30, shadow: Ezek. 45:1, Amos 9:7]
- 20) **Power to Profane the Sabbath by right of Royalty & Circumstance** (royalty superior over the Temple itself: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 12:1-8, John 5:17, shadow: Ex. 20:8-11, Lev. 23:3, Num. 15:32-36]
- 21) **Power to be a Sword-less King of Israel who surrenders to the cause of injustice** (a surrender: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 12:15-21, 20:25-28 shadow: Ps. 18:32-50, 1 Chron. 20:1, 1 Kings 10:9, Jer. 23:5, Psalm 72]
- 22) **Power to offer virtuous justification based upon His eventual crucifixion** (contrary to the letter of the Law) and, thus, through the duration of Jesus’ entire ministry the rivers of abundant mercy and grace did flow throughout the dry and thirsty Land [reality: Matt. 12:22-45, shadow: Ex. 32:32-33, Ezek. 18:20, 30]
- 23) **Power to welcome death and thereby win the Gentile world** (a triumph: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 12:38-42, shadow: Ex. 32:32-33, Ezek. 18:20, 30, Amos 3:2]
- 24) **Power to begin a family lineage of Abraham’s seed in the flesh of Gentiles** (a family: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 12:38-42, 46-50, Gal. 3:29 shadow: Gen. 26:4, Jer. 33:19-26]
- 25) **Power to loose a Land from the dominion of Unclean Spirits and the defilements of Uncleanness**, and power to leave and abandon them into the hands of their defiled oppressors once again (an authority: seemingly Law-breaking) [reality: Matt. 12:43-45, shadow: Ezek. 45:1, Amos 9:7]

The Ceremonial Law-fulfillment of His TOUCH!

As Jesus Christ went about Israel doing good, it became apparent that this Man was a body into which all sin would be imputed and absolved, from which all righteousness would be imputed and imparted to others...

Jesus Christ was extolled as supreme in greatness by the greatest prophet (Lk. 3:16), and twice, by the voice of God the Father booming from Heaven, to the end that He would be recognized and obeyed above all other prophets: especially by his closest rivals to Jewish fame, Moses and Elijah (Matt. 17:3-5, John 1:17, 5:45)! Think of it, my reader! The Lord Jesus was rejoiced over and admired by Abraham (John 8:56-58), the Father of our Faith! The Lord Jesus was seen by King David and, by confession, worshiped (Lk. 20:41-44, Acts 2:29-36, Lk. 6:3-5)! The Lord Jesus was wiser than

Solomon (Matt. 12:42, Lk. 11:31), Lord over the Sabbath (Matt. 12:8, Mark. 2:28, Lk. 6:5), a greater prophet and sign than Jonah (Matt. 12:39-41), and, furthermore, He was alive from everlasting (Heb. 1:1-2)! This being the case, the Lord Jesus was salvation in a **Person**... and to brush by Him was a life-changing event! As the multitudes encountered Jesus Christ as He traveled to and fro, they experienced salvation *physically* and *spiritually*! The energy of salvation seemed to explode from His very being! Those who followed-on in **near proximity** were filled with a continual awe and wonder at the past, at the present, with holy anticipation of the near future. As long as Jesus Christ did abide among the 1st century multitudes, all who were in **near proximity** to His **Person** did experience waves of salvation rolling over their *physical* and *spiritual* frames (Luke 5:34-35; see also John 17:6, 12)! - They all, being quickened by the power of His spoken word (John 6:63, 68, 15:3, 18:6, Acts 9:4, 22:7), healed by the present-tense ability He possessed to create mankind from the dust (i.e. eyes from clay in John 9:6 & Gen. 2:7), made-alive by the life-giving wind of His breath (Gen. 2:7, Job 33:4, Ezek. 37:9, John 20:22), ceremonially cleansed by the Law-fulfillment of His touch (Mk. 6:56, Matt. 14:36), embraced in salvation by the shadow of His bodily frame (Ps. 91:1, John 13:23, Mark 10:13-16, Isa. 40:11, Acts 5:15), were shocked by the magnetism of His unprecedented Person and Work (Mark 7:37, 11:18, Lk. 4:32, 5:9, John 1:29, 36, 7:46, John 17:6, 12)! “*And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written*” (John 21:25)! As Jesus Christ went about Israel doing good, it became apparent that this Man was a body into which all sin would be imputed and absolved, from which all righteousness would be imputed and imparted to others.

Matthew’s message of the Gospel is very clear! Jesus Christ, who cleansed Lepers by TOUCH (Matt. 8:1-4) does also cleanse Gentiles by KEEPING COMPANY with them (Matt. 8:5-13)! He who has power to heal all sicknesses and diseases by touch (Matt. 8:14-17) and unloose the otherwise doomed-to-die demon possessed individuals who roam the countryside (Matt. 8:14-17), is able to do so because He has chosen to lay down His life as a sin-offering before God the Father on behalf of the Israelites among whom He traversed (Matt. 8:19-20). He, having superior royalty and holiness above all orders of consecration which were before Him (Matt. 8:21-22), began a ministry which would, in its consummation, fully reconcile man to God via the formerly un-TOUCH-able arena of redemption established in Heaven (Matt. 8:21-22, Heb. 9:23-28). Therefore Jesus, knowing from whence He came and whither He was going (John 3:13, 3:31, 8:14), had the ability to pacify the plagues of God’s wrath with stand-alone authority (Matt. 8:23-27). Naturally, also, He could cleanse and expel all uncleanness from a people or Land with a single word, uncleanness which whelmed like a tempestuous storm of threatening destruction (Matt. 8:28-34)... and this He did!

Just as Jesus Christ had power to forgive sins on earth (Matt. 9:1-8), He had power to cleanse a formerly unclean company of sinners and publicans (Matt. 9:9-13). Jesus Christ was the lived-out Law-fulfillment of every Old Testament operation of redemption in a superior form, shadow-to-reality (Matt. 9:14-17)! Therefore He had power to cleanse the dead and those defiled by running issues by a single TOUCH (Matt. 9:18-26)! Shockingly, and furthermore, Jesus imputed this power into ambassadorial messengers so that they did, similar to Christ, walk-out in Law-fulfillments of New Testament cleansing power to express the Man and message of salvation before lost multitudes (Matt. 9:35-10:31)! And when and if a City or people rejects Jesus Christ or His endowed messengers, the Lord was able to denounce those places as territorially unclean and territorially doomed (Matt. 10:9-31)! In such a mission which wields such superior powers of redemption as the aforementioned examples, the prerogative supersedes that of familial obligations (Matt. 10:32-42). Jesus Christ was the Man to whom all the curse of sin was imputed... thus the Man and His followers embrace the cross (Matt. 10:32-42, Deut. 21:23)! And as Jesus lived to embrace, absorb, and absolve the curse of sin and uncleanness, He embraced the unclean of society so as to make them clean (Matt. 11:1-19)! Albeit those who rejected His open-armed embrace did consequentially become unclean (Matt. 11:20-30), despite their observance of Old Testament operations of cleansing and redemption. Because of this... conflicts arose between the Clean Man and the unclean people, conflicts in which Jesus maintained the testimony of His greatness and superiority over any Old Testament situation (Matt. 12:1-8). As Jesus maintained this testimony with all authority and power, the Jews were driven in the madness of their folly to plot the murder of their own Messiah (Matt. 12:15-21). Jesus Christ, knowing this, did not fight against it... He surrendered to it (Matt. 12:15-21)! He had power to, thereby, accomplish a virtuous justification on behalf of cursed humanity (Matt. 12:22-45) - becoming a curse for them! Thus Jesus did welcome death and thereby win the Gentile world (Matt. 12:38-42), begin a new Family lineage of salvation in Abraham which included transformed

and newly born Gentiles-into-Israelites (Matt. 12:38-42, 46-50, Gal. 3:29)! And, shockingly, the Lord Jesus abandoned Jerusalem, the Jews, and Judaism to resume their former regiment which existed before His arrival with a 7-fold increase of demonic tyranny among them (Matt. 12:43-45)! Hereby and henceforth there began a Gentile World-Kingdom of the Jewish Messiah which is mysteriously spreading throughout the world up to this time right now, to suddenly spring forth into physical power at the end of time (Matthew 13)!

CHAPTER #20

Old Testament Clean & Unclean Laws Explicitly Cited & Applied as Exemplary Shadows for New Testament Realities

Section #1: Don't Be Deceived: *1st Century Judaism & 21st Century Christianity Exist in Antithetical Trajectories of Apostasy*

Matthew's message of the Gospel gives us ample reason why we must, by necessity, reconsider justice and cleanness as it relates to the Person of Jesus Christ. I say this because the Clean and Unclean Laws have not been *destroyed* but *fulfilled*! Because the Clean and Unclean Laws have passed into a greater and more glorious fulfillment from shadow-to-reality, they have not become irrelevant to the Christian life! This fact is easily demonstrated by comparing two passages of New Testament scripture.

"TOUCH not" → "Wherefore if ye be dead with Christ from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye subject to ordinances, (**TOUCH not**; taste not; handle not; which all are to perish with the using) after the commandments and doctrines of men?" – Col. 2:20-22

"TOUCH not" → "Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and **TOUCH not the unclean thing**; and I will receive you" – 2 Cor. 6:17

It is easy to understand that Colossians 2:20-22 is speaking of the Old Testament Clean and Unclean Laws which were but a shadow which has passed away, but let the reader take note: shadows existed to foretell coming realities! The apostle Paul is bold to affirm that Old Testament Law was "a shadow of things to **come**" (Col. 2:17)! Therefore, necessity is laid upon all Christians to abide by the Clean and Unclean Laws which have **come**, which are now – the New Testament reality defined by the inspired writers. Paul communicated the commandment, "touch not the unclean thing", as a New Testament reality! How does one become **unclean** in New Testament reality, you wonder? By way of introduction, let us remember what has been heretofore established in the Gospel of Matthew. Matthew undertook 28 Chapters to declare to the Jews the central issue which changed everything...

"One greater than the Temple" – Matt. 12:6

"A greater than Solomon is here" – Matt. 12:42

"A greater than Jonas is here" – Matt. 12:41

"For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son: That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father." – John 5:22-23

"All things are delivered unto Me of My Father" – Matthew 11:27

Thus, we must interpret the criminal act of **uncleanness** as it relates to the Person of Jesus Christ. This is because the magnitude of a crime committed is situational and circumstantial to the value and royalty of the place and people involved. This can be illustrated by the criminal act of thievery, for example; the penalty fluctuates with the value of the object or the royalty of the person stolen. Value and royalty changes criminality because it is a greater evil to steal or

harm those things or persons which are the most precious and irreplaceable. In the specific case of 1st century Judaism considered within the scope of human history as a whole, the greatest of sins are those committed against the greatest manifestation of God. Therefore if, in 1st century Judaism, the greatest manifestation of God ever to exist was beheld and rejected – One greater than Jonas, Solomon, and the Temple – then the Jews were, consequentially, the greatest sinners ever to exist!

Because all cleanness is determined by humanity's relationship to the Cleansing Man, when and if they reject Jesus Christ they are thereby reduced into a state of utter uncleanness beyond any woeful denouncement expressed to any Unclean Land or people throughout all of human history (*"It shall be more tolerable for the Land of Sodom and Gomorrah in the Day of Judgment, than for that city."*-Matt.10:15, Lk.10:12).

Because Jesus Christ is the embodiment of the Moral and Ceremonial Law, when and if anyone rejects Him they are committing a crime which is equivalent to rejecting the counsel of *every Law* in the Old Testament (*"Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of Me. And ye will not come to Me, that ye might have life."*-John5:38-39).

Because Jesus Christ is the embodiment of all prophecy and promise – the Prophet of prophets – when and if Israel rejects Him they are committing a crime of unlawful bloodshed which is equivalent to slaying all the prophets which have existed from the foundation of the world (*"That the blood of all the prophets, which was shed from the foundation of the world, may be required of this generation; From the blood of Abel unto the blood of Zacharias, which perished between the altar and the Temple: verily I say unto you, It shall be required of this generation."*-Lk.11:50-51)!

This Jesus who was beheld and rejected by the 1st century Jews, who also the apostles did hear, see, look upon, and handle with their hands (1 Jn. 1:1) - He is still among those who believe! Like the apostle John said, "That which we have seen and heard declare we unto you, that ye also may have fellowship with us: and truly our fellowship is with the Father, and with His Son Jesus Christ" (1 Jn. 1:3). According to the apostle John, fellowship with Jesus Christ did not cease! The apostolic mission was and is that all men would join the apostles and 1st century Christians in their fellowship with God the Father and Jesus Christ His Son in real time! Through the experience of salvation in the Gospel, Christians have been "called unto the fellowship of His Son Jesus Christ our Lord" (1 Cor. 1:9), an experience made possible because, Jesus said, "Lo, **I am with you** always, even unto the end of the world" (Matt. 28:20). Jesus Christ, the Clean Man, is still *fellowshipping* and *keeping company* with Christians right now! ...and thereby the Christians are **clean**! Hallelujah! What a glory! Detailing to all of Christianity the grounds of *fellowship* with the Spirit of Jesus Christ, Paul said, "Wherefore **come out** from **among them**, and be ye **separate**, saith the Lord, and **TOUCH not the unclean thing**; and I will receive you" (2 Cor. 6:17). Paul expounded, furthermore, "let us **cleanse** ourselves from all **filthiness** of the flesh and spirit, perfecting **holiness** in the fear of God" (2 Cor. 7:1). It is very clear that Paul believed in New Testament Clean and Unclean Laws as they relate to the abiding presence of the Person of Jesus Christ. Now this may come as a surprise to the multitudes of 21st century "Christianity" (that the Clean and Unclean Laws in their reality are still binding upon Christian faith and practice)... but, no wonder, this is because the Devil has accomplished in the 21st century "Christianity", yet again, the same woeful design depicted in 1st century Judaism. Please, let me explain.

Don't Be Deceived: 1st Century Judaism & 21st Century Christianity Exist in Antithetical Trajectories of Apostasy

"Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithe of mint and anise and cummin, and have omitted **the weightier matters of the Law, judgment, mercy, and faith**: these ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone. Ye blind guides, which strain at a gnat, and swallow a camel." – Matthew 23:23-24

1st century Judaism was led into widespread apostasy because blind-eyed and wrongly emphasized religious convictions became their end-all rule of life above any greater fulfillment of the Law accomplished by God (greater fulfillments which would have been made discernable if “*judgment*”, “*mercy*”, and “*faith*” were steadfastly kept). By blind-eyed and wrongly emphasized religious conviction, I mean, scriptural commandments of **separatism**, **holiness**, and **cleanness** interpreted and applied in *outward form* instead of *inward power*, thus the Jews were utterly intolerant of Jesus Christ because He was cleansing men inwardly by a greater reality than what the Jews knew of by the letter in outward form. The Jews misinterpreted and misbalanced the Law, you see!? These Jews who did not know they must be born again, were blind-eyed and intolerant of the Kingdom of God manifest in a new government (John 3:1-12, Isa. 9:6-7). The Jews, who did not know *The Spirit of the Law*, misinterpreted the letter of the Law to accuse Jesus Christ of Law-breaking. Such men were Jews *outwardly* but not *inwardly* (Rom. 2:25-29), falsely converted and erroneously confident Jews who misunderstood the embodiment of the Law which was manifest among them (“*Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto Me.*” – John 6:45; Lk. 16:31). True Jews and Israelites indeed knew the identity of the Man, Jesus of Nazareth, who walked among them (John 1:47-51). [For a more detailed explanation of the true meaning of the Law in spirit and in form, inwardly and outwardly, please see “[The Ceremonial Law](#)” and “[The Moral Law](#)”.] With all this being said the following conclusions can be drawn: 1st century apostate Judaism was obedient to scripture at the points of Law which were limited to the *outward form* of the Law, points which pertained to **separatism**, **holiness**, and **cleanness** in the Ceremonial Law with an utter blindness of and complete intolerance to the *inward* and *spiritual* manifestations of **separatism**, **holiness**, and **cleanness**.

Just as 1st century Judaism was led into widespread apostasy because of blind-eyed and wrongly emphasized convictions, 21st century Christianity has suffered the same fate; albeit in 21st century Christianity the blindness and wrongly emphasized conviction has taken a polar opposite position to the 1st century. The Christians today are not zealous for unbiblical and wrongly emphasized convictions of **separatism**, **holiness**, and **cleanness**, they are zealous for unbiblical and wrongly emphasized convictions of **unity**, **equality**, and **tolerance**. The height of apostate religious conviction in the 1st century manifested in separatism which was *strictly outward*, while *inwardly* they were **proud**, **despiteful**, **prejudice**, **unmerciful**, and **self-righteous**. The height of apostate religious conviction in the 21st century is manifest in a unity which is *strictly outward*, while *inwardly* they are **proud**, **despiteful**, **prejudice**, **unmerciful**, and **self-righteous**. Neither individuals from either century would admit it, but this is the reality. The same sins are manifest in polar opposite directions because of the different Testaments that each generation was reading (“the Jews” reading the Law and “the Christians” reading the New Testament). When reading the New Testament, the 21st century Christians misinterpret the sin of the “holiness-adhering” Pharisees. When reading the New Testament, 21st century Christians misinterpret the righteousness of the “separatism-defiant” Jesus Christ. Therefore, Christianity today exists without **separatism**, **holiness**, **cleanness**, and **judgment**... which means she exists without biblical love. I say again, the “love” which has abandoned **the New Testament reality** of **separatism**, **holiness**, **cleanness**, and **judgment** is hatred in disguise!

For the most part, even true Christians are spoiled by the aforementioned philosophy of counterfeit “love” in so much that they, in an attempt to be like Christ, live a life utterly unconscious of the Laws pertaining to *the Clean and Unclean* in **New Testament reality**. Consequentially, when and if Christians are abiding in a situation of uncleanness, men think they are following the conduct of Christ (the all-cleansing Clean Man) because they look like He did in the 1st century in *outward form*! They are unlike Christ BECAUSE they are not cleansing the uncleanness of unclean men. Instead of these Christians cleansing the unclean men they are being defiled by the uncleanness of unclean men! “I am just doing what Jesus did”, they think, while they are **mixing** with and **tolerating** a damnable degree of sin and uncleanness all around them! Until, alas, the uncleanness which was **tolerated** all around them becomes a part of them! If and when someone in this situation is convicted about biblical separatism they hear, “You are just a religious Pharisee”. Howbeit, my reader, what does it really mean to be a Pharisee in 21st century Christianity?

<p><u>Jewish Law Forbade Company with Sinners</u></p>	<p><u>NT Law Forbids Christian Fellowship/Company with Sinners</u></p>
--	---

“Why **eateth** your Master with **publicans** and “I wrote unto you in an epistle NOT TO **company** with

sinners?” – Matt. 9:10-11, Lk. 5:29-30 [“sinners to repentance”-Matt.9:13]

“The Son of Man came **eating** and **drinking**, and they say, Behold a man gluttonous, and a winebibber, a friend of **publicans** and **sinners**.” – Matthew 11:19, Lk. 7:34

“This man, if He were a prophet, would have known who and **what manner of woman** this is that **TOUCHETH** Him: for she is a **sinner**.” – Luke 7:39 [“Thy sins are forgiven”-Lk.7:48]

“Then drew near unto Him all the **publicans** and **sinners** for to hear Him. And the Pharisees and Scribes murmured, saying, **This man receiveth sinners**, and **eateth with them**.” – Lk. 15:1-2

“And when they saw it, they all murmured, saying, “That He was gone **to be guest** with a man that is a **sinner**.” – Lk. 19:7 [“This day is salvation **come to this House**”-Lk.19:9]

“Ye know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to **keep company**, or **come unto one** of another nation; but God hath shewed me that I should not call any man **common** or **unclean**.” – Acts 10:28

“Thou **wentest in** to men uncircumcised, and didst **eat with them**.” – Acts 11:3

fornicators: Yet not altogether with the fornicators of this world, or with the covetous, or extortioners, or with idolaters; *for then must ye needs go out of the world*. But now I have written unto you NOT TO **keep company**, *if any man that is called a brother* be a **fornicator**, or **covetous**, or an **idolater**, or a **railer**, or a **drunkard**, or an **extortioner**; with **such an one** NO **not to eat**. For what have I to do to judge them also that are without? do not ye judge them that are within? But them that are without God judgeth. Therefore **put away** from **among yourselves that wicked person**.” – 1 Cor. 5:9-13

“Wherefore **come out from among them**, and **be ye separate**, saith the Lord, and **TOUCH not the unclean thing**; and **I will receive you**, and will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be My sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. Having therefore these **promises**, dearly beloved, let us **cleanse ourselves** from all **filthiness** of the flesh and spirit, perfecting **holiness** in the fear of God.” – 2 Corinthians 6:17-18

“Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. He that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath both the Father and the Son. If there **come any unto you**, and bring not this doctrine, **receive him not** into your **House**, neither bid him God speed: For he that biddeth him God speed is partaker of his evil deeds.” – 2 John 1:9-11

What is a 21st century Pharisee? The 1st century Pharisees were convicted about **separatism**, **holiness**, and **cleanness** so much so that, according to the aforementioned passages: they didn’t **go to the Houses** of, **keep company**, and **eat with publicans**, **sinners**, and **unclean men** (Matt. 9:10-11, 11:19, Acts 10:28, 11:3, Gal. 2:12-13), they feared being TOUCHED by uncleanness and thereby becoming unclean (Lk. 7:39), and thus they did not in this manner **receive** sinners because they feared that God would not **receive** them (Lk. 15:1-2). Does this mean that 21st century Pharisees are those who refuse to “**keep company**” and “**eat**” with what the New Testament characterizes as a “**wicked person**” (1 Cor. 5:9-13), those who “**come out from among them**” in **separation** for fear of being TOUCHED by “**the unclean thing**” (2 Cor. 6:17), and those who do not in this manner **receive** sinners for fear that they would then come short of the conditional promise of God that hinged upon the perfection of **holiness**, that promise being, “**I will receive you**” (2 Cor. 6:17-7:1, 2 John 1:9-11)? This question begs 21st century Christianity to reevaluate their conduct in the light of biblical and New Testament separatism!

When Jesus Christ **entered the Houses** of, **kept company**, and **ate and drank with** the unclean people (the sinners) the Pharisees murmured against Him, this is true... but in every case the company which He was eating with were being gloriously cleansed, forgiven, and saved by **communion** with Christ! For example, Matthew and company were being converted (Matt. 9:10-11), the publicans of Luke 7:24-35 “justified God”, the adulterous woman who touched Christ was forgiven (Lk. 7:34-50), the publicans and sinners of Luke 15:1-2 were savingly repentant (Lk. 15:3-10) and made alive (Lk. 15:11-32), and Zacchaeus experienced salvation (Lk. 19:1-10)! All these circumstances were in fulfillment of the word of the Lord Jesus, which was, “Many shall come from the east and west, and shall **sit down** with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, **in the Kingdom of Heaven**” (Matthew 8:11). In other words, all these people became Christians! By

near proximity to and a faith-filled reception of the Person of Jesus Christ, the “publicans” and “harlots” were going into the Kingdom of God before the Scribes and Pharisees did (Matt. 21:31). The Pharisees were offended at Jesus’ conduct because it seemingly defied the Clean and Unclean Laws of the Old Testament, but because they were ignorant of *inward cleanness* and the *shadow-to-reality cleansing power* of the Lord Jesus, they were blind to the glorious salvation which was in operation before their very eyes! But now today, in this present hour, 21st century Christians think they can *be like Christ* if they **go to the Houses** of, **keep company**, and **eat and drink with** sinners whenever and however they want to... but what they do in *outward form* Christ did in *spiritual power*! To follow the tenets of true religion in outward form and without spiritual power, this is Pharisaical. In situations where men and women suppose they are being Christ-like, instead of the sinners getting Christian-ized the Christians are getting sinner-ized, and instead of unclean men getting clean the clean men are getting unclean... this is the tragic reality.

CHAPTER #21

New Testament Clean & Unclean Laws Defined

Section #1: What is New Testament Separatism?

Section #2: Filthiness

Section #3: Pollution & Corruption

Section #4: Uncleaness & Defiled

Section #5: The Lawful Terms Which Communicate the Operation of NT Redemption

What is New Testament Separatism?

*"The secret of power is **separation** from all that is **unclean**."* – Duncan Campbell

*"The problem is that people bear the Christian name but act like worldlings and love the amusements and follies of the world. It is time for a **division** in the House of the Lord in which those for Christ go into one camp and those against Christ go into the other camp. We have been **mixed together** too long."* – C.H. Spurgeon

*"^{d4} Be ye not unequally **yoked together** with unbelievers: for **what fellowship** hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and **what communion** hath light with darkness? ¹⁵ And **what concord** hath Christ with Belial? or **what part** hath he that believeth with an infidel? ¹⁶ And **what agreement** hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. ¹⁷ **Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and TOUCH NOT the unclean thing; and I will receive you, ¹⁸ And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. ¹ Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, **let us cleanse ourselves** from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, **perfecting holiness in the fear of God**"** - 2 Corinthians 6:14-7:1*

The call to *holiness* is a conditional command bound with *promises*. The call is a break of **yoke**! Why? The power of the gospel establishes this purpose of God through regeneration: a supernatural severing from unbelievers. The break of yoke is a break of fellowship, communion, concord, and agreement and this can be understood when a man understands the work of salvation as a transformation and separation from the world. A "divine nature" segregates *fellowship*, voids *commonality*, and establishes spiritual enmity with all unbelievers and this world (2 Peter 1:4). Reception of this gospel is a reception of "come out from among them," and so we become children of Abraham who did obey his gospel, "get thee out" (Gen. 12:1, Heb. 11:8). If you receive this gospel, a gospel of holiness, you are received of God as your new spiritual Father, being born again his son or daughter. This is the unavoidable purpose of God in the gospel, past, present, and forever. Such an imputation of holiness by the indwelling and regenerating Holy Ghost begets holy living in deed as the manifest qualities of Abraham's seed.

The former description of 2 Corinthians 6 is a look at the passage so as to understand it in the light of The Gospel call itself, howbeit, the call of 2 Corinthians 6 is a *present-tense call* to saved people, a call they can fulfill or deny, corporately speaking. *This call* is given to true believers who have already experienced the world-separating regeneration accomplished by the Gospel of God's grace in Christ (a spiritual world-separation to become an object of man-to-God

consecration through Christ), thus the spiritual **yoke** to unbelievers is already broken: Because the saints have already become the *righteousness* of God (2 Cor. 5:21), they have no spiritual **fellowship** with the *unrighteousness* of carnal men; because the saints have already become the *light* of the world, they have no **communion** with unbelievers who are still yet in *darkness*; because the saints abide in Christ, keep His word (1 John 2:4), and obey His Law (John 13:34, Gal. 6:4, Rom. 8:4), they have no **concord** with the Lawless *children of Belial*; because the saints have been saved from their former broad-way lifestyles through faith in Christ, a lifestyle which is commonplace among all infidels, they have no religious **part** with the unbelieving *infidels*. In all these examples the point of argument is apparent: there is no spiritual **agreement** between believers and unbelievers! This enmity, or disagreement, is *as contradictory* as the Temple of God and idols were according to the Old Testament (according to 2 Corinthians 6:16) – this is a contradiction of incomparable sharpness between God Almighty’s Divine-holiness and the objects of His jealous fury! My reader, this is a staggering parallel! To make sense of this Paul quoted and applied an Old Testament passage of scripture in a New Testament reality, “I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people” (2 Cor. 6:16). Paul was hereby proving that Christians have become the Temple of God as a fulfillment of what was said of old... but this also means that unbelievers in Christian assemblies are like idols in the Temple of God! All of the aforementioned biblical parallels (from OT to NT) exist because of the past-tense experience of salvation undergone by every individual in Christ, but only let the saint take heed to walk-out the nature of their salvation from thenceforth and forever! I plead this warning because it is possible to backslide and fall from grace (Gal. 5:4)! To be constituted an “unbeliever” the scripture speaks in reference to a once-born man or a twice-born backslider, for both are snared in a damnable degree of *unrighteousness*, *darkness*, *Lawlessness*, and *infidel*-rebellion through unbelief. The past-tense experience of salvation must be walked in presently and progressively by grace through faith in Jesus Christ. [For more information, see [“A Justified, Regenerated, and Righteous Man TURNED into an Unjustified, Wicked, Sinner Again – temporarily”](#).]

Reckoning this (the universal experience of every individual Christian), Paul delivered to the saints a corporate call of separateness and holiness *in word and deed*. This call to corporate separateness was not universally experienced; it was *collectively obeyed* by each individual who responded to the call. The call was not inherent in the nature of every Christian; it was an overflow of obedience *in words and deeds* that are consistent with the nature of every Christian. Seeing that, by nature, every individual has been separated from the aforementioned abominations – that each individual might be in God, and He in them – they are called to be assembled before God collectively in the very same fashion. In the redemptive rules whereby saints dwell in the presence of God individually, they are called to assemble corporately. The saints are called to collectively walk-out corporately what is in their natures individually. If we don’t assemble before God corporately according to the rules whereby we are in the presence of God individually, the assembly is rendered unacceptable to God. This conditional acceptance of the corporate assembly is clearly stated in the words, “I will receive you” (2 Cor. 6:17). In verse 17, yet again, a parallel is made to an Old Testament shadow: *The Clean and Unclean Laws*. Following in this vein, the charge continues to its finish in verse 1 of Chapter 7. For your review, it was written,

“Wherefore **come out from among them**, and **be ye separate**, saith the Lord, and **TOUCH not the unclean thing**; and *I will receive you*, And *will be a Father unto you*, and *ye shall be my sons and daughters*, saith the Lord Almighty. Having therefore *these promises*, dearly beloved, **let us cleanse ourselves** from all **filthiness** of the flesh and spirit, **perfecting holiness** in the fear of God” – 2 Cor. 6:17-7:1

To be unclean is to be, in context: an *unbeliever*, an *unrighteous* man, a man in whom is *darkness*, a son of *Belial*, and an *infidel*, all of which is comparable to an *idol*. To be clean is, in context: a *believer*, a *righteous* man, a man in whom is *light*, a man who is a *Law-keeper* of Christ, all of which is comparable to the *Temple of God*. Following the argument of the apostle Paul, he is adding an additional title for believers and unbelievers: the *clean* and *unclean*. Therefore the typological command of God, “TOUCH not the unclean thing”, is fulfilled in obedience to the command, “Come out from among them and be ye separate” (2 Cor. 6:17). These commandments are conditions of corporate acceptance (“*I will receive you*”- 2 Cor.6:17)... but what does this mean? Weighing in jeopardy upon the conditions of holiness, separateness, and cleanliness is the most glorious bond between man-and-God: a Father-to-son relationship! Look closely, my reader. The inspired text said, “I will receive you, AND will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.” These are *promises*, my reader. The inspired text affirmed these statements as *promises* by exhorting the

brethren in the following verse, “Having therefore *these promises*, dearly beloved” (in 2 Corinthians 7:1). There are two conditionally fulfilled promises emphasized by Paul (a man-to-God Divine reception/acceptance and a Father-to-son familial bond), and having just emphasized them to the Corinthians as conditions to be gained or lost by every believer, the call for the perfection of holiness comes with Divine-force! Emphasizing this point, Paul said, “Having therefore these promises, dearly beloved, LET US **cleanse** OURSELVES from **all filthiness** of the flesh and spirit, **perfecting holiness** IN THE FEAR OF GOD” (2 Cor. 7:1).

Apparently, Old Testament *Unclean Laws* were **shadows** which pointed toward NT **realities**! Paul did, right here, make the case and point of the *Clean and Unclean Laws* which exist in New Testament **reality** (according to inspired scripture). The interpretation is clear! No great explanation needs to be given about it! Because unregenerated men or twice-born backsliders are unbelievers who work unrighteousness, dwell in darkness, and like all sons of Belial and infidels, they offend the presence of God which dwells especially and immediately in New Testament assemblies; therefore they are infuriating the LORD exactly like when God Almighty was infuriated with idols when and if they were brought into His special and immediate presence that existed in the Temple of God in the Old Testament! Do you see how the Divine Argumentation of 2 Corinthians 6:14-7:1 flows together, dear reader?

If the historical richness of these *terms* (*darkness, Belial, and idols*) did not make the command to “come out from among them” logically potent enough, God added one more descriptive term for unbelievers which would be more easily recollected by the common person to be of relevance in the Old Covenant. It is a word used more consistently and repeatedly all throughout the Old Testament – namely that unregenerate persons or backslidden saints are an “unclean thing” in the sight of God! In a New Testament context, assemblies and congregations of saints existed to worship, pray, preach, listen, study, partake of communion, eat and drink in charity feasts, etc., but all in all what the apostle Paul was seeking to make us understand is the fact that: these activities are not unholy, worldly, carnal, or natural. They are, on the contrary, a **yoking** of the most holy commission, a **fellowship** with the most holy things, in **communion** with the most holy elements, a **concord** with a most holy Christ, the **part** and lot which belongs exclusively to the Family of God!

“**I will receive you**” -- If we desire the congregational assembly of The Church to be receivable by God, then we must come out from among them and be separate.

“**and will be a Father unto you...**” -- If we desire the congregational assembly of The Church to be enraptured in the manifestation of God’s saving grace (John 14:21) wherein every influence of righteousness that exists in all the stature of the living Christ (Eph. 4:13, John 17:20-26) is operating in and among the believers (Matt. 18:18-20) through the Father-to-son relationship between God-and-man existing without frustration or interruption, then we must “touch not the unclean thing” (2 Cor. 6:17).

Congregational and assembly segregation from the world does not mean damnation to the world. Rather, it means salvation to the Church! In spite of 2 Corinthians 6:14-7:1, someone might ask, “If the unsaved cannot be invited to Church, how then will they get saved?” But the question from the inspired text that is pointed to all believers does say, on the contrary, “How will The Church continue to be saved if we assemble and congregate with unclean things?” How will The Church continue to be nourished by God’s Divine-acceptance (“*I will receive you*”) and Fatherly compassions (“*And be a Father unto you*”) if, according to scripture, we defy the conditions of perfected holiness whereby we might obtain these glorious promises? God is not mocked, my reader. It does not mean we abandon the billions of helpless souls that are without light and God, no! If we assembled in the perfection of holiness (2 Cor. 7:1) we will be empowered by God in the perfection of His power (2 Cor. 12:9) for an effectual witness of the Gospel that would win thousands to the Lord in truth (Acts 4:4)! There is a good reason that God has not gone out with our New Testament armies of so-called ministry (Ps. 60:10, Deut. 23:14), my reader. A child can pick up the Bible for a first-time read and quickly realize the apparent and unmistakable truth that most old-folks refuse to admit! Let’s face it, my reader... “The Church” of today is not The Church of the Book! “Where is the LORD” (Jer. 2:8), my reader? Do you think we might have offended Him somehow?

Make no mistake about it, my reader, I am not building a doctrine of *Clean and Unclean Laws* in New Testament reality from one passage of scripture. Biblical terminology for “the clean”, which is acceptable to God, and biblical terminology for “the unclean”, which is abominable to God, is used in reference to Christian realities all throughout the New Testament, but people are so biblically illiterate they have never realized the meaning of what they are reading. Ignorance is not bliss! God said, “My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge” (Hos. 4:6). A man cannot be responsive to God in a relationship-paradigm which he does not know exists, my reader, so “Christians” live their lives completely irrelevant of *the Clean and Unclean Laws* in the New Testament. The truth is, “Christianity” today is a religion swaddled in country and culture more than Christ! People are comfortable with it that way. People don’t care enough to comprehend. 21st century “Christians” are so Americanized that they read their Bibles and can’t identify. So what about you, my reader? Are you a “disciple” of the Lord? Do you care enough about the biblical Christ that you desire to – studiously – learn of Him “precept upon precept, precept upon precept, line upon line, [and] line upon line” (Isa. 28:13)? All professing “disciples” of the Lord need to take a sober look at *the cost of discipleship* and reconsider if they have met the terms laid forth in scripture (“*Whosoever doth not bear his cross, and come after Me, cannot be My disciple*”-Lk.14:27). At the first step toward the biblical Christ one must engage an execution device, The Cross! So what about you, my reader? Do you think the brutal and merciless end of self is good news? To all those who are able to answer, “Yea”, and in truth say, “Amen”, let us go forward.

The biblical relevance of *The Clean & Unclean Laws* is historically rich and theologically vast, therefore it must be addressed as systematically and simply as possible, that my readers may see the clear parallels from the Old Testament to the New Testament. A clear understanding makes for clear eyes and clear convictions. Upon embarking on this vast study we can be expectant of the following conclusions because of a foremost conviction. By foremost conviction, I mean: if the Clean and Unclean Laws (which were **physical shadows** in the Old Testament) are applied as **spiritual realities** in the New Testament, they would shed light and meaning on the completed work of salvation that Christ has accomplished. In other words, the teachings would not be inconsistent with those doctrines which save us (“*by grace are ye saved through faith*”- Eph. 2:8). Because the aforementioned conviction is of utmost importance in scripture, the following conclusions are to be expected: *Firstly*, the **uncleanness** of the sinner is that BY NATURE and DEED he does sin. *Secondarily*, the sinfulness of the sinner is an abhorrence to God **as much as** He abhorred unclean things in the Old Testament. *Thirdly*, the only way to be saved from this deplorable condition is through salvation by regeneration via faith alone through Christ alone by grace alone. The uncleanness of an *unregenerate* sinner is taken away by *regeneration*, my reader! But the degeneration of the regenerated via backsliding is also uncleanness, my reader (“*How art thou turned into the degenerate plant of a strange vine unto Me?*”-Jer.2:21). I say again, if the scriptures are consistent throughout the New Testament on this doctrine of cleanness, then salvation by regeneration is the means by which a sinner is made clean; nevertheless, New Testament cleanness would be identified in the same terms whereby a sinner was cleansed in the Old Testament. Thus the NT would teach that REGENERATION is a **cleansing, purifying, purging, hallowing, sanctifying, washing, and sprinkling**. Likewise SIN must be **unclean, filthy, pollution, impurity, corruption, blemishes, spots, and defiling**. As you will soon see, my reader, these terms are specifically and descriptively used all through the New Testament, Book-to-Book. The use of the aforementioned terms is so numerous and consistent so that *the Clean and Unclean Laws* in New Testament reality would become an unquestionable fact of the man-to-God relationship in Christ. It is undeniably clear that the New Testament authors related to God on this wise. If what I affirm to my reader is correct – that these terms are consistently used throughout the New Testament with the aforementioned applications – then we can see that this doctrine has an enormous backing rather than just a few verses in 2 Corinthians 6:14-7:1.

- 1) A sinner **BY NATURE** is **unclean**
- 2) A sinner **IN SINNING** is a cause of **uncleanness** through OT descriptive terms of **filthiness, pollution, impurity, corruption, blemishes, spots, and defilement**.
- 3) A sinner **THROUGH SALVATION** in Christ is made **clean, pure, without filthiness, pollution, corruption, blemish, spot, and defilement** by OT descriptive terms of **cleansing, purifying, purging, hallowing, sanctifying, washing, sprinkling, and a sacrifice to absolve iniquity**.

Filthiness

Points to Prove:

- 1) A sinner **BY NATURE** is **filthy**
- 2) A sinner **IN SINNING** is a cause of **uncleanness** through the OT descriptive term **filthiness**.
- 3) A sinner **THROUGH SALVATION** in Christ is made **clean** and **without filthiness**.

“But we are all as an **unclean thing**, and all our righteousness are as **filthy rags**; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our **iniquities**, like the wind, have taken us away.” – Isaiah 64:6

The word **filthy** or **filthiness** is used in the Old Testament to describe *all manner of sin* (Job 15:16, Psalm 14:3, Isaiah 64:6, Prov. 30:12); likewise it is used to describe *specific sins* such as: a woman in menstruation (Lamentations 1:9-10, 17, Ezek. 36:17, 25), marriage with strangers (Ezra 9:1-2; personal salvation: Ezek. 16:2-9), and sexual sins of adultery, whoredom, and fornication (Ezek. 23:11, 36:25, Jer. 3:1-10, 13:27). In these passages the word does in other words describe an *unclean thing* in the sight of God.

All the World Guilty = All the World Filthy

Perhaps the most known passage with the word *filthy* in it is Isaiah 64:6. The text states, “But we are all as an **unclean thing**, and all our *righteousness* are as **filthy rags**; and we all do fade as a leaf; and our *iniquities*, like the wind, have taken us away.” Notice how it states, “WE are all as an unclean thing”. Notice how the sinfulness of fallen humanity is descriptively hateful to God like as an “unclean thing”, and parallel to this God-to-object relationship is “filthy rags”. Here we see the parallelism of uncleanness and filthiness pertaining to human depravity and sinfulness. Paul is careful to note this attribute of sin when formulating the most profound argument of mankind’s guilt before a holy God. Paul quoted several Old Testament scriptures to make plain the undeniable truth, he argues, that “all the world” is “guilty before God”, and that “every mouth” will be “stopped” on Judgment Day (Rom. 3:19). Masterfully, Paul formulated this argument entirely from Old Testament scripture in verses 10-18. Beginning in Romans 3:10, the verse declares, “There is none *righteous*, no, not one.” This passage is like Isaiah 64:6, which states, “all our *righteousness* are as filthy rags”. So also in Romans 3:12, it says, “They are all gone out of the way... there is none that doeth good, no, not one.” Romans 3:10 and 3:12 are found in Psalm 14:3 and 53:3, and the word “**filthiness**” is used in the psalms, saying, “They are all gone aside, they are together become **filthy**: there is none that doeth good, no, not one”, and, “Every one of them is gone back: they are altogether become **filthy**; there is none that doeth good, no, not one.” Therefore according to scripture, “filthy” does fittingly describe the abominable repulsiveness of our depravity before God Almighty, yet again! Indeed “they”, which is “we” (all of once-born mankind), have altogether become **filthy** in our sins when we stand without salvation in Christ! Thus if we will *feel the guilt* of sin in our lives, we will *feel that our sins are as unclean things and filthy rags* in the sight of God, being conscientious of the Old Testament relationship that God had with unclean and filthy things in a New Testament reality. What happened *then*, in the Old Testament, is not irrelevant to our relationship to God right *now*, in the New Testament; according to the aforementioned scriptures we must understand the God-to-sin relationship in the same paradigm. [Note: this human *filthiness*, as Paul argued, means that *filthiness* pervades the thought, word, and deed of fallen humanity so much so that there is no goodness in them at all!]

The *things* which are *unclean* and *filthy*, scripturally speaking, are not only legally repulsive to God in some dry sense. The Lord is emotionally affected by the hatefulness and despicableness of these *things*! Filthiness is abominated, detested, despised, hated, and rejected by God, and thus it is written of unsaved men: “How...**abominable** and **filthy** is man, which drinketh **iniquity** like water” (Job 15:16)! God the Father is HOLY, and He is disgusted with unholiness. Neither “the filthy” nor “the foolish” will stand in His holy congregations because this collection of people are in the blessedness of His immediate gaze, scripture declares: “The foolish shall not stand in Thy sight: **Thou hatest all workers of**

iniquity” (Psalm 5:5). And yet, shockingly, in spite of *what* and *who* we are, HE LOVES US (John 3:16, 1 John 4:19), He died for us, and with an outstretched arm He pleads for our salvation (Ezek. 33:11): *this is one of the supreme paradoxes of God within time.*

All of our flesh-empowered morality and Law-keeping is as “**filthy** rags” according to Isaiah (Isa. 64:6) and “**filthy** garments” according to Zechariah (Zech. 3:1-7). Therefore we can understand that salvation is, when God says to a man, “Take away the **filthy** garments from him” (Zech. 3:4). Hallelujah! In this statement we are pointed to understand, “Behold, I have caused thine iniquity to pass from thee, and I will clothe thee with *change of raiment*” (Zech. 3:1-7)! Fittingly, also, it was written in a New Testament application, “And to her was granted that she should be arrayed in **fine linen, clean** and **white**: for the fine linen is *the righteousness of the saints*” (Rev. 19:8). Righteousness that comes from God is *without filthiness, defilement, and uncleanness*, but “woe to the rebellious children, saith the LORD, that take counsel, but not of Me; and **that cover with a covering, but not of My Spirit**, that they may add sin to sin” (Isaiah 30:1)! These are they of the “generation” that is “**pure** in their own eyes, and yet is not **washed** from their **filthiness**” (Prov. 30:12), “having a form of godliness but denying the power thereof: from such turn away” (2 Tim. 3:5). Dear brethren, “let us **cleanse ourselves** from all **filthiness** of the flesh and spirit, **perfecting holiness** in the fear of God” (2 Cor. 7:1).

Pollution & Corruption

Points to Prove:

- 1) A sinner **BY NATURE** is **polluted** and **corrupted**
- 2) A sinner **IN SINNING** is a cause of **uncleanness** through the OT descriptive terms **pollution** and **corruption**.
- 3) A sinner **THROUGH SALVATION** in Christ is made **clean** and **without pollution** and **corruption**.

Most Notable Verses

“...partakers of the Divine Nature, having **escaped the corruption that is in the world** through lust” – 2 Peter 1:4

“For if after they have **escaped the pollutions of the world** through the knowledge of the Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they are again entangled therein, and overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning.”
– 2 Peter 2:20

A General Introduction: A Survey of Specified Sin & Foundational Word-Usage

The word **pollute** or **pollution** is used to express the defiling effect of unclean things in the sight of God, like, for example: the uncircumcised entering the temple of God (Ezek. 44:7), idols in the Temple (Jer. 7:30), pollution of bloodshed defiling the Land and people (Numbers 35:33, Ezek. 36), pollutions of blood through menstruation (Ezek. 22:10, 36:17), services of worship to idols is a personal pollution by the idol (Ezek. 20:31), and personal pollution by idolatry becomes spiritual pollution through adultery and whoredom against God (Ezek. 16:25-38, 22:2-4, 25, 23-31, 23:45-49, 24:11-14). Pollutions are an unclean thing in the sight of God which denotes all these things and more in the Old Testament.

Furthermore, the word **corrupt** or **corruption** is used to describe the physical decay of a dead body (i.e. rotteness or decomposition; see Job 17:14, Psalm 16:10, 49:9) and the physical depletion of strength, health, and life (Dan. 10:8, Rom. 8:21). These words may not be used to describe specific sins like the word pollution, but corruption does refer to the specific effects of sin via the curse. Physical decay is *the activity of the dead*, and, physical depletion of strength is *the*

activity of the dying. Whether corruption describes *the dead* or *the dying*, it is not a positive adjective or verb. Death and dying exist on account of the fall of humanity into sin!

The Activity of the Dead and Dying Spiritualized

We, along with all of creation, now pass through time undergoing *the curse*: we live in physical bodies which are slowly dying. With each second that passes by the time-clock of our physical health is depleting because we have bodies which are “subjected to **corruption**” (Rom. 8:21). Moreover it is stated in 1 Corinthians 15 that our “natural body” (1 Cor. 15:44) is of the Adamic nature, which is “earthly” (1 Cor. 15:48) and under “**corruption**” (1 Cor. 15:42, 50). This means that, spiritually and physically speaking, the natural body is a body of “dishonour” and “weakness” (1 Cor. 15:43); sin has taken its awful course within the body... thus it suffers. Because of sin the physical body is cursed... it slowly dies year-by-year. On the contrary to this, the body of the resurrection is “spiritual” (1 Cor. 15:44), “heavenly” (1 Cor. 15:48), and incorruptible: a body of “incorruption” (1 Cor. 15:42, 50)! – thus Paul wrote of the everlasting and ever-renewing endurance of the resurrection spirit, saying, “though our outward man perish, yet **the inward man is renewed day by day**” (2 Cor. 4:16)! This inward man will one day be an outward man, my reader! The spiritual man within will one day be enlarged into a spiritual body which is of “glory” and “power” at the consummation of salvation (1 Cor. 15:43). Therefore let us understand that, for now, in a physical sense, our current body is of **corruption** because of the fall of humanity into sin, to wit, all the once-born sons of Adam are physically dying and spiritually dead, and “life” as we know it is vaporizing away as in a moment.

“Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and **death by sin**; and **so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned**: (For until the Law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no Law. Nevertheless **death reigned** from Adam to Moses, **even over them that had not sinned** after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure of him that was to come.” – Romans 5:12-14

Fittingly, therefore, Paul called his current body: a “*body of death*” (Rom. 7:24), spiritually speaking. By interpretation this meant, “to be *carnally minded* is **death**” (Rom. 8:6). This is the reasoning behind the indisputable truth that, “*flesh and blood* cannot inherit the Kingdom of God” (1 Cor. 15:50). Though a man may live in the “pride” (1 John 2:16) and prestige of the most “highly esteemed” (Lk. 16:15) earthly life known to man, it is all accounted as **death** in the sight of God! The Lord God Almighty calls all once-born men, “**dead** in trespasses and sins” (Eph. 2:1), because according to 1 John 5:12, “he that hath the Son hath **life**; and he that hath not the Son of God hath not **life**”. To abide in the Son of God is to abide in “Eternal Life” (1 John 5:11), and all those who abide in the natural man do on the other hand, “abide in **death**” (1 John 3:14).

Therefore, fittingly, if depravity is called **death** then **corruption** is the activity of the dead! **Corruption** does therefore describe ALL MANNER OF SIN. I say again, since death is the physical and spiritual consequence of sin, and seeing that corruption/decay is the activity of the dead, the activity of those who are spiritually dead is likewise called, **corruption**. When “all flesh had **corrupted** his way upon the earth”, God killed them (except for Noah and his family in Genesis 6:11-12). The reign of spiritual death was furthering its rotten grip on the soul of humanity, and God said, “all flesh had **corrupted** his way”. Describing the condemnation of the whole world in the flesh, God said, “they are **corrupt**” and “**corrupt** they are”, and “there is none that doeth good” (Psalm 14:1, 53:1). Spiritual death is described as slavery to sin and enmity against God (Rom. 8:6-8), and **corruption** is the activity of the dead. Not only were physical dead bodies **unclean** in the Old Testament, but all like-manifestations of **corruption** were also **unclean** – like-manifestations such as *leprosy* (the decaying of flesh while the person is still alive, i.e. the living dead) and *running issues*. Speaking on this wise, consider the following passages carefully my reader. Inhale the mindset of Old Testament Israel concerning *the Clean and the Unclean*. See the rigor and meticulousness whereby they would seek to keep all *places* and *persons* **clean**, and see how the **defiling** and **corrupting** effect of **unclean things** was recognized and immediately paralyzed through the means of isolation and detainment.

“Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, When any man hath **a running issue** out of his flesh, because of his issue he is **unclean**. And this shall be his **uncleanness** in his issue: whether his flesh run with his

issue, or his flesh be stopped from his issue, it is his **uncleanness**. Every bed, whereon he lieth that hath the issue, is **unclean**: and every thing, whereon he sitteth, shall be **unclean**. And whosoever TOUCHETH his bed shall wash his clothes, and bathe himself in water, and be **unclean** until the even. And he that sitteth on any thing whereon he sat that hath the issue shall wash his clothes, and bathe himself in water, and be **unclean** until the even. And he that TOUCHETH the flesh of him that hath the issue shall wash his clothes, and bathe himself in water, and be **unclean** until the even. And if he that hath the issue spit upon **him that is clean**; then he shall wash his clothes, and bathe himself in water, and be **unclean** until the even. And what saddle soever he rideth upon that hath the issue shall be **unclean**. And whosoever TOUCHETH any thing that was under him shall be **unclean** until the even: and he that beareth any of those things shall wash his clothes, and bathe himself in water, and be **unclean** until the even. And whomsoever he TOUCHETH that hath the issue, and hath not rinsed his hands in water, he shall wash his clothes, and bathe himself in water, and be **unclean** until the even. And the vessel of earth, that he TOUCHETH which hath the issue, shall be broken: and every vessel of wood shall be rinsed in water. And when he that hath an issue is **cleansed** of his issue; then he shall number to himself seven days for his **cleansing**, and wash his clothes, and bathe his flesh in running water, and shall be **clean**. And on the eighth day he shall take to him two turtledoves, or two young pigeons, and come before the LORD unto the door of the tabernacle of the congregation, and give them unto the Priest: And the Priest shall offer them, the one for a sin offering, and the other for a burnt offering; and the Priest shall make an atonement for him before the LORD for his issue.” – Lev. 15:2-15

“And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, Command the children of Israel, that they **put out of the camp** every **leper**, and every one that hath **an issue**, and whosoever is **defiled by the dead**: Both male and female shall ye **put out, without the camp** shall ye put them; that they **defile not** their camps, **in the midst whereof I dwell**. And the children of Israel did so, and **put them out without the camp**: as the LORD spake unto Moses, so did the children of Israel.” – Numbers 5:1-4

“Speak unto Aaron and to his sons, that they separate themselves from the holy things of the children of Israel, and that they profane not my holy name in those things which they hallow unto me: I am the LORD. Say unto them, Whosoever he be of all your seed among your generations, that goeth unto the holy things, which the children of Israel hallow unto the LORD, **having his uncleanness upon him, that soul shall be cut off from my presence**: I am the LORD. What man soever of the seed of Aaron is **a leper**, or hath **a running issue**; he shall not eat of the holy things, until he be **clean**. And whoso TOUCHETH any thing that is **unclean by the dead**, or a man whose seed goeth from him; Or whosoever TOUCHETH any creeping thing, whereby he may be made **unclean**, or a man of whom he may take **uncleanness**, whatsoever **uncleanness** he hath; The soul which hath TOUCHED any such shall be **unclean** until even, and shall not eat of the holy things, unless he wash his flesh with water.” – Lev. 22:2-6

The activity of the dead and dying is corruption, which is UNCLEAN! Even so, spiritually speaking, a dead body is a corpse of **spiritual corruption** whose activity is nothing more pleasant to God than a fretting disease, a stinking rottenness, and a spreading plague – meant to be buried or burned! As God beholds sinners who are dead in their transgressions and sins, He relays to mankind the grotesque experience it is for Him to endure their despicable persons on earth, that they are like rotting corpses which are decaying in all uncleanness, fuming the most vomitus and deadly aromas to pollute the air and violate the senses of every passerby. Sinners do, in this way, violate the peace of God and aggravate the fires of hell! Do you see the spiritual truth which the word of God does communicate, my reader? Do you agree with it?

Do you agree with Christ, who described the once-born and good-intentioned Pharisees as men who were full of “**dead men’s bones and all uncleanness**”, even though they appeared beautiful outwardly by a cloak of false-religion (Matt. 23:27)? The mouth is the minister by which the dead things of the soul spring forth into the world, so the “throat is **an open sepulcher**” (Rom. 3:13) to God and man, spiritually speaking. An open grave, my reader. Think of it! Rotting flesh is so toxic and disturbing it sends grown men fleeing for clean air! If ever a grave did somehow come open so that a dead body had the means to vent its fumes into the open-air, the surrounding region would be abandoned by living humans until the dead body is buried or burned. So strong and terrible is the smell, it is paralyzing to the mind. The

unbearable and sense-killing smell of an open grave illustrates to us God's experience of holy-disgust as He abides in the fumes of dead souls.

God beholds the **corruption** of the soul held-fast in the rottenness of sin; thus God, seeking to communicate this, inspired Paul to characterize the "conversation" of the "old man" as "**corrupt** according to the deceitful lusts" (Eph. 4:22). Paul used the word, "corrupt", like a "**bitter** fountain" and a "**corrupt** spring" (James 3:11, Prov. 25:26) would spew-out the corruption of poisonous waters! In likeness to this, the inner man is "**corrupt** according to the deceitful lusts" (Eph. 4:22)! Or like a "**corrupt** tree" displays upon its branches the allurements of fruit which is latent with deadly poison, God looks upon the corrupt inner-man of once-born humanity and backslidden Christianity, and says, "Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down and cast into the fire" (Matt. 7:19)! Like dead bodies are good for nothing but to be *buried* or *burned*, Jesus forewarned, "If a man abide not in Me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and *they are burned*" (John 15:6)! "Ye shall know them by their fruits. Do men gather grapes of **thorns**, or figs of **thistles**? Even so every good tree bringeth forth good fruit; but a **corrupt** tree bringeth forth **evil fruit**. A good tree cannot bring forth evil fruit, neither can a **corrupt** tree bring forth good fruit. Every tree that bringeth not forth good fruit is *hewn down, and cast into the fire*. Wherefore by their fruits ye shall know them" (Matt. 7:16-20). By nature, therefore, men are "alienated and enemies" in "mind by wicked works", whose allegiance is a "friendship with the world" and enmity against God (Col. 1:21, Jas. 4:4)... notwithstanding, God provided a way of **escape**!

"Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God, and of Jesus our Lord, according as His divine power hath given unto us all things that pertain unto life and godliness, through the knowledge of Him that hath called us to glory and virtue: whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promises: **that by these ye might be partakers of the Divine Nature, having escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust.**" - 2 Peter 1:2-4

Do you want to **escape the corruption** that is in the world, my reader? Salvation is a mortifying of the "deeds" and "earthly members" of the body (Rom. 8:13, Col. 3:5), because they are corrupt. Salvation is a crucifixion man-to-the-world (Gal. 6:14) because flesh and blood is corrupt. By the killing/annihilation of that which is spiritually dead, via the cross, the wretched activity of the dying is put to rest. Even so, how can men find an escape from "**the corruption that is in the world through lust**" (2 Pet. 1:4)? Through a Divine-killing of *the spiritual force* of **death** and **corruption**, God raises men up from the grave of depravity into newness of life via a new creation, "Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: **old things are passed away**; behold, all things are become new" (2 Cor. 5:17). But, take note, when and if a believer does turn back to the flesh and its corrupt desires, the spiritual organism of deadly rottenness will begin its awful course upon the backslider's soul once again! Speaking on this wise, Paul said, "Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatsoever a man soweth, that shall he also reap. For he that **soweth to his flesh** shall **of the flesh** reap **corruption**; but he that **soweth to the Spirit** shall **of the Spirit** reap **life everlasting**" (Gal. 6:7-8).

The Proceedings of and Counteraction Against Spiritual Corruption

Once spiritual corruption takes-hold upon a backslider's soul, it can spread! Speaking of this – the spread-ability of corruption – it was written, "They are **corrupt**, and speak wickedly concerning oppression: they speak loftily" (Ps. 73:8), they do prepare "lying and **corrupt** words" by flatteries, "as many which **corrupt** the word of God" (Dan. 2:9, 2 Cor. 2:17), "And such as do wickedly against the Covenant shall **corrupt** by flatteries" (Dan. 11:32). Corrupt words do further the grip of death and advance the rottenness of depravity. Through flattery, instead of raising the dead from the grave of sin, they mummify the dead to disguise the depravity and make the dead look alive again. By corrupt words they flatter the wicked, "promising him life" (Ezek. 16:22), "saying, Peace; and there was no peace" (Ezek. 13:10). It is written, "While they promise them liberty, they themselves are the servants of **corruption**" (2 Pet. 2:19). "Servants OF CORRUPTION", Peter said! Servants of corruption do corrupt others! The proceedings of those who are corrupted, is corruption; "For when they speak great swelling words of vanity, they allure through the lusts of the flesh, though much wantonness, those that were clean escaped from them who live in error" (2 Pet. 2:18). As a contagious disease infects the healthy and corrupts the living as a consequence of being in near-proximity to it, these vain-talkers and deceitful men do,

likewise, corrupt the saints of God by inordinate contact, conversation, and interaction, even “after they [had] escaped the **pollutions of the world** through the knowledge of the Lord” (2 Peter 2:19-20)! Oh how we need to feel the truth of what was written by Paul, who said, “Be not deceived: evil communications **corrupt** good manners” (1 Cor. 15:33)! As sinners abide among the congregation of the saints like a corrupting and cell-killing infection wreaks havoc on the body, the saints need a plan of counteraction.

“**Spots** they are and **blemishes**, sporting themselves with their own deceivings while they feast with you”
– 2 Peter 2:13

“These are **spots** in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots” – Jude 1:12

We are commanded to, on the contrary, “let no **corrupt communication** proceed out of [our] mouth, but that which is good to the use of edifying, that it may **minister grace** unto the hearers” (Eph. 4:29). We are called to “overcome evil with good” (Rom. 12:21). We are called to “have no fellowship with the unfruitful works of darkness, but rather reprove them” (Eph. 5:11). Therefore as the spots and blemishes of corruption in the congregation become apparent to the spiritual men and women of God (Gal. 6:1), they must cleanse them or heal them. Cleanse them, I say, “with the washing of the water by the word” (Eph. 5:26), until the Bride is presentable to her Bridegroom “not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that [She] should be holy and without blemish” (Eph. 5:27). Not only are these spots and blemishes ceremonially disqualifying and marriage-ending (like an O.T. sacrifice had to be “**perfect**” in physical stature to be accepted of God -Lev. 22:19-23), they are corrupting and killing like leprous spots ravage the life out of a human being! It is vital to recognize that, according to scripture, these “spots and blemishes” are not something that the body of Christ is able to live-through and survive-with. These spots and blemishes must be *cleansed* and *healed* or the limbs which bear them must be *cut off*. The activity of these spots is corruption: like health-hazard leprous spots endanger all who draw near!

Therefore like unclean men with running issues were isolated and quartered into containment from the rest of Israel, we need to **separate** the clean from the unclean! “The graves are ready” for sinners because they are men of corruption (Job. 17:1), but God calls His people to a Divine-reception (“*I will receive you*”-2Cor.6:17)! Look around your Church, my reader. What do you see? Will God say to your Church,

“...the whole head is sick, and the whole heart faint. From the sole of the foot even unto the head there is **no soundness** in it; but wounds, and bruises, and **putrifying sores**: they have not been closed, neither bound up, neither mollified with ointment” - Isaiah 1:5-6

If so, what does this mean?

“When any man hath a **running issue** out of his flesh, because of **the issue** he is **unclean**” – Lev. 15:2

“And **whatsoever** the **unclean person TOUCHETH shall be unclean**; and the soul that **TOUCHETH it shall be unclean** until even.” – Numbers 19:22

Aye, what an awful condition! And yet today, in this hour, people have turned Churches into hospitals for impenitent sinners! And because they hospitalize the incurable (the unrepentant and willful sinner) there is no pew or hospital bed that has not become unclean by running issues and fretting leprosy (Lev. 15:2, 13:51-52, 14:44)! When some newly converted man (freshly made clean before God) stumbles into one of these “Churches” looking for a regular audience with The Great Physician, alas, he is **defiled**! He was, beforehand, “clean escaped from them who live in error”, but after he entered into the unclean place and touched the unclean thing, alas! He is unclean. These “Churches” are mingled with sinners that have lathered the whole place with their defiling spiritual behavior (“*every bed, whereon he lieth that bath the issue, is **unclean**: and every thing, whereon he sitteth, shall be **unclean**. And whosoever TOUCHETH his bed shall wash his clothes, and bathe himself in water, and be **unclean until the even**” -Lev. 15:4-5). Yes... and the finger of God points toward the Preachers!*

“Her Priests have violated My Law, and have profaned mine holy things: they have put no *difference* between the **holy** and **profane**, neither have they shewed *difference* between the **unclean** and the **clean**...” (Ezek. 22:26). On behalf of such a grim situation as this Charles Spurgeon gave comment, saying,

“For a Church to be constantly needing revival is the indication of much sin, for if it were sound before the Lord it would remain in the condition into which a revival would uplift its members. A Church should be a camp of soldiers, not an hospital of invalids. But there is exceedingly much difference between what ought be and what is, and consequently many of God's people are in so sad a state that the very fittest prayer for them is for revival. Some Christians are, spiritually, but barely alive.” – C.H. Spurgeon

Spurgeon's words depict the sober reality as it relates to the NEED of revival (i.e. life from the dead) in backslidden Churches, this is true, but what if the backsliders of the Church never experience revival? Should those who are walking in personal revival *continue amidst* the dead and dying? Should the living be forced into *spiritual union* with the dead? Is *this union* tolerable or intolerable? Concerning the prospect of this dilemma, Spurgeon said,

“Every earnest minister has known times when he has felt cold hearts to be as intolerable as the drones in the hive are to the working bees. Careless professors are as much out of place as snow in harvest among truly living Christians. As vinegar to the teeth and smoke to the eyes are these sluggards. As well be bound to a dead body as forced into union with lifeless professors; they are a burden, a plague, and an abomination.” – C.H. Spurgeon

Spurgeon spoke correctly when he said, “burden”, he spoke with biblical exactitude when he said, “plague”, and he spoke by prophetic inspiration when he said, “abomination”! Do you agree, my reader? Or has the rotten TOUCH of spiritual deadness already infected you, dear friend, from backslider-to-believer? If it has... you have been numbed to the sensations which are active within and exclusive to a *spiritual man*. Oh, how the apostle Paul did lament this awful condition, the spiritual-turned-carnal! When confronting the backslidden Corinthians who were at that time, carnal men, Paul said, “And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto *spiritual*, but as unto *carnal*... for ye are yet *carnal* (1 Cor. 3:1-3). And because “to be carnally minded is death” (Rom. 8:6), Paul was trying to wake them up from the deadly sleep which they were in (“*Awake thou that sleepest, and arise from the dead, and Christ shall give thee light*”-Eph.5:14)! Paul knew their backslidings had paralyzed their ability of spiritual discernment to wit, the wisdom of God had become foolishness unto them. Making this point, Paul said, “But *the natural man* receiveth not the things of the Spirit: for they are foolishness unto him: neither can he know them, because they are *spiritually discerned*” (1 Cor. 2:14). What about you, my reader... what about us? What about the 21st century Church which is quickly approaching the end of the world? Will we be brought into agreement with the plain truth which pervades The Church right now, which is, “While the Bridegroom tarried, they all slumbered and slept” (Matt. 25:5)? Will we be brought to the spiritual soundness of real conviction, that we are a debtor to the world and what we do matters! Alas, let us weep! Let us cry! For our sins have made-way for the midnight hour of the Antichrist!

“When nations are to perish in their sins,
It is in the Church the leprosy begins
The Priest, whose office is with zeal sincere,
To watch the fountain, and preserve it clear,
Carelessly nods and sleeps upon the brink,
While others poison what the flock must drink.
His unsuspecting sheep believe it pure,
And, tainted by the very means of cure,
Catch from each other a contagious spot,
The foul forerunner of a general rot.
Then Truth is hushed, that Heresy may preach,
And all is trash that Reason cannot reach.”

- William Cowper

If only we were properly instructed, if heresy did not preach... then we could understand the reason why the saints do sleep-on in this seemingly un-wake-able deadness! It is not often the near-dead can speak, nor even think, because in a sleep-like stupor they pass into eternity subconscious of what is going on around their soon-to-die body. So it is with revival-less persons: they are so swallowed up with death that they need to be brought to life once again (revival = “to make alive again”)! Concerning this Church-wide dilemma we have been instructed by the Lord Jesus, saying, “Be watchful, and strengthen *the things which remain*, **that are ready to die**: for I have not found thy works perfect before God” (Rev. 3:2). Albeit when some evil disease is wreaking havoc on the body, how shall the near-dead awake? The Lord has instructed us, furthermore,

Matthew 18:8-9 → *those who are spiritually healthy can become spiritually diseased, which means saints can become sinners, and at such a time only one operation is available to stop the spreading of the incurable disease; amputation from the Body.*

2 Pet. 2:13 & Jude 12 → *the presence of non-excommunicated, backslidden men is hazardous and potentially fatal to the Body of Christ; like ceremonial “blemishes” of utter disqualification (Eph. 5:27); like health-destroying leprous “spots” making the Bride the living dead (Num. 12:12); like a “root of bitterness springing up” whereby many are “defiled” by its poison (Heb. 12:15, Deut. 29:18-21).*

Jesus said, “They that are whole need not a Physician; but **they that are sick**. I came not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance”, but they that are unrepentant and reprobate sinners are incurably sick! Just as the Corinthians were told to “**put away** from among yourselves **that wicked person**”, we must hear this call to holiness with a sense of **biological necessity** (Matt 18:15-17)! We must learn to cleanse God’s backsliding people from sin by judging their confessions in comparison with a biblically defined “worthy repentance” (Lk. 3:8, 2 Cor. 7:10-11). Therefore if any man “neglect to hear the Church, let him be unto thee **as an heathen man and a publican**” (Matt. 18:17), for, “We are of God: he that knoweth God heareth us; he that is not of God heareth not us. Hereby know we the spirit of truth, and the spirit of error” (1 Jn. 4:6). When Christ said, “let him be unto thee **as an heathen man and a publican**” (Matt. 18:17), this means in other words, let him be unto us as an “**unclean thing**” (2 Cor. 6:17)! This is the “judgment” and purity which must be kept “within” the Church, “but them that are without God judgeth” (1 Cor. 5:12-13). Do you understand this, my reader?

“Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot offend thee, **cut them off**, and **cast them from thee**: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire. And if thine eye offend thee, **pluck it out**, and **cast it from thee**: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.” – Matthew 18:8-9

Matthew 18:8-9 is not a word directed to individual Christians, as some may assume. It is not intended to teach us how we should treat our *actual bodies* when we feel endangered by sin. Though there are spiritual principles which most certainly may be gleaned from this approach to the text, this was not the meaning for which Christ spoke it. I acknowledge the spiritual insights of this view. I am edified to consider what true repentance from sin *looks like* and *feels like*. It is true, when one truly repents there is a relentless effort which forces the cutting off of sin, a consciousness of eternal judgment which drives the man to pay any cost, but Christ did not speak this as a demonstration of personal sacrifice for individual Christians. No, this was spoken to address the Body of Christ as a whole. The emphasis is not on any personal cost to our physical bodies, as if we would cut off an actual member of our body to escape sin. The emphasis is directed to a corporate cost to our Spiritual Body, *the Church*, when we have to cut off a member of the Body of Christ from the Church (i.e. excommunication). When reading Matthew 18:8-9 standing alone, this interpretation is not apparent, but when reading these verses in context with verses 1-20, the message is very clear. Chapter 18, as a whole, is an address to the corporate Church. In it are repeated instructions on what is to be done when the saints of the true Church fall into a damnable offence. My reader, look upon verses 1-20 before we continue:

“At the same time came the disciples unto Jesus, saying, Who is the greatest in the kingdom of heaven? And Jesus called a little child unto him, and set him in the midst of them, And said, Verily I say unto you, Except ye be converted, and **become as little children**, ye shall not enter into the kingdom of heaven. Whosoever therefore

shall humble himself **as this little child**, the same is greatest in the kingdom of heaven. And whoso shall receive **one such little child in my name receiveth Me**. But whoso shall **offend one of these little ones which believe in me**, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea. Woe unto **the world** because of **offences**! for it must needs be that **offences** come; but woe to **that man by whom the offence cometh**! Wherefore if thy hand or thy foot **offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee**: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire. And if thine eye **offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee**: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire. Take heed that ye **despise not one of these little ones**; for I say unto you, That in heaven **their angels** do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven. For the Son of man is come to save that which was lost. How think ye? if a man have an hundred sheep, and one of them be gone astray, doth he not leave the ninety and nine, and goeth into the mountains, and seeketh that which is gone astray? And if so be that he find it, verily I say unto you, he rejoiceth more of that sheep, than of the ninety and nine which went not astray. Even so it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that **one of these little ones** should perish. Moreover if **thy brother** shall trespass against thee, go and tell him his fault between thee and him alone: if he shall hear thee, thou hast **gained thy brother**. But if he will not hear thee, then take with thee one or two more, that in the mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established. And if he shall neglect to hear them, tell it unto **the Church**: but if he neglect to hear **the Church**, let him be unto thee as an heathen man and a publican. Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of my Father which is in heaven. For where two or three are gathered together in my name, there am I in the midst of them.” – Matthew 18:1-20

The chapter is an address to true believers in Christ (here called “little children”, “little child”, and “little ones”). Christ uses an actual “little child”, set in their midst, as a demonstration of the childlike humility which saved men have towards their newfound Parent – God Almighty. As the teaching develops it is made clear, the “little ones” are those to whom Christ affirms with the statement, “believe in Me”, acknowledging that they have saving faith. By saving faith, these “little ones” are regenerated and indwelt by Christ, therefore anyone who receives “one such little child in My Name”, Christ said, the same man “**receiveth Me**”. The believer, here called “one such little child”, is united with the living Christ in so sacred a union that, **to reject the “little child” is to reject Christ!** This union is depicted well in the following analogy that Christ speaks. This “little child” is a part of the Body of Christ, therefore whatever is done to the child is done to Christ Himself (see Matt. 18:8-9). After introducing the hallowed union that Christ has with true believers, He forewarns us, that when a person offends one of these believers, causing them to fall into damnable sin, “it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea”. When saints are overcome by the world (Jas. 4:4) and intoxicated by “earthly” wisdom (Jas. 3:15), they engage in spiritual “wars and fightings among” themselves (Jas. 4:1). “But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not consumed one of another”, Paul warns (Gal. 5:15). James and Paul spoke in agreement with Christ when He said, “WOE unto the world because of offences...woe to that man by whom the offences cometh!” This means that when one saint is offended, in turn this saint – who is overcome by the world – is used to cause other saints to offend, so it happens in the NT according to the old Deuteronomic warning where suddenly, because of the offence of one, many are being offended, or in other words, “lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby **many be defiled**” (Deut. 29:18, Heb. 12:15).

To prevent this danger – the spread of offences throughout the body of Christ – the Lord said “WHEREFORE”: “**Wherefore** if thy hand or thy foot **offend thee, cut them off, and cast them from thee**: it is better for thee to enter into life halt or maimed, rather than having two hands or two feet to be cast into everlasting fire. And if thine eye **offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee**: it is better for thee to enter into life with one eye, rather than having two eyes to be cast into hell fire.” But let us be careful, Christ gives further caution beyond this verse so that, in the process of preventing Church-wide leavening into malice, wickedness, bitterness, and insincerity, we don’t make a mistake and cut people off from the body of Christ through ungodly despise. He warns, let it be done only through sincere love. Speaking on this wise, Christ said, “Take heed that ye **despise not one of these little ones**; for I say unto you, That in

heaven **their angels** do always behold the face of my Father which is in heaven.” Thus the Lord teaches us not to cut them off from the Body of Christ *through despite*, yes, but the main emphasis is, after these regenerate men who have turned into offenders are cut off (so as to save the Body from the leaven of their sin spreading and destroying all), we should remember that God does not want any one of these cut off brethren to perish even though they are currently backslidden, gone astray, and cut off from the Church (2 Cor. 2:8-9).

The Lord teaches that He wants us to “save that which was lost” by neglecting the righteous (as the Lord leads), He wants us to seek “that which is gone astray” (Matt. 18:11-12)... and if such a one is found and restored again to the Shepherd’s fold, which is the body of Christ, my reader - there is great rejoicing in heaven! “Even so”, Christ says, in the light of all these things, “it is not the will of your Father which is in heaven, that one of these little ones should perish” (Matt. 18:14)... therefore let all cutting off, plucking out, and casting away excommunications take their proper course (see Matthew 18:15-17). Anyone who follows this Divinely-authored formula for excommunication, as seen in Matthew 18:15-17, can be sure it is done in Christ’s Name (supposing it was done in and through the Spirit of God). The Lord promises that, by following this formula (see Matt. 18:15-17), when the Church is thus gathered in an effort to deal with the rebellious brothers – Christ will be there in the assembly – and with Him are veritable, sure, and wondrous promises: “Verily I say unto you, Whatsoever ye shall bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever ye shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven. Again I say unto you, That if two of you shall agree on earth as touching any thing that they shall ask, it shall be done for them of My Father which is in heaven. For where two or three are gathered together in My Name, there am I in the midst of them” (Matt. 18:18-20). You see, my reader, Christ’s Divine union with believers is spoken of in verse 5, verses 8-9, and verses 18-20, and this is His Bodily response to an individual member’s rebellion. Did not the writer of Hebrews warn us about how members of the Body of Christ can be “turned out of the way”? The Lord Jesus desires that, when the members of His Body are defective – when “the hands hang down”, the “knees are feeble”, and the “feet are lame” – Christ says, “let [them] rather be healed” instead of amputated from the Body (Heb. 12:12-15)! This is Christ’s desire, thus let it be our pursuit, but if the offender cannot be healed and must be excommunicated, let us follow the precautionary measures which are written in Matthew 18:15-17, Galatians 6:1, Jude 1:22-23, James 5:19-20, and 2 Timothy 2:24-26. In the process, don’t lose your own soul, brother - stay “**with them** that call on the Lord out of a pure heart” (see 2 Tim. 2:19-23)! Don’t be ignorant of Satan’s devices! Oh, how many perish for lack of knowledge? For lack of obedience to the doctrines of separation (2 Tim. 3:5, 1 Tim. 6:3-5, Romans 16:17-18, Titus 3:10-11)! In such a dilemma as this, sadly, most Christians don’t know what to do! Most Christians are oblivious to *the danger* of backsliders who *continue in the Church*! Most Christians are ignorant of the Spiritual Biology of the Body of Christ! God laments today, yet again, “My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge” (Hos. 4:6)! Yes, members of Christ are destroyed for lack of knowledge! Yes, local Churches – “Bodies of Christ” – are destroyed for lack of knowledge! And most Christians misinterpret Matthew 18:8-9 because they are ignorant of the *doctrinal rules* and warnings which are repeatedly given to the Body of Christ all throughout the scripture – stating clearly that – we, the Body of Christ, are in danger of hellfire if we continue in *unholy-union* with one body-part of Christ that is fallen, backslidden, and offended!

“*Wisdom* is better than weapons of war: but **one sinner destroyeth much good**” – Eccl. 9:18

“*Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners.*” – 1 Corinthians 15:33

When and if a saint backslides into a **disqualified** spiritual condition, the man is disqualified from biblical **companionship, friendship, fellowship, and yoking** - by God’s command, there needs to be a “forsaking” of the one to save them all (Prov. 9:6), a “purging” of the one to save the “whole lump” (1 Cor. 5:6-8), a “casting out” of the one to preserve the health and progress of the congregation (Prov. 22:12). Because the backslider’s presence aggravates and contends against the presence of God and His people, the backslider has become an object of *spiritual disunion* from God and His body. This disunion is dangerous! In essence, the backslider’s spiritual condition is in *contradiction* and *enmity against* the cause of Christ and His people – this merits his removal (Prov. 14:7). Dismembering the offender saves the body! “Cut them off and cast them from thee”, Christ said! “Pluck it out and cast it from thee” (Matt. 18:8-9), and why? No matter how precious the member, it must be cut off from Christ’s body...or the offender will cause the whole body

to offend (see Matt. 18:3-20). These offenders, my brethren! Cut and “**cast them**” from the body! Or the body is to be “**cast into everlasting fire**” (Matt. 18:8)! We are warned, brethren... will we take heed?

Like veins the heart, so is every body part; they all share in a single source of life. This life flows within, among, and through them all, “for in Him we live, and move, and have our being” (Acts 17:28). With such an interconnected livelihood, let us reckon the implications: When one member of Christ is bitten by the Serpent’s infernal bite, it becomes a poisoned part...and if the livelihood of Spiritual communion with this body-part continues as before, those sacred and life-giving connections will become the transport for Satan’s fiery venom. That which was injected into the dying member will, when drawn into the heart, violently overcome the whole Spiritual Man. The outlets which communicated *body* life-blood to the body, now poisoned, carry death to every member! Poison is to the body like leaven to the lump; the whole body is killed. When at one time “the unity of the faith” made manifest the perfection of God’s glory – a Christ-filled “Perfect Man” (Eph. 4:13) – on the contrary here, through inordinate unity, alas, the body of Christ is a discolored, hardly conscious, dying Man! The Man is poisoned into bodily distress, yes, because of the unholy union it has with a poisoned member - thus the Church is fighting for its very life! My reader, has the Lamp of your local Church gone out? Has Christ, the eternal High Priest, removed the Candlestick out of its place? Do you live in such a time when, alas, “the Lamp of God went out in the Temple of the LORD” (1 Sam. 3:3)?

A Health-Hazard: A Careless & Unconscious TOUCH

It is written, “TOUCH NOT *the unclean thing*” (2 Cor. 6:17). *Uncleanness* is aggressive and overwhelming like as the violence of life-threatening diseases contagious by the TOUCH (i.e. incurable leprosy), the spreading leaven which mysteriously and quickly leavens the whole lump (1 Cor. 5), whose continual spread is unstoppable without a costly and cutting purge (from the lump); or like an incurable bodily infection and poison, whose only cessation is by a hurried amputation (see Matt. 18). Uncleanness incurs life-threatening wrath, and if we are not awfully aware of its presence like as men would behave in these metaphorical and biblical parallels, we will be taken in its damnation by a careless, unconscious TOUCH! The temporary effect of these experiences incapacitate the body and life of the spiritual or physical organism, whose eyes become blind like as darkness would bring obscurity, whose vision is impaired and unreliable like as a prick in the eye would make everything warped and blurry, and if these curses take their course beyond the time spectrum in which God would grant recovery, then like Solomon’s slow and eventual apostasy because of the presence of his wives, or Samson’s slow and eventual apostasy because of Delilah’s contentious weeping and daily pleading, who both – as in a moment – awoke without God, perfect hearts, or strength to repent, so will the victims course follow suit.

Since this is the case, how can the congregation, Church, and body of Christ be “clean” (2 Cor. 6:17) if wicked men are “yoked, fellowshiping, in communion, concord, part, and agreement” (2 Cor. 6:14-16) in our prayers (Acts 1:14, 2:42, Eph. 6:18), preaching (Col. 3:16, Heb. 3:13, 10:24-25, 13:10-13), singing (Eph. 5:18-21), and religious devotions (Col. 3:12-17)? All of these religious devotions are only possible to be done “in Spirit and Truth” (John 4:23-24). “But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth.” (John 4:23-24). Therefore, the only way to be wholly acceptable and clean in congregation is to “come out from among them, and be ye separate,” because by nature they are contagious, by Law they are uncleanness, and like leprosy they are spots and blemishes which render the people of God and congregation unacceptable, unclean, and un-received of the Lord (2 Cor. 6:17-18). A sinner who can be saved, healed, cleansed, and in communion with the Church and Holy Ghost is the man that has eyes to see the Truth, and comes to Christ confessing: Save me and heal me Lord, “for mine iniquities are gone over mine head: as an heavy burden they are too heavy for me. **My wounds stink and are corrupt** because of my foolishness” (Psalm 38:4-5).

Uncleanness & Defiled

Points to Prove:

- 1) A sinner **BY NATURE** is **unclean** and **defiled**.
- 2) A sinner **IN SINNING** is a cause of **uncleanness** and **defilement** through OT descriptive terms.
- 3) A sinner **THROUGH SALVATION** in Christ is made **clean** and **without defilement**.

“And whatsoever the *unclean person* **TOUCHETH** *shall be unclean*,
and *the soul that TOUCHETH it shall be unclean* until even.” – Numbers 19:22

“TOUCH NOT the unclean thing” – 2 Corinthians 6:17

Uncleanness comes from *unclean things*, and uncleanness spreads by **TOUCHING** *unclean things*. Unclean things are specified by scripture and outLAWed in the Old and New Testaments. A list of objects or organisms which fall under the “TOUCH NOT” mandate includes: certain beasts and creeping things (Lev. 5:2), certain ways of death happening to clean animals making them unclean (Lev. 17:15), and a cursed sin-laden scapegoat (Lev. 16). Uncleanness would also pass upon a man through touching dead bodies (Lev. 5:3) or leprosy (Lev. 14). Uncleanness does also pass upon a man by the engagement of outLAWed behavior and sin, like the act of committing adultery (Lev. 20:21). Furthermore, also, there was uncleanness of Land (Lev. 18), unclean places (Lev. 10:14, 14:40-45), unclean houses and homes (Lev. 14), and uncleanness of garments (Lev. 14). The uncleanness of houses, garments, objects, and things would exist via a plague of leprosy, for example, or the excrement of running issues lathering the places and things whithersoever the diseased man went (Lev. 15:4), or, of course, other unclean things spreading uncleanness touch-by-touch.

The word **defiled** is used to describe the spreading-effect by which an *unclean thing* makes another object or person unclean. The awful process by which the clean thing becomes an unclean thing (clean-to-unclean) is called, **defilement**. For example, the word “**defiled**” was used to express the effect of uncleanness spreading upon the Land via sexual sins (Lev. 18:25, 27). Or, for example, if a Priest was **defiled** by a dead body and then entered into the Sanctuary of the Temple while being unclean, this would **defile** the Sanctuary (Lev. 10:6-11, 21:10-12, Num. 19:20, Ezek. 5:11, 23:38-39). Having thus far overviewed the various features of biblical uncleanness specifically speaking in differentiation one from another, we need to move into the heart of the matter: the uncleanness of unforgiven sin. Uncleanness and/or defilement exist via the activity of any sin and all sin, if it is unforgiven.

General Uncleanness & Inward Uncleanness via Unforgiven Sin

It was said once, “I am **clean** without transgression, I am innocent; neither is there iniquity in me” (Job 33:9). Apparently cleanness is equivalent to innocence, justification, righteousness, and salvation in the Old Testament. But, my reader, consider the sober question: “What is man, that he should be **clean**? And he which is born of a woman, that he should be righteous” (Job 15:14)? All of scripture exists to answer this question! Humanity is viewed in terms of uncleanness at their lowest point: born into the spiritual death caused by *Original Sin*. Speaking on this wise, furthermore, David said, “Behold, I was shapen in iniquity; and in sin did my mother conceive me” (Ps. 51:5)... therefore how can a man born of a woman be **clean**? Search every man on earth, “Who can bring a **clean** thing out of an **unclean**? Not one” (Job 14:4)! But when and if mankind looks to the salvation which God provides: “all things are possible” (Mark 10:27)! King David understood salvation and damnation in these terms, my reader: *The Clean & The Unclean*.

Having a heart towards the salvation which God does perform and provide – a Divine-**Washing** and a Divine-**Cleansing** – David cried out to God, “**Wash** me thoroughly from mine iniquity, and **cleanse** me from my sin” (Ps. 51:2). “**Purge** me with **hyssop**, and I shall be **clean**: **wash** me, and I shall be **whiter** than snow” (Ps. 51:7). In David’s prayers we can see a deep understanding of *The Clean and Unclean Laws* as they pertained to the unforgiven sin which he had committed during the time of his backsliding. David sought after *inner-cleansing* not *outward-cleansing*, first of all! Speaking of this, David confessed, “Thou desirest truth in the **inward parts**” (Ps. 51:6), because he understood the inner-workings of salvation personally and experientially, though he was backslidden. David needed a cleansing within that only God could perform! Only God makes men clean in the “**inward parts**” via a Divine-**Washing** and a Divine-**Cleansing**! Think of it, my reader. David used the terms, “wash”, “cleanse”, and “purge”, because he understood the

defiling effect of sin in backslidden and unclean men! His confession to God was, in other words, “I am unclean!”, “I am unclean!”, and thus he cried: “Wash me!”, “Cleanse me!”, and “Purge me!”

“Create in me **a clean heart**” – Ps. 51:10

Only an inward washing can cleanse an **unclean heart**. David cried, “Create in me a **clean heart**, O God; and renew a right spirit within me” (Ps. 51:10)! David knew that he could not give himself a clean heart. He humbly demonstrated the wisdom of Proverbs 20:9, which said, “who can say, I have made my **heart clean**, I am **pure** from my **sin**?” God answered David’s prayers and gave him a clean heart by the washing, cleansing, and purging power of the Holy Ghost! In acknowledgment that inward washing, cleansing, and purging comes from the inner-working of an indwelling Holy Ghost, David cried, “Cast me not away from **Thy presence**; and take not Thy **Holy Spirit** from me” (Psalm 51:11)! David’s prayers demonstrate the doctrines he was taught concerning *The Clean and Unclean Laws* – doctrines which were known by the public and proclaimed by the faithful. Demonstrating the commonality of this knowledge, it was written, “Truly God is good to Israel, even to such as are of a **clean heart**” (Psalm 73:1), and contrary to estate the psalmist said of the wicked, “they are **corrupt**” (Ps. 73:8). Whether in the Old Testament or the New Testament, whether through the pre-incarnate Christ (1 Pet. 1:11, 1 Cor. 10:1-4, Acts 2:25) or the post-incarnate Christ (Eph. 3:17, 1 Pet. 1:22), salvation is by a Holy Ghost cleansing via His indwelling (Matt. 23:26, 1 Jn. 1:9). Expounding these doctrines further in an Old Testament sense, the psalmist declared,

“Blessed are the **undefiled [the clean]** in the way, who walk in the Law of the LORD. Blessed are they that keep his testimonies, and that seek him with the whole heart. They also do no iniquity: they walk in his ways. Thou hast commanded us to keep thy precepts diligently. O that my ways were directed to keep Thy statutes! Then shall I not be ashamed when I have respect unto all Thy commandments. I will praise Thee with uprightness of heart, when I shall have learned Thy righteous judgments. I will keep Thy statutes: O forsake me not utterly” (Ps. 119:1-8).

Those who are clean before God do, by necessity, “walk in the Law of the LORD” (Ps. 119:1). Psalm 119:1 references to the Old Testament dilemma of damnation via uncleanness: an uncleanness which is universal, general, inward, and existing everywhere unforgiven sin is (according to the aforementioned scriptures referenced heretofore). Those who are clean escaped from this dilemma do, therefore, “walk in the Law of the LORD” (Ps. 119:1) – this is the **undefiled** way! Speaking on this wise in a New Testament sense, Jesus said to His disciples, “thou art **clean** by the word which has been spoken to thee” (John 15:3). Not all were **clean** (John 13:10-11), for not all obeyed from the heart that form of doctrine which was delivered unto them (Rom. 6:15-23). Judas was not obeying the words of Jesus Christ and so, in a New Testament sense, Judas was not walking in the Law of the LORD which is **the undefiled pathway**. Judas was deceived. “All *the ways* of man are **clean in his own eyes**; but the LORD weigheth the spirits” (Prov. 16:2), and Judas was found wanting. The good, clean, and saving doctrine of Jesus Christ was weighty and severe, bound with eternal consequences. It is written that Jesus Christ “loved the Church, and gave Himself for it; that He might **sanctify** and **cleanse** it with the **washing of water by the word**, that He might present it to Himself a glorious Church, not having **spot**, or **wrinkle**, or any such thing; but that it should be **holy** and **without blemish**” (Eph. 5:25-27) – this is a staggering presentation! If this is what Jesus Christ died to accomplish, shall we not take the time to understand and interpret its meaning and significance for New Testament Christianity? It is apparent that Jesus Christ was burdened to “sanctify”, to “cleanse”, and to “wash”, and therefore we must learn what it is to be unsanctified, uncleansed, and unwashed! With the same severity and urgency found in Psalm 119:1-8, should we not take heed? The psalmist cried,

“O forsake me not utterly!” – Psalm 119:8

Do you cry this prayer to God? Perhaps if you understood the *Clean & Unclean Laws in New Testament Reality* you would! The psalmist cried out to God because he knew that God would “forsake utterly” those who were **unclean** or **defiled** according to the Old Testament (Psalm 119:8)! He knew that clean and unclean was a matter of life and death. Those who

Salvation = an entire submission of the human will to God (though not “sinlessly perfect”, it is consciously perfect), a continual and ever-increasing or ever-renewing subjection to the will to God (as faith, revelation-knowledge, and understanding increases); the result being: a continual willingness and violent pursuit of God’s will at

are unclean and defiled do not obey God. The psalmist said to God, they do not “keep Thy statutes” (Ps. 119:8). It takes a fully surrendered heart or, a “whole heart” (Ps. 119:2), for a man to “so learn Christ” as to “hear Him” and “be taught by Him” to walk the narrow way of righteousness “which after God is created in righteousness and **true holiness**” (Eph. 4:19-21, 24)! Do you have a “whole heart”, my reader? Is the Spirit of God working in you what it did for Caleb and Joshua, to whom it was said, “they have wholly followed the LORD” (Num. 32:12). The Lord did plainly say that it was “because [they] had another spirit with [them], and hath followed [God] fully” (Num. 14:24). When the Spirit of God comes within a man in cleansing power, it was written, “Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears

all times.

A Whole-Hearted Man as Seen in the Totality of His Faculties

Wholeness of Heart – Ps.119:2, 10, 58-60, 69, 111-112, 145-148
Soul/heart/love – Ps.119:20, 25, 28, 81, 36, 32, 47, 167, 174
Longing/panting – Ps.119:40, 131, Eyes – Ps.119:18, 82, 30, 37
Mouth/tongue/declaration–Ps.119:13, 171-172, 57, 26, 43, 27, 46
Determination/confidence/oath –Ps.119:44, 33, 34, 8, 30, 94, 106
Feet/running/ways – Ps.119:32, 3, 5, 123, 101, 105, 133, 168
Un-forgetting/meditation – Ps.119:16, 48, 93, 153
Fear – Ps.119:38, 120, Horror –Ps.119:53, Weeping –Ps.119:136
Zeal – Ps. 119:139, Anguish – Ps. 119:143, Grief – Ps. 119:158
Awe – Ps. 119:161, Peace – Ps. 119:165, Sweetness – Ps. 119:103
Rejoicing vs. Riches – Ps. 119:72, 111, 127-128, 162
Hours & Time Spent – morning (Ps. 119:147), all day (Ps. 119:97, 164), and night (Ps. 119:55, 62, 148)

of the deaf shall be unstopped [Isaiah 35:5, Eph. 4:17-19]. Then shall the lame man leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing: for in the wilderness shall waters break out, and streams in the desert [Isaiah 35:6, Hebrews 12:12-13]. And the parched ground shall become a pool, and the thirsty land springs of water: in the habitation of dragons, where each lay, shall be grass with reeds and rushes [Isaiah 35:7, John 7:37]. And an highway shall be there, and a way, and it shall be called **The Way of Holiness** [John 14:7]; **the unclean** shall not pass over it; but it shall be for those: the wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err therein” [Isaiah 35:8, Hebrews 12:13-14]. My reader, do you know this way of holiness wherein **the unclean** do not pass over? It is tread by the strong and forsaken by the weak!

“Strengthen ye the weak hands, and confirm the feeble knees. Say to them that are of a fearful heart, Be strong, fear not: behold, your God will come with vengeance, even God with a recompence; he will come and save you. Then the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped. Then shall the lame man leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing: for in the wilderness shall waters break out, and streams in the desert. And the parched ground shall become a pool, and the thirsty land springs of water: in the habitation of dragons, where each lay, shall be grass with reeds and rushes. **And an Highway shall be there, and a Way, and it shall be called The Way of Holiness; the unclean shall not pass over it; but it shall be for those: the wayfaring men, though fools, shall not err therein.**” – Isaiah 35:3-8

“And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, **nor faint when thou art rebuked of him:** For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father chasteneth not? But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons. Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live? For they verily for a few days chastened us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be **partakers of His holiness.** Now no chastening for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth **the peaceable fruit of righteousness** unto them which are exercised thereby. **Wherefore lift up the hands which hang down, and the feeble knees; And make straight paths for your feet, lest that which is lame be turned out of the way; but let it rather be healed. Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord: Looking diligently lest any man fail of the grace of God; lest any root of bitterness springing up trouble you, and thereby many be defiled;**” – Hebrews 12:5-15

AFTER BEING SAVED, the writer of Hebrews argued: we must guard against any root of bitterness and **defilement** springing up from backsliders who err from **The Way Holiness**; lest we, through fellowship with spiritual fools (Eph. 5:10), err in their foolishness and fall asleep by their side (2 Pet. 3:17-18, Eph. 5:8-17, Matt 25:1-13). We must, on the contrary, stay on the holy pathway via the empowerment of God’s strength instead of the feeble-knees of unbelief, thus by God’s healing of all backsliding unto the perfection of personal holiness we can avoid **the amputating power** of

God's wrath against unholy members who are cut off for the perfection of corporate holiness; lest we, alongside them, become defiled in the poisonous apostasy which defiles many (Heb. 12:12-15, Deut. 29:18).

“Woe is me! For I am undone; because I am *a man* of **unclean lips**, and I dwell in the midst of *a people* of **unclean lips**: for mine eyes have seen the King, the LORD of hosts.” – Isaiah 6:5

You see, my reader, we need to conceptualize the reality of Isaiah's lamentation in this present hour. The danger exists today! Such an apostate and dangerous situation is depicted in the New Testament Books of 2nd Peter and Jude. There were many people with “unclean lips” (Isaiah 6:5) in the 1st century Church which spoke with “guile” and spewed-out “uncleanness” (1 Thess. 2:3) to the defilement of many souls (“*thereby many be defiled*”-Heb. 12:15). They did not preach the clean doctrines of God but, rather, “great swelling words of vanity” (2 Peter 2:18). The backsliders continued with the Christians in some cases (2 Pet. 2:13), which indicates that they did not verbally apostatize from *the form* of Christianity (2 Tim. 3:5), but to the damnation of their own souls, it was written, “These are **spots** in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves *without fear*” (Jude 12). Some of this number were furthermore characterized as those who “walk after the flesh in the lust of **uncleanness**” (2 Pet. 2:10). This is the way of the perishing, the way of the world that passes away like a shadow, but “the fear of the LORD is **clean**, enduring for ever” (Psalm 19:9)! Yes, and therefore, those who are fearless of the LORD are unclean (“*feeding themselves without fear*” -Jude 12). The sin of fearlessness is a fellowship-breaker because “God is greatly to be feared in *the assembly of the saints*, and to be had in reverence of *all them that are about Him*” (Psalm 89:7), blessed be His Holy Name!

“thereby many be **defiled**” – Heb. 12:15

In way or in word, unclean men threaten the cleanliness of others! They are a root of bitterness whereby many are **defiled** (Heb. 12:15)! They walk in “pernicious ways” speaking speeches of “feigned words”, and they do not know “the way of truth” (2 Peter 1:2-3). They do not verbally deny the Lord Jesus in actual Name-renouncement, but they deny the Lord Jesus by their deeds (Titus 1:16, 2 Peter 2:1, Jude 1:4), even by covetousness, for example (2 Peter 2:3, 14-15, 18). They are, in person, an infection amidst the Church as “**spots and blemishes**” (2 Peter 2:13). They are, in walk, “after the flesh in the lust of **uncleanness**” (2 Peter 2:10). They are, in service, “the servants of **corruption**” (2 Peter 2:19); and though they “promise [others] liberty” by saying, “my doctrine is **pure**” (Job 11:4), they “allure through the **lusts of the flesh**, through much wantonness, those that were **clean** escaped from them who live in error” (2 Peter 1:18). It is by the Divine nature that men escape the “**corruption** that is in the world through lust”, according to 2 Peter 1:4, but these men, through the deceit of justifying wickedness (Eph. 5:6, Gal. 6:7-9, 1 Cor. 6:9-10, 1 John 3:7), and through evil communications which “**corrupt** good manners” (1 Cor. 15:33), receive a greater condemnation: “For if after they have escaped *the pollutions of the world* through the knowledge of the Lord and Savior Jesus Christ, they are *again entangled therein*, and *overcome*, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning. For it had been better for them not to have known the **way of righteousness**, than, *after they have known it*, to turn from the **holy commandment** delivered unto them. But it happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own **vomit** again; and the **sow** that was **washed** to her wallowing in the **mire**” (2 Peter 2:20-22).

The Salvation Experience in Terms of Cleanliness

“According as **His Divine power** hath given unto us...exceeding and **precious promises**: that by these ye might be **partakers of the Divine Nature**, having **escaped the corruption that is in the world through lust**.” – 2 Peter 1:3-4

The Backsliders Experience in Terms of Defilement

“For if after they have **escaped the pollutions of the world** through the knowledge of the Lord and Saviour Jesus Christ, they are **again entangled therein**, and **overcome, the latter end is worse with them than the beginning**.” – 2 Peter 2:20

In way or in word and on the contrary to the aforementioned backsliders, men with “**pure minds**” (2 Peter 3:1) follow the “**holy commandment**” (2 Peter 2:21) which is “**the way of righteousness**” (2 Peter 2:21)! This is **The Highway of Holiness** tread by those who have “escaped from them who live in error”! But the backsliders were individuals who were, according to 2 Peter: “escaped” (2 Pet. 2:18, 20), “**washed**” (2 Pet. 2:22), and “turned” (2 Pet. 2:22), but then they erred from the way of **holiness** and wandered into the path of “**corruption**” (2 Pet. 1:4, 2:19), “**pollution**” (2 Pet. 2:19), “**uncleanness**” (2 Pet. 10), “vanity” (2 Pet. 2:18), “error” (2 Pet. 2:18), “bondage” (2 Pet. 2:19), “vomit” (2 Pet. 2:22), and “mire” yet again (2 Pet. 2:22)! The “**corruption**” or “**pollution**” of the world (2 Pet. 1:4, 2:20) categorizes all lust and sin which originates from the world (“*the lust of the flesh, the lust of the eyes, and the pride of life*” – 1Jn.2:17).

“What manner of persons ought ye to be in all **HOLY conversation** and **godliness**?” – 2 Peter 3:11

“**no unclean person**...hath any inheritance in the Kingdom of Christ and of God” – Eph. 5:5

In the New Testament, all manners of uncleanness are defined so that we might walk-out, in Christ, all manners of **holiness**! The inspired writers did specify what uncleanness was (and its synonyms: *pollution, corruption, and defilement*) so that we might recognize, **firstly**, the potential of our own defilement (clean-turned-unclean), **secondarily**, our susceptibility to allurements into a position whereby, shockingly, we forfeit our Divine-reception before God the Father (because of the touchable-ness or spread-ability of unclean things; 2 Cor. 6:17-18), and, **thirdly**, while we stand in the very thrall of imminent uncleanness whereabouts many become defiled (Heb. 12:15), we must behave cautiously, circumspectly, and obedient to the means of our perseverance according to scriptural instruction (“*from such withdraw thyself*” – 1 Tim. 6:5, 2 Tim. 3:5, Eph. 5:1-17). My dear brethren in the Lord, I entreat you: with the same urgency and gravity which motivates us to shun fornication, murder, drunkenness, witchcraft, and idolatry, that we should, moreover, avoid **uncleanness**! The judgment bar is settled into an unmovable position: “**no unclean person**...hath any inheritance in the kingdom of Christ and of God” (Eph. 5:5, Gal. 5:19-21, Col. 3:5, 2 Cor. 12:21-13:5; 1 Pet. 1:17). All this being said, we must see our own susceptibility to allurements into uncleanness by way of *the unclean man* itself coming alive again (“*the old man*”-Eph. 4:22, Col. 3:9). For example, when and if we broaden our scope of love to include in it the behaviors which God forbids, and, thus, we look too kindly and behave too friendly with a situation of mass backsliding so that, subtly, and by a false sense of “liberty” (2 Pet. 2:19, Jude 1:4), our self-mortification is left off and our undefiled religion is lost (Rom. 8:13, James 1:26-27)!

The Prerogative for Self-Mortification

“that which cometh out of the mouth, **this defileth the man**” – Matthew 15:11

Speaking into a situation of mass backsliding and imminent uncleanness on every side, the Lord Jesus said, “Hear, and understand: not that which goeth into the mouth **defileth a man**; but that which cometh out of the mouth, **this defileth a man**” (Matt. 15:10-11). The backsliders and apostates were oblivious to the truth: *The Clean & Unclean Laws in New Testament Reality*. God’s command was and is, “**Come out from among them and be ye separate**, saith the Lord, and **TOUCH NOT the unclean thing**” (2 Cor. 6:17), and yet the common “Christian” of today has no idea what Jesus Christ was teaching when he said, “that which cometh out of the mouth, **this defileth a man**” (Matt. 15:11). Is Jesus Christ saying that Christians cannot be **defiled**? No. He was clarifying to all by what means all men can be defiled: “**this defileth a man**”, Christ said. And when a man is defiled he must be dejected from the Church assembly according to 2 Corinthians 6:17-7:1.

“And *the tongue is a fire*, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue among our members, that it **defileth the whole body**, and *setteth on fire the course of nature*; and it is *set on fire of hell*.” – James 3:6

“let us **cleans** ourselves from all **filthiness** of the flesh and spirit, **perfecting holiness** in the fear of God” – 2 Cor. 7:1

“And Jesus said, Are ye also yet without understanding? Do not ye yet understand, that whatsoever entereth in at the mouth goeth into the belly, and is cast out into the draught? But those things which proceed out of the mouth

come forth **from the heart**; and they **defile the man**. For out of the heart proceed evil thoughts, murders, adulteries, fornications, thefts, false witness, blasphemies: These are the things which **defile a man**: but to eat with unwashen hands **defileth not a man**" - Matt. 15:16-20

Can you hear the words of God and apply them to yourself, my reader? And not to yourself only, but to your entire congregation which gathers for what is commonly called "Sunday Worship"? God is burdened about our **cleanliness** and our **holiness** which is achieved via "true religion", which affects our WORDS (Jas. 1:26-27)! God is burdened about every individual congregant's 7-day-a-week lifestyle including EVERY WORD they have spoken all week long! But people stumble into "Church" on Sunday morning expecting to meet with God... when, in truth, they are set on fire in the very flames of hell (James 3:6)! "They have cast fire into Thy Sanctuary, they have defiled by casting down the dwelling place of Thy Name to the ground" (Ps. 74:7). Many people suppose that God is pleased when impenitent sinners attend Church on Sunday, thinking, "At least they went to Church." If they only knew that it is at this point - when sinners "faithfully attend Church", God is all the more infuriated!

The Spiritual Activity of the Once-Born and Backslidden

"And *the tongue is a fire*, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue among our members, that it **defileth the whole body**, and *setteth on fire the course of nature*; and it is *set on fire of hell*." – James 3:6

Unclean people think to worship God while they stand a-blaze in the fiery passions of hell! Aye, they belong to the congregation below and not the congregation which is from above. Unclean persons think to gain favor from God by a faithful attendance to "Church" on Sunday, but they, disfavoring God, stand among God's holy people in the repulsive condition which James named, **a defiled body**. Unwittingly, because such men are ignorant of *The Clean & Unclean Laws in New Testament Reality*, they render the assembly of God unacceptable by their defiled bodies ("*I will receive you*" - 2Cor.6:17). Unwittingly, they set on fire the course of nature all around them! Do you think that God is pleased with lip-service and mouth-worship, while the heart is utterly unclean before the Lord? Speaking on this wise, the Lord said,

"Forasmuch as this people draw near Me with **their mouth**, and with **their lips** do honour Me, but have removed **their heart** far from Me, and their fear toward Me is taught by the precept of men: Therefore, behold, I will proceed to do a marvelous work among this people, even a marvelous work and a wonder: for the wisdom of their wise men shall perish, and the understanding of their prudent men shall be hid." – Isaiah 29:13-14

The threat has come to pass already! Unclean men gather in Churches they call "Sanctuaries" expecting to be received by The Sanctified One – God Almighty – all the while they are in utter contradiction to the rules of acceptance laid forth by the Lord: *The Clean & Unclean Laws in New Testament Reality*. It is the precept of men that has taught them so to do, for their wisdom has perished and their understanding is hidden. Most of these Sunday-worshippers live 7-day-a-week lifestyles of hell-fire defilement, and they want to spend an hour with the God of heaven who dwells in unapproachable holiness!?

Cleanliness in the Totality of our Human Faculties

The Lord Jesus said,

"Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or else make the tree **corrupt**, and his fruit **corrupt**: for the tree is known by his fruit. O generation of vipers, how can ye, *being evil, speak good things?* for *out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh*. A good man out of the good treasure of the heart bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treasure bringeth forth evil things. But I say unto you, That every idle word that men shall speak, they shall give account thereof in the Day of Judgment. For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned." – Matthew 12:33-37

Do you see the reason behind God's burden, my reader? Do you see why God is burdened about our WORDS? **True** religion, **clean** religion, **pure** religion, and **undefiled** religion affects the words of the individual (James 1:26-27)! "For by thy words thou shalt be justified, and by thy words thou shalt be condemned" (Matt. 12:37), Christ said. He was pointing to the evidence of true religion: 7-day-a-week worshippers of God! A wise man once said, "What do you talk about all day long... that is your 'god'?" For, indeed, "out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh!" Therefore all men who have clean hearts speak clean words! Where Christ dwells Christ will be heard (Eph. 3:17)! And all men whose hearts have become the Temple of God ("*ye are the Temple of God*"-1 Cor. 3:17), even they, exclusively, are welcome in the New Testament assembly which is, collectively speaking, the arena which becomes the New Testament Temple of God ("*there am I in the midst of them*"-Matt.18:20). The instrument of the mouth is the tongue, and the tongue speaks forth that which comes from the heart, and those things which proceed out of the mouth do, as James said, "**defileth** the whole body", or as Christ said, justify the whole man (Matt. 12:37)! Is this in your New Testament vocabulary, brethren? We must study to shew ourselves approved unto God and **undefiled** in worship! If the tongue can **defile** us then we must do as James commanded, "**purify** [our] hearts" (James 4:8)! Not just our hearts but everything: the *heart, mind, conscience, soul, and body* (1 Thess. 5:23-24)! We need cleanliness in the totality of our human faculties! If we have doctrines of truth which are teaching ways of New Testament purity, holiness, and cleanliness, the washing and cleansing power of God results in a "**pure** heart" (1 Tim. 1:5, 2 Tim. 2:22, Matt. 5:8, 1 Peter 1:22), a "**pure** mind" (2 Peter 3:1), a "**pure** conscience" (1 Tim. 3:9, 2 Tim. 1:3), a "**purified** soul" (1 Peter 1:22), and all this, therefore, is "**pure and undefiled religion**" (James 1:27) in the sight of God! Purity is expressed in all actions of the person: "In *word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith*", because "*our conversation is in heaven*" from whence cometh our *purity and holiness* (1 Tim. 4:12, Php. 4:20).

"But whoso looketh into the perfect Law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed. If any man among you seem to be religious, and bridleth not his tongue, but deceiveth his own heart, this man's religion is vain. **Pure religion and undefiled** before God and the Father is this, To visit the fatherless and widows in their affliction, and to keep himself **unspotted from the world.**" – James 1:25-27

"And *the tongue is a fire*, a world of iniquity: so is the tongue among our members, that it **defileth the whole body**, and *setteth on fire the course of nature*; and it is *set on fire of hell.*" – James 3:6

Does "**pure and undefiled religion** in the sight of God" have nothing to do with *the tongue*? Or is *the tongue* the very means by which men are **spotted, defiled**, and made **unholy** (Jas. 3:6)? The tongue IS the member that is able to spew-out the filthiness of the world to the defilement of our bodies! The tongue is able to let loose rivers of poison from the members of our fallen bodies (Col. 3:5)! Paul called the human body, "the body of this **death**" (Rom. 7:31). In another place the body is called, "**corruption**" (1 Cor. 15:50). Therefore the terms of present-progressive salvation were: "walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfill *the lust of the flesh*" (Gal. 5:16). Walking after the flesh is a walking in the **uncleanness** and **corruption** of spiritual death: the natural man (Rom. 8:6, 1 Cor. 2:14, 1 Cor. 3:3). Salvation is walking as Christ and in Christ (Php. 1:19, Col. 2:6), as one that is **alive** from the **dead** through Him (Rom. 6:13)! Considering salvation and damnation in these terms, the scripture concludes: one who is "beset" (Heb. 12:2) by the flesh will forfeit a "good conscience" (1 Tim. 1:5, 19, 1 Peter 3:21) for an "evil conscience" (Heb. 10:22), a "**sprinkled**" clean "conscience" and heart (Heb. 10:22) to a mind and conscience that "is **defiled**" (Titus 1:15-16), a "**pure** conscience" to another "rule" with them who "mind earthly things" (1 Tim. 3:9, Php. 4:16, 19), a pure mind to become one of the "men of **corrupt** minds, reprobate concerning the faith" (2 Tim. 3:8). A pure mind exists in a man that is affectionate toward things in heaven, as Colossians commanded: "Set your affection on things above not on things on earth" (Col. 3:2). Spiritual vision coming from this holy place "is **pure**, enlightening the eyes" (Prov. 16:6, Psalm 19:9).

"Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of Him **in peace, without spot, and blameless**" (2 Peter 3:14).

"But as He which hath called you is HOLY, so be ye HOLY in **all manner of conversation**" (1 Peter 1:15).

“Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things are honest, whatsoever things are just, whatsoever things are **pure**, whatsoever things are lovely, whatsoever things are of good report; if there be any virtue, and if there be any praise, **think on these things.**” - Php. 4:8

“And **whatsoever ye do** in word or deed, **do all** in the name of the Lord Jesus, giving thanks to God and the Father by Him” (Col. 3:17).

You see, my brethren, we must be “fashioned” (1 Peter 1:14) after the “bowels” (Col. 3:12) of Christ Jesus in our inner man, for “we have the mind of Christ” (1 Cor. 2:16). “But as He which hath called you is HOLY, so be ye HOLY in all manner of conversation” (1 Peter 1:15). Is not the greatest benefit of our faith “that Christ may dwell in [our] hearts” (Eph. 3:17)? Yes, it is! And this experience does clean the totality of our human faculties so that they are operated by the indwelling and Living Christ! So that, according to Colossians 3:17, “whatsoever we do in word or deed”, it is all in the Name/Person of the Lord Jesus Christ! Is not all our hope and glory “Christ in you” (Col. 1:27), as Paul said? Thus our thought-life must be “pure” (Php. 4:8). Oh, my reader! Give diligence and heed the solemn duty to walk in the outworking of grace and pure religion!

“Let no **corrupt communication** *proceed out of your mouth*, but that which is *good* to the use of *edifying*, that it may minister *grace* unto the hearers. And **grieve not the Holy Spirit of God**, whereby ye are sealed unto the day of redemption.” – Ephesians 4:29-30

It was written, “how oft did they provoke Him in the wilderness, and grieve Him in the desert” (Psalm 78:40)! Paul called it “corrupt communication”, in Ephesians 4:29. This is because **filthiness** or **corruption** is that which **defiles** (Jude 8). Sinning by word or speech is, therefore, a “**filthy communication** out of [the] mouth” (Col. 3:8). All kinds of sinful talking is “**filthiness**” and “**foolish** talking” (Eph. 5:4), according to scripture. This is anything carnal that does not give edification and grace (Eph. 4:29), is called in Eph. 4:29 as “**corrupt communication**”. James said, “Wherefore lay apart all **filthiness** and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted **word**, which is able to save your souls” (Jas. 1:21). Laying apart all filthiness in the book of James means, to plug-up and mortify all sinful emotions which motivate sinful speeches (see James 1:19-20). A bridled tongue is one that is not given to the “superfluity of naughtiness”, which means: *the overflowing of wickedness*. Filthiness is wickedness, wickedness is uncleanness, uncleanness defiles, therefore a bridled tongue is a religion of **power** (Rom. 1:16) that keeps one “**pure and undefiled**”, and, therefore, “**unspotted** from the world” (James 1:26-27). The gospel is to be obeyed (2 Thess. 1:8), and when it is obeyed by faith (1 Peter 1:17) it makes men obey by word and deed (Rom. 6:16); thus, “We are kept by the power of God through faith” (1 Peter 1:5). Whosoever is kept by the power of God is also kept from **the defiling spots of uncleanness**, this is for sure! If men will be damned it is because they followed in the footsteps of those men who grieved God (Heb. 3:17), who erred in their heart (Ps. 95:10), who spoke sentences of *murmur* and *disputing* (1 Cor. 10:10, Php 2:14-15), which is, in other words: “**corrupt communication**” (Eph. 4:29)! Let it not be said of us, “But they rebelled, and *vexed His Holy Spirit*: therefore He was turned to be their enemy, and He fought against them” (Isa. 63:10).

Oh that we would not be like the damned, to whom it was spoke: “a people that do err in their heart, and they have not known My ways” (Ps. 95:10)! God is grieved at once single sentence of uncleanness proceeding out of the mouth so much so that men died for it (1 Cor. 10:10)! It is a “superfluity of naughtiness”, an overflow of carnal imagination made possible by a faithless heart which refuses to “obey His voice” (Heb. 3-4) or “receive with meekness the engrafted word” (James 1:21). My reader, are you allowing Christ to save you “with the washing of water by the word” (Eph. 5:26)? If we receive with meekness the engrafted word we will not experience the overflowing of wickedness, we will not grieve God, and thus He will not destroy us for the error of our hearts (Ps. 95:10) – the heart will remain **clean**. “Ye therefore, beloved, seeing ye know these things before, beware lest ye also, being led away with the error of the wicked, fall from your own steadfastness” (2 Peter 3:17). Words do weary God (Mal. 2:20), my reader, especially the thought-life or verbalized-expressions which come from a heart of faithlessness and fearlessness (Deut. 7:17), an “unmindful” forgetting that God is a holy and terrible One (Deut 32:18-20). Beware lest we also undergo what happened to them, of whom it was said, “they are a very froward generation, children in whom is no faith” (Deut. 32:20). And again, “Of the Rock that begat thee thou art unmindful, and hast forgotten God that formed thee. And when the LORD saw it, He

abhorred them, because of the provoking of his sons, and of his daughters. And he said, I will hide my face from them, I will see what their end shall be: for they are a very forward generation, children in whom is no faith” (Deut 32:18-20). Evidently, it was no small thing to weary and grieve God (Isaiah 7:13, 63:10).

The Lawful Terms Which Communicate the Operation of NT Redemption

*The shadows of Old Testament Law have gloriously faded away,
The Son of God hath risen like the brightness of noon day.
Every shadow which typologically depicted any act of saving grace,
Is gloriously fulfilled by Jesus Christ in a Heavenly Place!*

Even though the New Testament is a “Better Covenant” with “Better Promises”, and even though the NT is inexplicably the long awaited dawn of “reformation” (Heb. 8:6), let us understand the terms: the dawn of salvation is still described in the ceremonial term -- “cleansing” (Acts 10:15, Titus 2:5-7, 1 Pet. 1:18-19, Heb. 7:26-27)! The dawn of salvation in Jesus Christ is still described in the ceremonial terms consistent with *The Clean & Unclean Laws* in their New Testament Reality! My reader this should give us some p-a-u-s-e.

Do we, the Gentile Church, think to understand the glorious work of salvation in Jesus Christ while remaining estranged from the ceremonial and Jewish language used by the inspired writers of the New Testament?

Without being enriched by the word-usage, language, and meaning of the Law, the under-privileged and poor Gentiles (who for past ages were “*aliens from the commonwealth of Israel*”-Eph.2:12) will be guided by the bias of their ideologies and life-experiences without even knowing it. Just because a text appears to be “such and such”, relativistic misinterpretations reign! That which was meant to be clear and objective has turned unintelligible and relative for the most part. My reader, did you know that the Old Testament existed so that we might *understand* the New Testament?

God invested in centuries of work to explain and exemplify what He *thinks, feels, and does* in relationship to **unclean things**, especially in one of the nine places or persons which were The Church, typologically and historically speaking. These relationships (being long established) explain and exemplify how we are to understand their New Testament parallel – how God does, likewise, as the OT examples, *think, feel, and act* in the New Testament situations! The Old Testament passed away because it lacked eternality and sufficiency, specifically because its ceremonies were *earthly* instead of *heavenly* (for the earthliness and carnality of the OT see Heb. 9:9, 10:1-4, 22, Gal. 4:3, 9, Col. 2:20), but these *shadows* do declare and explain the attributes of NT *realities* (which are heavenly and eternal), *realities* which are unfathomable without their *shadows* (see Col. 2:9-17, Heb. 8:1-6, 9:23-24).

Scriptural truth is to be ingested that we might live and move by the energies of it (“*the word of God is quick and powerful*”-Heb.4:12)! Therefore just as the Old Testament saints learned that **unclean things** were AMBOMINABLE to God (which means: hateful, unbearable, disgusting, and infuriating), and just as Old Testament saints learned what happened when they “TOUCHED” these “*things*”, even so, we, in the Gentile Church Age, need to live towards God according to the paralleling New Testament realities applied by the inspired writers! The Old Testament saints knew that God abhorred that which was “unclean” about a “thing”, and if the abhorrent “thing” was touched by the Israelites the God-forsaken qualities of the “thing” became their identity before God (they became “unclean” like the “unclean thing”)! While understanding that this is how God *thinks, feels, and acts* toward “**unclean things**” – toward **filthiness, pollution, corruption, defilement, spots, and blemishes** – the foregone sections which defined these terms in New Testament reality acquire meaning and life in our personal walk with God. With these truths properly realized by Christians, our behavior toward unclean things will resemble the behavior of Old Testament saints depicted in the biblical and historical situations which serve as our examples. “All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for

reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: That the man of God may be perfect, thoroughly furnished unto all good works” (2 Tim. 3:16).

Having just surveyed the terms of *uncleanness* in New Testament reality and, consequentially, being sobered thereby, we must also discover the terms of *cleanness* in New Testament reality. Having comprehended how God *thinks, feels, and acts* towards “**unclean things**”, we must, moreover, comprehend how God *thinks, feels, and acts* toward “**clean things**”! Just as our souls have been animated to *feel the uncleanness* of the “**unclean thing**”, and, thus, we have acquired a godly hatred for the God-abominated entity, even so, also, we must be animated to *feel the cleanness* of the “**clean thing**”, and, thus, acquire a godly admiration for the God-adored entity. Think of it, my reader! When unclean things are present God refuses to draw near! By the sheer magnitude of God’s displeasure, hatred, and holy disgust He refuses to draw near! But, on the contrary, what does God *think, feel, and act* when and if the place and persons before Him are biblically **separated, un-TOUCHED by uncleanness**, and **perfected in holiness**!? God’s *displeasure* would turn to *delight*, His *hatred* to *happiness*, and His *disgust* to *devoutness*! God said, “I will receive you”! Antithetical to the hatred whereby God forsook men and refused to draw near, God will embrace us and hush every disconsolate fear! If we are biblically *separated* we are, from God, *inseparable*! And if we have come into agreement with what God calls *clean* (via repentance and faith, personally and corporately), God will presently and continuously *cleanse us* as a consequence of His abiding presence *among us* and *within us*, hallelujah!

Henceforth, my reader, we should be filled with holy amazement every time the inspired writers of the New Testament communicate the operation of redemption for Christians as a **cleansing, hallowing, purifying, purging, sanctifying, washing, and sprinkling**! Being thus *identified* by the infallible and inerrant word of God, it is, to wit, we might come to a holy realization of our *identity* in Christ! It is, to wit, we might approach God in the confidence that we are: “**the cleansed**”, “**the hallowed**”, “**the purified**”, “**the purged**”, “**the sanctified**”, “**the washed**”, and “**the sprinkled**” (“*Blessed is the nation whose God is the LORD; and the people whom He hath chosen for His own inheritance*”-Ps. 33:12)! It is, to wit, we might approach God with the feeling that we are welcomed and invited, as objects of His delight and children of His happiness, to whom God has pledged Himself in terms of endearment, saying, “I will receive you, and will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be My sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty” (2 Cor. 6:17-18)! One might be inclined to emphasize The Doctrine of Separation to convey all that mankind must be set-apart-from, but God does furthermore emphasize the blessings and benefits which mankind can be set-apart-unto!

God’s Abiding Presence: “For wherein shall it be known here that I and Thy people have found grace in Thy sight? Is it not in that **Thou goest with us**? So shall we be **separated**, I and Thy people, from all the people that are upon the face of the earth.” – Exodus 33:16

God’s Abiding Presence via The Tabernacle: “Thus shall ye **separate** the children of Israel from their uncleanness; that they die not in their uncleanness, when they defile **My Tabernacle** that is **among them**.” – Lev. 15:31

Every Israelite Becoming God’s Prized Possession: “I am the LORD your God, which have **separated** you from other people...I have **separated** from you...And ye shall **be holy UNTO ME**; for I the LORD am holy, and have **severed** you from other people, **THAT YE SHOULD BE MINE**.” – Lev. 20:22-27

Every Nazarite Becoming God’s Prized Possession: “...when either man or woman shall **separate themselves** to vow a vow of a Nazarite, **to separate themselves UNTO THE LORD**” – Num. 6:2

Every Levite Becoming God’s Prized Possession: “Thus shalt thou **separate** the Levites from among the children of Israel: and the Levites **SHALL BE MINE**.” – Num. 8:14

Every Priest Becoming God’s Top-Tier Prized Possession: “And this is the thing that thou shalt do unto them **to hallow them, TO MINISTER UNTO ME** in the Priest’s Office: ...thou shalt **consecrate** Aaron and his sons.” - Ex. 29:1, 9

By way of *cleansing, hallowing, purifying, purging, sanctifying, washing,* and *sprinkling*, **separation** is salvation in New Testament reality (existing in three progressive stages: *initial, present-progressive,* and *final*)! This salvation is a sanctification via man-to-God unification and cohabitation, as it is written. This means that when mankind is **separated** --- it is so that, God said, “**YE SHOULD BE MINE**” (Lev. 20:26)! God said, “ye shall be **holy UNTO ME**; for I the LORD am **holy**, and have **severed** you from other people, **THAT YE SHOULD BE MINE**” (Lev. 20:26). Whether the scripture is speaking of Israel (Lev. 20:22-27, Lev. 15:31), the Nazarites (Num. 6:2), the Levites (Num. 8:14), or the Priests (Ex. 29:1, 9), **the principle motivation for separation** is the same – the **separated** individual is a beneficiary of God’s Presence for Divine purposes! In and through these biblical and historical events we, the Gentile Church Age, are enabled to understand the significance of salvation through Jesus Christ, The Priest after the order of Melchisedec.

In what shadow-to-reality are Christians set-apart-unto GOD?

The Tabernacle/Temple: “And thou shalt take **the anointing oil**, and **anoint The Tabernacle**, and **all that is therein**, and shalt **hallow it**, and **all the vessels** thereof: and **it shall be holy**. And thou shalt **anoint the altar** of the burnt offering, and **all his vessels**, and **sanctify** the altar: and it shall be an altar **most holy**. And thou shalt **anoint the laver** and his foot, and **sanctify it**. And thou shalt bring Aaron and his sons unto the door of the tabernacle of the congregation, and **wash them with water**. And thou shalt put upon Aaron **the holy garments**, and **anoint him**, and **sanctify him; that he may minister unto Me in the Priest's office**. And thou shalt bring his sons, and **clothe them with coats**: And thou shalt **anoint them**, as thou didst anoint their father, **that they may minister unto Me in the Priest's office**: for their **anointing** shall surely be an everlasting Priesthood throughout their generations. Thus did Moses: according to all that the LORD commanded him, so did he.” – Exodus 40:9-16

A Time of Restoration: “And said unto them, Hear me, ye Levites, sanctify now yourselves, and **sanctify The House of the LORD** God of your fathers, and **carry forth the filthiness out of The Holy Place**. For our fathers have trespassed, and done that which was evil in the eyes of the LORD our God, and have forsaken Him, and **have turned away their faces from The Habitation of the LORD**, and **turned their backs**. Also they have *shut up the doors* of the porch, and *put out the lamps*, and *have not burned incense nor offered burnt offerings* in the holy place unto the God of Israel. Wherefore the WRATH of the LORD was upon Judah and Jerusalem, and he hath delivered them to trouble, to astonishment, and to hissing, as ye see with your eyes. For, lo, our fathers have fallen by the sword, and our sons and our daughters and our wives are in captivity for this. Now it is in mine heart to make a Covenant with the LORD God of Israel, **THAT HIS FIERCE WRATH MAY TURN AWAY FROM US.**” – 2 Chronicles 29:5-10

When men are set-apart-unto God via regeneration in New Testament salvation, it is likened to how The Temple of old was set-apart-unto God (1 Cor. 3:16-17, 6:15-20, Heb. 3:6, 1 Pet. 2:4-6, Eph. 2:19-22). The Tabernacle and all the objects within were **hallowed** by the **anointing oil** to wit that it would become *a desirable haven* in which God would reside. Even so Christians, individually speaking, have become set-apart-unto God as a “The Temple of the Holy Ghost” (1 Cor. 6:15-20): a place desirable to God, and a material housing used to adorn God’s presence on earth. Just as the Levites were purchased by the blood of the firstborn of Egypt (Num. 8:14-18), the bodies of individual Christians were “bought with a price” to become the property in which God’s resides in NT reality like the OT shadow, The Temple (1 Cor. 6:15-20). Furthermore all Christians (collectively speaking via Christian assemblies), gather together to become “a spiritual House” (1 Pet. 2:4-6) and a “Holy Temple” (Eph. 2:21) for the Lord. This means that when Christians come together in a Christian assembly, the gathering exists in *reality* like as the *shadow* exemplified in “The Temple of the Living God” via the Old Testament (2 Cor. 6:16-17) --- a gathering which was built for and existing so that, shockingly, the presence of GOD’s GLORY would dwell in the midst of it (“*the glory of the LORD filled the Tabernacle*”-Ex.40:34, “*the glory of the LORD had filled the House of the LORD*”-1Kings8:10-11)! Each individual Christian is called to assemble together with one another in spiritual unity, with every member of the body of Christ joined together like the stones of The Temple were “builded together for an Habitation of God” in the Old Testament (Eph. 2:19-22), a place where God’s glory dwelt. The plurality of God’s people is in view here, in Ephesians 2:19-22 and 1 Peter 2:4-6. ALL the saints, together, “are built up a spiritual House” in which the Spirit of God delights to take full possession and habitation within (1 Pet. 2:5-6), as long as they, like Hezekiah, “carry forth” all “filthiness” out of **The Holy Place** (i.e. the place at which

the NT saints have gathered together; see 2 Chron. 29:5-10, 2 Cor. 6:16-7:1). When and if the assembly of NT saints do, as the scripture commands, “cleanse [themselves] from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit”, the earthly location at which we have gathered as a congregation does then become The Holy Place of the New Testament, The House of the LORD, a place in which the glory of the LORD does appear and abide!

As God said to Abraham, “Get thee out” (Gen. 12:1), as Moses said to the remnant of The Church of his day as it suffered an insurrection of apostasy, “Get you up” and “Depart” (Num. 16:24, 26), and as Isaiah called to The Church of his day, saying, “Depart ye, depart ye, go ye out from thence, touch no unclean thing; go out of the midst of her; be ye clean, that bear the vessels of the LORD” (Isaiah 52:11), even so now, in the 21st century, the clarion call goes forth again, saying, “Come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing”... but will we understand the promise of God, “I will receive you” (2 Cor. 6:17)!? Will we seek holiness, separateness, and cleanliness for the purpose that we would become, like the OT Tabernacle and Temple, an habitation of the glory of the LORD (Eph. 2:19-22)? For this supreme end we have been set-apart-unto God, but will we reckon with the conditions laid upon us by scripture? Will we understand that the Old Testament Temple, its belongings, and its personage had to be HOLY, as Isaiah was careful to articulate the holy calling in correlation to a specified people, “ye...that bear the vessels of the LORD” (Isa. 52:11)? Will we finally realize that the OT Temple existed so that we might *understand* the NT Temple (“*For where two or three are gathered together in My Name, there am I in the midst of them.*”-Matt.18:20)? In the New Testament, not only are Christians identified as the very stones of the Temple and its belongings, but we are the Priesthood as well! Therefore we, as stones (Eph. 2:19-22), as Lampstands (Matt. 5:14, Lk. 12:35, Rev. 1:20, 2:1, 11:4), and as Priests (1 Pet. 2:9, Rev. 1:6) MUST BE CLEAN & HOLY! To what end?

All this is to the end that we might experience the full volume of salvation as it was promised to us in the Covenant Agreement through Jesus Christ (“*the glory which Thou gavest Me I have given them*”-John17:22). Christians, like the OT Priests, the Levites, and the Temple, have been set-apart unto God for the Divine Purposes of His glory (“*I in them, Thou in Me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that Thou hast sent Me, and hast loved them, as Thou hast loved Me*”-John17:23)! But, alas, if there is **uncleanness** present this purpose is frustrated! Think of it, my reader, what if the people of Israel didn’t fulfill what God commanded of Moses, saying, “**Sanctify** them...let them **wash** their clothes” (Ex. 19:10), would the people have been *acceptable* unto God nevertheless? Nay. The people would have been rendered *unacceptable* and the Old Covenant wouldn’t have commenced! Furthermore, what if the people were not **sanctified** via the **blood-sprinkling** of sacrifices (see Ex. 24:6-8), would the people have been *acceptable* to God nevertheless? What if the High Priest was not qualified by **water-washing** in the holy place (Lev. 16:24), would the offering on the Day of Atonement have been *acceptable* nevertheless? What if the Priesthood were not **water-washed** to perform the daily sacrifices in the Tabernacle/Temple (Ex. 30:17-21), would they have been *accepted* nevertheless? What if the Tabernacle/Temple itself had no **Washing Laver** between the tent of the congregation and the altar (Ex. 40:1-8), what would have happened to the vocation of the Priesthood which was intended to perform the daily ministration of ceremonial atonement before God Almighty? What if the Priesthood was not **hallowed**, **anointed**, **washed**, and **sprinkled** with **oil**, **water**, and **blood**, and what if they were not arrayed in **holy garments** as the scripture prescribed (Ex. 29:1-21, 40:9-16), would the wrath of God against sin still have been legally *directed away* from the Israelites and, rather, *unto* the sin-burdened bodies of dead animals which were laid upon the Priestly altars? The Priesthood had garments to wear which were – “*for glory and for beauty*” – and God said, “**anoint them**”, “**consecrate them**”, “and **sanctify them**”, “that they may minister *unto* Me in the Priest’s office” (Ex. 28:39-43), but what if this consecration and sanctification had never happened? What if, in this very specific way, the Priesthood had not *kept* their garments glorious and beautiful, perfected in holiness? Furthermore, also, what if the Levites (who were the special property of God above the average Israelite) did not obey the command, “**separate** the Levites” (Num. 8:14)? The Lord commanded, “**cleanse** them”, “**sprinkle the water of purifying** upon them”, “**wash** their clothes”, “and so make themselves **clean**” (Num. 8:6-7), but if the Levites were not “**purified**” in this way (Num. 8:21)... would they have been *acceptable* to the LORD nevertheless?

Now in the New Covenant (“*the time of reformation*”-Heb.9:10) we have been liberated from the requirements of an earthly sanctification via water-washings, oil-anointings, and material garments--this is true, but we are NOT liberated from the

requirements of a heavenly sanctification via *the reality* of Old Testament shadows which are, nevertheless, **water-washings**, **oil-anointings**, **blood-sprinklings**, and **garment-beautifications**! This is because our liberation from the Earthly Ceremonial Law came by a FULFILLMENT of the Heavenly Ceremonial Law, thus did Jesus of Nazareth arise from the grave and ascend into Heaven as The Great High Priest (Heb. 4:14-15)! Because of this, redeemed men of the Gentile Church Age are “**washed**”, “**sanctified**”, and “**justified** in the Name of the Lord Jesus” (1 Cor. 6:11). My reader, they must be! Gentile Christians have become “a royal Priesthood” in the sight of God (1 Pet. 2:9), therefore if they are not “**washed**”, “**sanctified**”, and “**justified**”, their Priesthood would be delinquent and their wrath-absorbing ministerial activity towards God would be rejected, just as it would have been in the parallel situations of the Old Testament. You see, my reader, the redeemed men of the New Testament have been **water-washed** (“*the washing of regeneration*”-Tit.3:5), **oil-anointed** (“*the anointing*”-1Jn.2:27), **blood-sprinkled** (“*the blood of sprinkling*”-Heb.12:24, “*the sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ*”-1Pet.1:2), and **Priestly-garment-adorned** (“*white raiment*”-Rev.3:18, “*beautiful garments*”-Isa.52:1, “*white robes*”-Rev.7:13-14, “*fine linen*”-Rev.19:8,14); and, furthermore, just as **the stones** and **materials** of the Tabernacle/Temple needed to be likewise **sanctified** and of a certain grade of dignity, even so saints must be (see 1 Cor. 6:15-20, 1 Cor. 3:10-17, Heb. 3:6, 1 Pet. 2:4-6, Eph. 2:19-22)! Therefore as Priests (“*a royal Priesthood*”-1Pet.2:9) our ministerial activity is, namely, “*the sacrifice of praise to God*” (Heb. 13:15-16), hallelujah!

My reader, pause and consider the significance of the scripture citations laid forth in the former paragraph. The experience of salvation in the New Testament is communicated to us, the Gentiles, as **water-washing**, **oil-anointing**, **blood-sprinkling**, **Priestly-garment-adornment**, and **Temple-stone-dignity** because the Old Covenant was an Earthly Infrastructure of Salvation made after the similitude of a Heavenly Infrastructure of Salvation. Therefore the Missionary Circuit of Jesus Christ from heaven-to-earth and earth-to-heaven was for the accomplishment of sacrificial atonement conducted by a High Priest (Heb. 7:26-28) to the end that something would happen that had never happened before – human blood would be sprinkled upon the infrastructure of salvation in the heavenly realm of immaterial and eternal things (Heb. 9:16-24). This blood merited the cause of humanity’s resurrection from death, their ascension from earth-to-heaven, and their co-glorification with Jesus Christ in the **Offices** which belong to Him (“*Unto Him that loved us, and washed us from our sins in His own blood, and hath made us Kings and Priests unto God and His Father; to Him be glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.*”-Rev.1:5-6, Rom.8:17), namely because this blood was from a substitutionary sacrifice. A substitutionary sacrifice--my reader, have you comprehended its significance!? Jesus Christ was a sin-burdened human body for the purpose of human redemption (Heb. 9:11-15) in a ceremony which began on earth to be conjoined in the operation of redemption which existed in heaven – thus we see the commencement of the New Covenant (“*Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the Apostle and High Priest of our profession, Christ Jesus; Who was faithful to Him that appointed Him, as also Moses was faithful in all his House.*”-Heb.3:1-2)! This is a wondrous redemption, which now is, and it is altogether unintelligible without the foregone ages of tutoring which God mercifully provided in the Testament which is now called “Old”. Even so now, because of the “New”, the Earthly Infrastructure of Salvation in all its glory is accounted as mere *shadows* in comparison to the glory that surpasses it! “For even that which was made glorious had no glory in this respect, by reason of the glory that excelleth. For if that which was done away was glorious, much more that which remaineth is glorious” (2 Cor. 3:10-11)!

All this being said, let us understand the language of human redemption! How that, upon conversion, redeemed mankind is instantaneously **water-washed** (“*the washing of regeneration*”-Tit.3:5), **oil-anointed** (“*the anointing*”-1Jn.2:27), **blood-sprinkled** (“*the blood of sprinkling*”-Heb.12:24, “*the sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ*”-1Pet.1:2), **Priestly-garment-adorned** (“*white raiment*”-Rev.3:18, “*beautiful garments*”-Isa.52:1, “*white robes*”-Rev.7:13-14, “*fine linen*”-Rev.19:8,14), and **Temple-stone-dignified** (“*gold, silver, precious stones*” – 1 Cor. 3:10-17, 2 Tim. 2:20-21, Rev. 21:9-21, 1 Pet. 2:4-6, Eph. 2:19-22, 1 Cor. 6:15-20, Heb. 3:6) because of the indwelling of Jesus Christ within the soul of man (which is the accomplishment of imputed righteousness). This is true, gloriously true! But even though all of these *attributes of redemption/sanctification* are past-tense experiences accomplished at the instance of true conversion to Jesus Christ, they can be forfeited anytime thereafter. In the Old Testament, for example, even though the people of Israel were at one time **sanctified** according to the commandment of God (Ex. 19:10), they could become unsanctified at any time thereafter. Even though the people were **sanctified** via **blood-sprinkling** (Ex. 24:6-8), they could profane and forfeit that sanctification any time thereafter. Therefore like as the Old Testament Priesthood had to *presently* and *progressively*

maintain their **sanctification** of **water-washing** on a *daily basis* (Ex. 30:17-21), so must the New Testament Priesthood be presently and progressively **cleansed** and **washed** (1 Jn. 1:9, 2 Cor. 7:1, Heb. 10:22). Think of it, my reader. Just because the Old Testament Priesthood was **hallowed**, **anointed**, **washed**, and **sprinkled** with **oil**, **water**, and **blood**, and **adorned** with **holy garments** (Ex. 29:1-21, 40:9-16), they forfeited the attributes of their sanctification the day they TOUCHED THE UNCLEAN THING! Therefore the shadow-to-reality doctrines of holiness beg the New Testament Priesthood to understand that...

We, as Believers, have a **faith to keep** – Col. 1:23, Matt. 24:13, John 15:9-10, Acts 11:23, 14:22, Rom. 2:7, Heb. 3:6, 3:14, 4:14, 10:38, Rev. 2:10

We, as Priests, have **garments to keep in the beauties of holiness** – Christ's Righteousness: Matt. 17:2, Mk. 9:3, Lk. 24:4; A Standard of Acceptability: Rev. 7:13-14, 19:8, 14; The Need of Keeping One's Garments Holy: Rev. 3:4, 18, 16:15, Jude 1:23, Matt. 22:11-12, Eph. 5:25-27

We, as Priests, have daily **sacrifices to maintain before God** – An Individual & Personal Sacrifice: Rom. 12:1-2, Gal. 2:20, 5:24, Rom. 8:13, 1 Cor. 15:31; A Collective & Corporate Sacrifice: Rom. 15:15-19, 2 Cor. 6:17-18; Priestly & Ministerial Sacrifices: Heb. 13:15-16, 1 Pet. 2:5, Php. 4:18, Rev. 8:3-4

We, as Priests, have a blood-sprinkling and a water-washing to keep, whereby we might daily draw near to God in the New Testament Most Holy Place – In the New Testament Code of the Priesthood there is a **holy washing** and a **holy water** like as the OT type (Lev. 16:24, 26, Ex. 30:20-21, 40:12), and only this **washing** is for the NT holy place called, the “House of God” (see Heb. 10:19-25), which is namely, “the assembling of ourselves together” (Heb. 10:25, Matt. 18:20, Jn. 5:21)! So my reader, what about you? Are you “**washed with pure water**” so that you might “**draw near**” with assurance that your presence in the House of God will not defile it (Heb. 10:22, 1 Cor. 3:17)? No Hebrew Israelite would have “boldness”, or fearlessness, “to enter into the holiest” of the New Testament House of God without the **ceremonial preparations** which God has mercifully provided (Heb. 10:19-22). After being “**washed**” and “**sprinkled**” (Heb. 10:22, 1 Pet. 1:2), then they would have boldness to stand before God; because they were made ceremonially qualified they will not die (“*they shall wash with water, that they die not*”-Ex.30:20-21). Therefore, my reader, there is a NT “**washing**”, without which no man can become a part of the Spiritually-Organic House of God, and it is called “**the washing of regeneration**” (Titus 3:5)! Yes, and also, there is a ministration of Church officers (Eph. 4:11) who are gifted and employed in a Divinely-empowered task (Eph. 4:8, 12, 1 Cor. 3:5-10), a task which they, through the Lord, “labour” to accomplish (1 Cor. 3:9, 2 Cor. 11:2, Col. 1:28-29) what Christ died to accomplish (Col. 1:22, Jude 24), so that through Holy-Ghost preaching (2 Tim. 1:14), otherwise known as the “**washing of water by the word**” (Eph. 5:26, Col. 1:28-29, John 7:38, 15:3), the Bride would be beautified into an acceptable condition when she is finally presented to Christ (Eph. 4:26-27, 2 Cor. 11:2)! Such a great Bride must be prepared and made ready (Rev. 19:7)! She must be ceremonially, spiritually, and gloriously arrayed, even so. “Awake, awake; put on thy strength, O Zion; put on thy beautiful garments” (Isa. 52:1)! God help us to see these things! God help us to reorganize our lives to obtain them! God help us to come together as saints, for we NEED each other!

We, as “God’s People”, have a **holiness, a sanctification, a separation, a consecration to maintain** – Holiness & Sanctification via Initial Conversion: Eph. 1:13, Jude 1:1, 1 Pet. 1:2, 1 Jn. 2:20, 1 Cor. 1:30, 6:11, Heb. 3:1, 10:10, 10:14, Rom. 11:16, 2 Thess. 2:13; A Need to Keep-up Holiness, Separation, & Sanctification: Rom. 12:1-2 [via personal sacrifice], 1 Cor. 3:17 [individual and corporate via heavenly wisdom], 2 Cor. 13:14 [by communion with the Holy Ghost], Eph. 1:4 [by making your calling and election sure individually], Eph. 2:21 [in connection to Christ, the Corner Stone, both individually and corporately], Eph. 4:30 [by avoiding sin which grieves the Holy Ghost which means, a conversation without filthiness], Eph. 5:27 [individually and corporately so as to be an acceptable Bride], Col. 1:22 [by having present-continuous faith in the cross], Col. 3:12 [by putting on the bowels of the Lord Jesus, which are holy], Heb. 6:4-6 [by not falling away], 1 Pet. 1:15-16 [by being “as He is” in this

world], 1 Pet. 2:5 [by being a “holy Priesthood”], 1 Pet. 3:5 [by wives being subject to their husbands in the Lord], 2 Pet. 2:21 [by steadfastly keeping as in the beginning the holy commandments of God], 2 Pet. 3:11 [because of the earth burning up and the second coming of Christ], Jude 1:20 [by building up our faith], 1 Thess. 5:23-24 [by being sanctified in body, soul, and spirit unto the coming of the Lord], Rev. 20:6 [by keeping the faith], Rev. 22:11 [by being holy presently and progressively unto the end], Rom. 6:19-22 [by abounding in fruitfulness more and more unto the end], 2 Cor. 7:1 [by individual and corporate holiness unto perfection], Eph. 4:24 [by steadfastly abiding in the nature in which we have been created in Christ], 1 Thess. 3:13 [by abiding in the characterization of unblameable holiness], 1 Thess. 4:3-4 & 17 [by abstaining from fornication], 1 Tim. 2:15 [by a continuance of charity, faith, sobriety, and godly subjection to men in the Church], Titus 2:3 [by good behavior], Heb. 12:10 [by enduring chastisement], Heb. 12:14 [by keeping oneself from the defilement which springs from bitter roots], Rom. 15:16 [by individual and corporate sanctification via obedience to God in word and deed], 2 Tim. 2:21 [by living a separated life from unbelievers and backsliders with purity of heart], Heb. 10:29 [by living a lifestyle without willful sin because of a steadfast admiration of the blood of Jesus’s sanctification]

We, as “God’s People”, have a **purity to maintain – Purification via Initial Conversion:** Titus 2:14, Matt. 5:8, 1 Pet. 1:22; A Purity, Purification, & Pureness to Keep-up: 2 Cor. 6:6 [by following in the way of the apostles, whose ways are in Christ Jesus], James 4:8 [by a hatred of the world; by spiritual virginity & chastity via avoiding or being restored from spiritual adultery against God], Acts 20:26 [by preaching the full counsel of God in the scope of every individual Christian’s sphere of influenced allotted by God], 1 Tim. 1:5 [by charity], 1 Tim. 3:9 & 2 Tim. 1:3 [by conscience], 2 Tim. 2:22 [by heart], Heb. 10:22 [by pure water], James 1:27 [by pure religion], James 3:17 [by heavenly wisdom], 1 Pet. 1:22 [by the Spirit of God which enables fervent charity], 1 Jn. 3:3 [by being “as He is” in this world], Php. 4:8 [by thought, meditation, and a continual renewal of mind]

We, as “God’s People”, have a **cleansing to maintain – Cleansing via Initial Conversion:** Acts 10:15, 11:9; A Cleansing to Keep-up: 1 Jn. 1:7 [by abiding in the Light of God’s presence], 1 Jn. 1:9 [by confessing and forsaking all known sin committed against God whether past or present], Eph. 5:26 [by the washing of the word], 2 Cor. 7:1 [a cleansing which is individual and corporate for the perfection of holiness which results in Divine Reception], James 4:8 [by hands]

We, as “God’s People”, have a **purging to maintain – Purging via Initial Conversion:** Heb. 1:3, 9:14; A Purging to Keep-up: 2 Pet. 1:9 [by continually and steadfastly remembering the purging qualities of the blood of Jesus so as to abound in fruit presently and progressively], 2 Tim. 2:21 & 1 Cor. 5:7 [a purging which is both individual and corporate by keeping ourselves and The Church pure from unbelievers and backsliders]

We know that, in the Old Testament, once all the ceremonies of sanctification were accomplished in their completed forms, if they were not presently and progressively *kept-up* and *maintained*... the sanctification would have been lost. The one-time sanctification must be persevered *day by day*. “He that is holy, let him be holy still” (Rev. 22:11)! Otherwise like the old-time saints **defiled** the Temple of God, so will we! For this reason we are warned by the apostle Paul,

“Know ye not that **ye are The Temple of God**, and that **the Spirit of God dwelleth in you**? **If any man defile The Temple of God, him shall God destroy; for The Temple of God is holy, which Temple YE ARE.**” – 1 Cor. 3:16-17 [see c.f. Num. 17:12-13]

What an alarming threat by Almighty God, “him shall God destroy” (1 Cor. 3:17)! We need to understand the deplorableness of our sin in that **it defiles** the Temple of God itself, the holy place! And we need to understand the goodness of our salvation in Christ (past, present-progressive, and future) in that **it cleanses away** the wrath-kindling, love-frustrating, and glory-hindering abomination called sin! My reader, have you understood these two points in their New Testament realities?

According to salvation in Jesus Christ we have become “**the cleansed**”, “**the hallowed**”, “**the purified**”, “**the purged**”, “**the sanctified**”, “**the washed**”, “**the sprinkled**”, “**the anointed**”, “**the Priestly-garment-adorned**”, and “**the Temple-stone-dignified**”, and having been thus consecrated unto God for an instrument of His glory on earth, might I ask, where is the glory of God? The glory of the LORD has departed from the 21st century Gentile Church, my reader, but why? We have not kept the faith of God in Christ through grace – which is, namely, a keeping of **holiness**, **sanctification**, and **purification** via a *day by day* **cleansing**, **purging**, **washing**, **anointing**, **sprinkling**, and **holy-garment-adorning**, otherwise our Priestly engagement with God would be answered by fire from heaven and glory untold (“*Now when Solomon had made an end of praying, the fire came down from heaven, and consumed the burnt offering and the sacrifices; and the glory of the LORD filled the House.*”-2Chron.7:1)! Seeing that we have been appointed as sanctified and holy Priests before God Almighty in a New Testament sense (“*an holy Priesthood*”-1Pet.2:5), and, furthermore, seeing that we have failed to come before God Almighty in the terms of Divine Acceptance, our Priestly ministration has been rendered unacceptable. For this reason the glory of the LORD has departed from spiritual Israel, The Church, as it departed from the nation of Israel in the Old Testament (“*Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come.*”-1Cor.10:11). For this reason there is a frustration of the loving-kindness of God the Father via a Divine rejection according to the conditions laid forth in 2 Corinthians 6:14-7:1. We are not *keeping up* the heavenly ceremonies which are available in Christ, namely, the **cleansing**, the **water-washing**, the **blood-sprinkling**, and the **oil-anointing**, to name a few, therefore our sin - like **spiritual running issues**, like **spiritual leprosy**, like a **spiritual defilement of the dead** – is *defiling* the New Testament Temple of God with the same results which transpired of old! If you remember, my reader, the former section was devoted to discover the meaning of NT sin existing in the terminology of *The Clean & Unclean Laws* depicted in the Old Testament, and seeing that NT sin exists in terms of these *ceremonies defilements* shadow-to-reality, even so, also, NT salvation exists in terms of *ceremonial cleansing* via **water-washing**, **blood-sprinkling**, **oil-sprinkling**, and **oil-anointing**, to name a few, shadow-to-reality. The conclusion of the whole matter is this: If, in the New Testament, we are committing sins which aggravate God the Father’s love and repels the communion of His glory among us *like as* the aforementioned situations depicted in the Old Testament (historical situations of *ceremonial abominations* in The Church like “running issues”, “leprosy”, “defilements of the dead”, and “dung”), then we **MUST** find out the means of *ceremonial cleansing* in the heavenly realm like as the OT Israelites sought out *ceremonial cleansing* in the earthly realm!

NT Sin (i.e. Spiritual Running Issues) is Cleansed via Water-Washing: “Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, When any man hath **a running issue** out of his flesh, because of his issue he is **unclean**...And when he that hath an issue is **cleansed** of his issue; then he shall number to himself seven days for his **cleansing**, and **wash** his clothes, and **bathe** his flesh in **running water**, and shall be **clean**.” – Leviticus 15:2, 13

NT Sin (i.e. Spiritual Leprosy) is Cleansed via Blood-Sprinkling, Water-Washing, Oil-Sprinkling, & Oil-Anointing: “And the LORD spake unto Moses, saying, This shall be **the Law of the leper** in the day of his **cleansing**: He shall be brought unto the Priest: And the Priest shall go forth **out of the camp**; and the Priest shall look, and, behold, if the plague of leprosy be healed in the leper; Then shall the Priest command to take for him that is to be **cleansed** two birds alive and clean, and cedar wood, and scarlet, and hyssop: And the Priest shall command that one of the birds be killed in an earthen vessel over running water: As for the living bird, he shall take it, and the cedar wood, and the scarlet, and the hyssop, and shall dip them and the living bird in the blood of the bird that was killed over the running water: And he shall **sprinkle upon him** that is to be **cleansed** from the leprosy seven times, and shall **pronounce him clean**, and shall let the living bird loose into the open field. And he that is to be **cleansed** shall **wash** his clothes, and shave off all his hair, and **wash** himself in **water**, that he may be **clean**: and after that **he shall come into the camp**, and shall tarry abroad out of his tent seven days. But it shall be on the seventh day, that he shall shave all his hair off his head and his beard and his eyebrows, even all his hair he shall shave off: and he shall **wash** his clothes, also he shall **wash** his flesh in **water**, and he shall be **clean**. And on the eighth day he shall take two he lambs without blemish, and one ewe lamb of the first year without blemish, and three tenth deals of fine flour for a meat offering, mingled with oil, and one log of oil. And the Priest that **maketh him clean** shall present the man that is to be made **clean**, and those things, before the LORD, at the door of the tabernacle of the congregation: And the Priest shall take one he lamb, and offer him for a trespass offering, and the log of oil, and wave them for a wave

offering before the LORD: And he shall slay the lamb in the place where he shall kill the sin offering and the burnt offering, in the holy place: for as the sin offering is the Priest's, so is the trespass offering: it is most holy: And the Priest shall take some of the blood of the trespass offering, and the Priest shall put it upon the tip of the right ear of him that is to be **cleansed**, and upon the thumb of his right hand, and upon the great toe of his right foot: And the Priest shall take some of the log of **oil**, and pour it into the palm of his own left hand: And the Priest shall dip his right finger in the **oil** that is in his left hand, and shall **sprinkle of the oil** with his finger seven times before the LORD: And of the rest of the **oil** that is in his hand shall the Priest put upon the tip of the right ear of him that is to be **cleansed**, and upon the thumb of his right hand, and upon the great toe of his right foot, upon the blood of the trespass offering: And the remnant of the **oil** that is in the Priest's hand he shall **pour upon the head** of him that is to be **cleansed**: and the Priest shall make an atonement for him before the LORD. And the Priest shall offer the sin offering, and make an atonement for him that is to be **cleansed** from his **uncleanness**; and afterward he shall kill the burnt offering: And the Priest shall offer the burnt offering and the meat offering upon the altar: and the Priest shall make an atonement for him, and he shall be **clean**.” – Lev. 14:1-20

NT Sin (i.e. Spiritual Defilement of the Dead) is Purified via Sprinkling of the Water of Separation & Washing: “And the LORD spake unto Moses and unto Aaron, saying, This is **the ordinance of the Law** which the LORD hath commanded, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, that they bring thee a red heifer without spot, wherein is no blemish, and upon which never came yoke: And ye shall give her unto Eleazar the Priest, that he may bring her forth **without the camp**, and one shall slay her before his face: And Eleazar the Priest shall take of her blood with his finger, and **sprinkle of her blood** directly before The Tabernacle of the congregation seven times: And one shall burn the heifer in his sight; her skin, and her flesh, and her blood, with her dung, shall he burn: And the Priest shall take cedar wood, and hyssop, and scarlet, and cast it into the midst of the burning of the heifer. Then the Priest shall **wash** his clothes, and he shall **bathe** his flesh in **water**, and afterward he shall **come into the camp**, and the Priest shall be **unclean** until the even. And he that burneth her shall **wash** his clothes in **water**, and **bathe** his flesh in **water**, and shall be **unclean** until the even. And a man that is clean shall gather up the ashes of the heifer, and lay them up **without the camp** in a **clean place**, and it shall be kept for the congregation of the children of Israel for **a water of separation**: it is **a purification for sin**. And he that gathereth the ashes of the heifer shall **wash** his clothes, and be **unclean** until the even: and it shall be unto the children of Israel, and unto the stranger that sojourneth among them, for a statute for ever. He that TOUCHETH the **dead body** of any man shall be **unclean** seven days. He shall **purify** himself with it on the third day, and on the seventh day he shall be **clean**: but if he **purify** not himself the third day, then the seventh day he shall not be **clean**. Whosoever TOUCHETH the **dead body** of any man that is dead, and **purifieth not himself, defileth The Tabernacle of the LORD**; and **that soul shall be cut off from Israel**: because the **water of separation** was not **sprinkled upon him**, he shall be **unclean**; his **uncleanness is yet upon him**. This is the Law, when a man dieth in a tent: all that come into the tent, and all that is in the tent, shall be **unclean** seven days. And every open vessel, which hath no covering bound upon it, is **unclean**. And whosoever TOUCHETH **one that is slain** with a sword in the open fields, or a **dead body**, or a **bone** of a man, or a **grave**, shall be **unclean** seven days. And for an **unclean person** they shall take of the ashes of the burnt heifer of **purification for sin**, and running **water** shall be put thereto in a vessel: And a clean person shall take hyssop, and dip it in the **water**, and **sprinkle it** upon the tent, and upon all the vessels, and upon the persons that were there, and upon him that TOUCHED a **bone**, or **one slain**, or **one dead**, or a **grave**: And the clean person shall **sprinkle** upon the **unclean** on the third day, and on the seventh day: and on the seventh day he shall **purify** himself, and **wash** his clothes, and **bathe** himself in **water**, and shall be **clean** at even. But the man that shall be **unclean**, and shall not **purify** himself, **that soul shall be cut off from among the congregation**, because he hath defiled The Sanctuary of the LORD: **the water of separation** hath not been **sprinkled** upon him; he is **unclean**. And it shall be a perpetual statute unto them, that he that **sprinkleth the water of separation** shall **wash** his clothes; and he that TOUCHETH the **water of separation** shall be **unclean** until even. And whatsoever the **unclean person** TOUCHETH shall be **unclean**; and the soul that TOUCHETH it shall be **unclean** until even.” – Numbers 19:1-22

The Profitability of Sin Realized in its Spiritual Essence & Eradicated from the Life of Christians: “Dung” (Php. 3:1-9, Deut. 23:12-14): “Thou shalt have a place also **without the camp**, whither thou shalt **go forth** abroad: And thou shalt have a paddle upon thy weapon; and it shall be, when thou wilt ease thyself abroad, thou shalt dig therewith, and shalt turn back and **cover that** which cometh from thee: **For the LORD thy God WALKETH in the midst of thy camp, to deliver thee, and to give up thine enemies before thee; therefore shall thy camp be holy: that HE SEE no unclean thing in thee, and TURN AWAY FROM THEE**” (Deuteronomy 23:12-14).

Where is God’s glory (John 17:22), the fullness of the stature of Jesus Christ (Eph. 4:13, Jn. 17:22-23), the beautified Bride (Eph. 5:26-27)? Where is the fullness of the gifts (1 Cor. 1:4-9), the officers of The Church (Eph. 4:8-13)? Where are the weapons of righteousness for the armies of Israel (2 Cor. 10:1-6)? There is UNCLEANNES among us, dear saints! Uncleanness is hindering and disqualifying the wrath-absorbing activity which pertains to the New Testament Priesthood, therefore instead of the latter rain of God’s love pouring out upon us, The Church, revival tarries and wrath abides! The sins carefully detailed in the former section (sins of legal uncleanness in NT terms comparable to “running issues”, “leprosy”, “defilements of the dead”, & “dung”) are frustrating the out-pouring of the love of God the Father upon us, His sons and daughters (2 Cor. 6:16-7:1)! Aye, my reader, we are **defiling** the Temple of God (1 Cor. 3:16-17)!

We must realize the deplorableness of sin in its true essence, namely how it relates to God’s glory being repelled from the midst of God’s people, The Church. A God-absent Church means a God-absent world, my reader! Can we go another generation as a sick Church in a dying world!? We must, once and for all, comprehend the calling of God to “TOUCH NOT the unclean thing”, in its New Testament reality. We must, at last, relate to sin in the abominableness of its spiritual essence like the apostle Paul did (see Php. 3:1-9 in comparison to Duet.23:12-14), or else we will never walk in the glory of God through Christ like the apostle Paul exemplified (“*Christ shall be magnified in my body, whether by life, or by death*”-Php.1:20).

We have scores of Priests coming to assemble together in the NT House of God without washing, a crime which the OT Priesthood punished by death (Exodus 30:20-21)! In the New Testament, unconfessed sin is un-cleansed sin (1 Jn. 1:9). In the New Testament, certain degrees of unbelief is un-purged sin (2 Pet. 1:9). God calls our sin-loving and God-hating fallen nature “filthiness” (Ps. 14:3, 53:3, Rom.3:10), and shall we come before God Almighty with our garments spotted with filthiness? “ALL FILTHINESS”, it must be cleansed in the fear of God (2 Cor. 7:1)! With corrupted ways and words, sinners were not even permitted to abide upon God’s earth (“*for all flesh had corrupted his way upon the earth*”-Gen.6:12), and shall we, as “called-out ones”, enter into the House of God after having indulged in the forbidden lusts which are ceremonially abominable to God, called, “the corruption that is in the world through lust” (2 Pet. 1:4)!?

We have scores of Priests coming to assemble together in the NT House of God without their Priestly garments *kept-up* – with spots, blemishes, defilements, and filthiness – therefore because in such a condition we make our ministerial offerings to God (i.e. *the incense of prayer* and *the sacrifices of praise*), our prayers are not in one accord (Acts 1:14, 2:1, 46, 4:24, 5:12) in as much as we lack oneness with Christ who is our spiritual unity (Matt. 18:19, 1 Jn. 1:3, 5-7, Eph. 4:13, John 17:23, Col. 3:1-3), our prayers are not heard and countenanced by GOD with building-shaking and Spirit-outpouring power (Acts 4:31), and our praises are not going yonder to the end of the world with heathen-astonishing boundlessness (Isa. 24:14-16, Acts 16:25-26, 17:6, 19:18-20)!

We have scores of Christians who deign to call themselves the Bride of Christ, the glorious Church, who live lifestyles absent-minded from the glory of God in the fullness of the stature of Christ (Eph. 5:25-27, Eph. 4:4-13, John 17:20-26)!

We have scores of Christians who think their prayers are “in the Name of Jesus” simply because they uttered “in Jesus’ Name” at the end of every prayer, and yet, shockingly, their prayers are consciously oblivious to the *binding* and *loosing* powers which exist in the Name of Jesus Christ in Spirit and in truth (Matt. 18:18-20, John 14:10-14, 15:7-9, 16, 16:23-24)!

Many Churches seek sinners instead of God! Albeit The Church is not for sinners, no! The Church is not even for saints. The Church is “The House of God” --- in other words, “The House FOR God”. That which is “of God” is most certainly “for God”, all other things are secondary. Firstly, The Church is for God. Secondly, it is for God’s people. The Church is not for the salvation of sinners but the perseverance of Priestly ministry toward God; and they, the saints, are beneficiaries of God’s presence which is all of their salvation first, last, and in between! The Church is not a ministry to unconverted men, no! It is a ministry to God Almighty performed by saintly men! Many desire to meet with God on Sunday but they come to Him in un-receivable conditions and profane presuppositions, every man and his neighbor living their brand of “Christianity” with sacrilegious and pagan motivations! Christianity used to be a GOD-centered religion; now it is man-centered. The House of God used to be revered for its holiness unto God; now it’s offended and disrespected God has left the building. The God of the Bible will not become a commonality among sinners as is commonplace today, be sure of that! The God of the Bible and the biblical Christ are evidently absent from the congregations of Christianity, and why? Speaking on this wise, Isaiah the prophet said, “Thou [God] **meetest him** that rejoiceth and worketh righteousness, those that remember Thee **in Thy ways**” (Isaiah 64:5). Because we have not known “God’s ways” we have become delinquent to the title, “God’s people”. By negligence, by transgression, we have become “an unclean thing” (Isa. 64:6, 2 Cor. 6:17) in the sight of God. The word of the LORD teaches us, “because when I called, ye did not answer; when I spake, ye did not hear; but did evil before mine eyes, and did choose that wherein I delighted not” (Isa. 65:12). We, alongside our “teachers” (2 Tim. 4:3), “have put no **difference** between the holy and profane, neither have they shewed **difference** between the unclean and the clean...,” therefore God says, “I am profaned among them” (Ezek. 22:26).

“But ye are a chosen generation, **a royal Priesthood**, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of him who hath called you out of darkness into his marvellous light: Which in time past were not a people, but are now the people of God: which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.” - 1 Peter 2:9-10

“Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through sanctification of the Spirit, unto obedience and **sprinkling of the blood of Jesus Christ**: Grace unto you, and peace, be multiplied.” - 1 Peter 1:2

“And having **An High Priest** over **the house of God**; Let us **draw near** with a true heart in full assurance of faith, **having our hearts sprinkled** from an evil conscience, and our **bodies washed with pure water**. Let us hold fast the profession of our faith without wavering; (for he is faithful that promised;)” - Hebrews 10:21-23

The NT believers have become “a royal Priesthood” in Christ, and what are their *Priestly garments*? Or do you, to your destruction (1 Cor. 3:17), allow Priests to attend the House of God with no “linen garment” (Lev. 6:10-11)? My reader, “the fine linen is the righteousness of the saints” (Rev. 19:8), imputed and imparted through Christ! The local NT House of God will literally cease to exist if the Priesthood that attends it has “defiled their garments” (Rev. 3:4). Christ is our “Living Way” (Heb. 10:20), our “High Priest” (Heb. 10:21), and we, born from Him (Heb. 2:13, Rom. 8:29, Ex. 28:1), are employed in His everlasting order; the order of Melchizedek (Ps. 110:4, Heb. 7:3). He is our “Lively Hope” (1 Pet. 1:3) and Linen Garments, yea, for as much as He is our righteousness - “and if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but **the Spirit is life because of righteousness**” (Rom. 8:10)! New Testament Priests, have you attended to the “putting on” and “putting off” regulations of the NT House of God? Do you have a “death-penalty awareness” that, if you enter the House of God without being properly arrayed in the Divinely prescribed *Priestly garments* – you will DIE?

“But **put ye on the Lord Jesus Christ**, and make not provision for the flesh, to fulfill the lusts thereof” – Rom. 13:14

“As many as have been baptized into Christ have **put on Christ**” (Gal. 3:27)! My reader, Christ is our *Priestly garment* which we must “put on”. He is The Garment of our Priestly acceptance? He is our ceremonial preparation and perfection, once and forever to its completion (Col. 2:10), if indeed we “continue in the faith grounded and settled...not moved away from the hope of the gospel” (Col. 1:23). Practically, experientially, and evidently, the life of the believer

will be Priest-like in appearance. By this I mean, in the NT reality of what Priests have become: according to Ephesians 4:22-24, to “**put off**” the “old man” results in a “putting away” of: lying, anger, stealing, corrupt communication, bitterness, wrath, clamor, evil speaking, malice, and unforgiveness (see Eph. 4:22-32); according to Ephesians 4:22-24, to “**put on** the new man” results in a renewal of the entire-man, in thought, word, and deed, because the new man is “created in righteousness and true holiness”, and thus the man speaks the truth, works hard, gives to the needy, and with edifying speech, is kind, tenderhearted, and forgiving (see Eph. 4:22-32); according to Colossians 3:9-10, to “**put off** the old man” results in the putting off of: anger, wrath, malice, blasphemy, filthy communication, fornication, uncleanness, inordinate affection, evil concupiscence, covetousness, and idolatry (see Col. 3:5-17); according to Colossians 3:9-10, to “**put on** the new man” results in a renewal of the entire-man, in thought, word, and deed, because the new man is “the image of Him that created Him”, which means that “Christ is all, and in all”, therefore the man is merciful, kind, humble, meek, longsuffering, forbearing, forgiving, charitable, peaceful, thankful, and because he is of a continual mind to meditate on wisdom in his own personal time, he zealously pursues opportunity to teach and sing to others (see Col. 3:5-17)! Let The Code of the Priesthood be understood by all! Those are arrayed in Christ, these are Priests! And this Christ is, by the specification of the former passages of scripture, their *Priestly Garment of Righteousness* in which they are emboldened to drawn near to, attend, and minister within the New Testament House of God!

My reader, there is no other purpose for which Christians should enter within the House of God, but that they are ministering to God! And what is our ministration? We, the Priests, take up censer and incense to perfume the Presence of God with Spirit-filled prayers (1 Tim. 2:1-8, Eph. 6:18-20, Jude 20-21). The Priests maintain a continual attendance to and ministration within the House of God **firstly**, to offer themselves as sacrifices to God (Rom. 12:1-2, Gal. 2:20, 1 Cor. 15:31), and when the personal perfection (Lev. 22:20-23) of each individual Priests sacrifice is accepted by God, then we, **secondarily**, as a whole Church, are offered up together as **one sacrifice** to God (Rom. 15:15-19, Php. 2:17-18, 1 Cor. 10:16-17) – and let the reader take note that, according to scripture, the personal and corporate sacrifice to God must be “holy”, “acceptable”, “perfect”, “without blemish”, and “sanctified” in a New Testament sense of what these ceremonial qualifications mean. Furthermore, extending into another vein of typological application: The Priests, who “minister about holy things”, do “live of the things of the Temple” (1 Cor. 9:13). Yes, “and they which wait at the altar are partakers with the altar” (1 Cor. 9:13). “We have an altar, whereof they [all others] have no right to eat”, because we “serve the Tabernacle” (Heb. 13:10). Yes, my reader, “Christ our Passover is sacrificed for us” (1 Cor. 5:7), therefore from this altar we do “eat the flesh of the Son of Man and drink His blood” (Jn. 6:53, Matt. 26:26-29), and by interpretation Christ said, “it is the Spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: **the words** that I speak unto you, they are **Spirit**, and they are **Life**” (Jn. 6:63)! The holy altar which the New Testament Priesthood does continually attend to and eats from is the altar which bears upon it the broken body and shed blood of the Lord Jesus, and we eat from it and obtain Life (Ezek. 42:13-14), which means by interpretation, we hear the preaching of the Word of God and we eat it (1 Cor. 1:21, Rom. 10:14, Col. 1:28-29, Eph. 4:11-12, 5:26, Ezek. 2:8-3:4), for the “words” that Christ speaks are “spirit” and “life” (Jn. 6:63, 2 Cor. 5:18-20, 1 Pet. 4:11, 1 Thess. 4:8, Jn. 13:20, Lk. 10:16, Matt. 10:40, 1 Jn. 4:5-6), they are “the words of eternal life” (Jn. 6:68), thus whosoever hears these words and believes in them has eternal life (Jn. 6:64)!

It is not that we are seeking a carnal House or physical habitation to perform these Priestly duties. No, our gathering together IS our House. Our gathering together as true, regenerated, God-ordained Priests IS our House, Temple, and Habitation, *wherever it is* (Matt. 18:20, 2 Cor. 6:14-7:1). Even so, my reader, the Lord – Himself – must become “thy habitation” (Ps. 91:9-10). The hour was coming, which now is, when the people of God no longer worship at a certain place, a certain “mountain”, nor “at Jerusalem” (Jn. 4:21), but the Man Jesus Christ, “He shall be for a Sanctuary” (Isa. 8:14). He said again, “yet will I be to them as a little Sanctuary” (Ezek. 11:16)...and how? Jesus Christ has become “the chief corner stone” (Eph. 2:20) for the New Testament Sanctuary, and those persons who assemble together within this “Spiritual House” are the “holy Priesthood”, who also are “as lively stones” “framed together” (see Eph. 2:19-22, 1 Pet. 2:4-5, Ps. 118:19-24, Isa. 8:13-22). Therefore the New Testament Priesthood attends to and ministers within the House of God, which is, spiritually and literally, “the assembling of ourselves together” (Heb. 10:25, Matt. 18:20), and when we gather together we are coming to the Lord who said, “I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people” (2 Cor. 6:16). Therefore in this context it is written to the New Testament Priesthood: “To

whom coming, as unto a Living Stone, disallowed indeed of men, but chosen of God, and precious, ye also, as lively stones, are built up a Spiritual House, an Holy Priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ” (1 Pet. 2:4-5). Unto Christ they come, for He is among them, and when gathered together they do “offer the sacrifice of praise to God continually, that is, the fruit of our lips giving thanks to His name. But to do good and to communicate forget not: for with such sacrifices God is well pleased” (Heb. 13:15-16). Yes! Here they “worship the LORD in the beauty of holiness” (Ps. 29:2, 96:9), but who are all these other people who have invaded the ministry of God’s holy Priesthood? Who are all these people who are, “in word or deed”, not “in the Name of the Lord Jesus” (Col. 3:14-17), and yet, they are singing psalms and hymns? Alas, they are singing, but they are not “spiritual songs”, for they are not sung “with grace in [their] hearts to the Lord” (Col. 4:14-17)! Who are all these who have invaded the Priesthood to speak “psalms and hymns”, but they are not “spiritual songs” (Eph. 5:19-20)? Who are these persons that are giving “thanks always for all things unto God and the Father”, but they are not “in the Name of our Lord Jesus Christ” (Eph. 5:19-20)? They are offering sacrifices, yes...but with their sacrifices God is not well pleased! Their sacrifices are unacceptable because they are not “spiritual sacrifices” (1 Pet. 2:4-5)! They are in the assembly of the Priesthood, yes, but they are defiling the “Spiritual House”...and why? They, “having not the Spirit” (Jude 19), are unspiritual and unholy, therefore they are disqualified for any Priestly service to God and man – their presence is an invasion into the “Holy Priesthood” (1 Peter 2:4-5)! They have taken up censer and burnt incense, yes, but the odor of their prayers are foul, unholy, and unacceptable to God! My reader, this is because they are not saints! Acceptable incense is offered by the “holy Priesthood” alone because they are the persons who pray in the Name and Person of Jesus Christ, “the prayers of saints” (Rev. 5:8)! It is written of old, “Even **them** will I bring to **My Holy Mountain**, and make them joyful in **My House of Prayer**: their **burnt offerings** and **their sacrifices** shall be **accepted** upon Mine altar; for **Mine House** shall be called an **House of Prayer** for *all people*” (Isaiah 56:7). Yes, foreshadowing this great climax of the ages it was written, “Let my prayer be set forth before thee as **incense**; and the lifting up of my hands as **the evening sacrifice**” (Psalms 141:2). Hallelujah! “And **the smoke of the incense**, which came with **the prayers of the saints**, ascended up before God out of the angel’s hand” (Rev. 8:4)! Amen! Thus “it is written, My House shall be called the House of Prayer” (Matt. 21:13)! But who are all these unregenerate persons, these “strangers”, these persons who are “without God in the world” (Eph. 2:12-13)...yet they have come “nigh” to “the Household of God” to offer incense (Eph. 2:14-19)! They have boldly drawn near (Heb. 10:22, Titus 3:5), but without ceremonial qualification! They have boldly drawn near as if they have “access by one Spirit unto the Father” (Eph. 2:18), but they are yet, even still, without the Spirit of God, therefore they are still “strangers and foreigners” (Eph. 2:18-19). They are not “fellowcitizens with the saints, and of the Household of God”, namely because they are not saints (Eph. 2:19)! I say again, who are these strangers who have invaded the house of God, who have offered “strange fire” (Lev. 10:1-2)? Alas, they are strong-willed, high-handed sinners, like Uzziah, lifting themselves up beyond their measure, “for he transgressed against the LORD his God and went into the Temple of the LORD to burn incense upon the altar of incense” (2 Chron. 26:16). Even so, “It appertaineth not unto thee, [oh unregenerate or degenerate man], to burn incense unto the LORD, but to the Priests the sons of [Christ], that are consecrated to burn incense: GO OUT of the Sanctuary; for thou hast trespassed; neither shall it be for thine honour from the LORD God” (2 Chron. 26:18)! Oh unregenerate or degenerate man, will you listen to me, lest it happen to you what happened to Uzziah when he, being reproved, was struck with leprosy in the forehead (2 Chron. 26:16-21)! As Uzziah was opposed by the fourscore Priests, even so I oppose you, oh man! Hear me, the Priesthood does not belong to you! Will you hear me? Or will you become “utterly unclean” like Uzziah with a plague in your head? Think of it, everlastingly rending your clothes and crying aloud – “U-N-C-L-E-A-N, U-N-C-L-E-A-N” (Lev. 13:43-46) – and like Uzziah you are, irreversibly till death, “**cut off from the House of the LORD**” (2 Chron. 26:21)! Before continuing my reader, please pause and read Numbers chapters 16 & 17 very carefully.

“**The censers of these sinners** against their own souls” – Numbers 16:38

In the days of Moses and Aaron certain men invaded into the Aaronic Priesthood, and it was written, “there came out a fire from the LORD, and consumed the two hundred and fifty men **that offered incense**” (Num. 16:35). These were those of the congregation that **offered incense** because they wanted to be a part of the Priesthood. What was their crime? It is the shadow of the NT crime which is flagrant and awful, committed every Sunday, because unregenerate or backslidden men attend and minister within the Church of God, performing Christian services which are in New

Testament reality: Priestly sacrifices (Heb. 13:15-16, Php. 2:17, 1 Peter 2:5) and incense offerings (Rev. 5:8, 8:3-4). God says to the unregenerate or backslidden Church goers, “seek ye the Priesthood also” (Numbers 16:10)? Incense of the Priests was an OT institution (Exodus 30:7-9, 34-38, Lev. 16:11-13) which has become a NT Christian reality. It is spiritual sacrifices which only “spiritual men” (1 Cor. 2) can accomplish, as it is written in 1 Peter 2:5. Even as David prayed “Let my prayer be set forth before Thee as incense; and the lifting up of my hands as the evening sacrifice” (Psalm 141:2). These are the prayers of the righteous and the “holy hands” of the saints (1 Tim. 2:8). As for the wicked unregenerate, they do not have “broken and a contrite heart” (Ps. 51:17). “O Lord, open thou my lips; and my mouth shall shew forth Thy praise. For Thou desirest not sacrifice; else would I give it: Thou delightest not in burnt offering. The sacrifices of God are a broken spirit: a broken and a contrite heart, O God, Thou wilt not despise” (Psalm 51:15-17). Therefore, “the sacrifice of the wicked is an abomination to the LORD: but the prayer of the upright is His delight” (Prov. 15:8). The sacrifice of the unregenerate, wicked, or backslidden professing Christian is an abomination to the Lord “forasmuch as this people draw near Me with their mouth, and with their lips do honour me, but have removed their heart far from Me, and their fear toward Me is taught by the precept of men” (Isaiah 29:13). “The LORD is far from the wicked: but He heareth the prayer of the righteous” (Prov. 15:29), and “we have an altar, whereof [the world has] no right to eat which serve the Tabernacle” (Heb. 13:10).

The Church of God is “called the house of prayer,” but “he that turneth his ear from hearing the Law, even his prayer shall be abomination” (Prov. 28:9). Christians are they which are “the called” of God, not as these men in Numbers 16. Christians are the saints of God, the holy ones, “having every one of them harps, and golden vials full of odours, which are the prayers of saints” (Spoken of the elders in heaven, but applicable for NT Priests, Rev. 5:8). In a sense we do offer “much incense” to the angel of heaven, “that he should offer it with the prayers of all saints upon the golden altar which was before the throne. And the smoke of the incense, which came with the prayers of the saints, ascended up before God out of the angel’s hand” (Rev. 8:3-4). These men of Numbers 16 invaded the Priesthood that was not theirs, offered an abominable incense to God, even as Nadab and Abihu who offered “strange fire” before the Lord and were consumed by fire (Lev. 10:1-4). God delighted in the incense offered by Aaron (Num. 16:45-49), but He consumed all others who offered an abominable, inordinate, strange incense. Unregenerate professing Christians, like Korah and all his company, God says to you: “ye take too much upon you” (Num. 16:7). Learn the lesson now, and don’t test God, you must fear God and know that “the man whom the LORD doth choose, he shall be holy” and all others will be consumed for their usurpation of God-ordained Priestly services, incense offerings, and sacrifices (Num. 16:7).

My reader, we live in an hour when the Lord threatens all evil, defiled congregations saying: “separate yourselves from among this congregation, that I may consume them in a moment” (Num. 16:21). Now is the hour of the gospel call! It announces that God will receive us - **but we must come out!** The NT call to “come out from among them” (2 Cor. 6:17) is spoken with the same urgency as the calling of old, for God is ready to “consume them in a moment” that are without (Num. 16:21). “And he spake unto the congregation, saying, **Depart, I pray you, from the tents of these wicked men, and touch nothing of theirs, lest ye be consumed in all their sins.**” Yes, my reader, because “them that are without God judgeth” (1 Cor. 5:13), “wherefore put away from among yourselves that wicked person” (1 Cor. 5). “SO THEY GAT UP from the tabernacle of Korah, Dathan, and Abiram, on every side: and Dathan and Abiram came out, and stood in the door of their tents, and their wives, and their sons, and their little children.....the ground clave asunder that was under them: and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed them up, and their houses, and all the men that appertained unto Korah, and all their goods. They, and all that appertained to them, went down alive into the pit, and the earth closed upon them: and they perished from among the congregation. And all Israel that were round about them fled at the cry of them: for they said, lest the earth swallow us up also. And there came out a fire from the LORD, and consumed the two hundred and fifty men **that offered incense**” (Numbers 16:26-27, 31-35).

God now says “come out from among them” (2 Cor. 6:17) with the same urgency as He said through Moses “depart, I pray you, from the tents of these wicked men” (Num. 16:26)...and why? What urgency? They are all an “unclean thing” (2 Cor. 6:17) and the wrath of God is coming upon them, yea, “the wrath of God abideth on [them]” (Jn. 3:36), therefore God commands us today that we “touch not the unclean thing” just as Moses said to these disqualified and rejected Priests, “touch nothing of theirs” (Num. 16:26)! Unless they come out from among these men and “touch

nothing of theirs”, Moses said they would “be consumed in all their sins” (Note: uncleanness, like leaven, spreads its defiling touch whithersoever the unclean body goes, therefore it is written “a little leaven leaveneth the whole lump” -1 Cor. 5:6, Gal. 5:9)! These worldlings, these Church-intruders, these Priesthood-invaders -- remember what consuming fire is determined for them! “The day of the Lord will come as a thief in the night; in the which the heavens shall pass away with a great noise, and the elements shall melt with fervent heat, the earth also and the works that are therein shall be burned up” (2 Peter 3:10). Remember how of old, “there came out a fire from the LORD” (Num. 16:35), and remember how now, just ahead, what consuming fire shall quickly come upon them, and that without remedy (Num. 16:35)! My reader, seeing that the flaming and annihilating wrath of God is falling upon all flesh, the world, and worldlings, let us respond therefore to the gospel call, “come out from among them” (2 Cor. 6:17), and let us assemble acceptably before God! “Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, **what manner of persons** ought ye to be **in all holy conversation and godliness**” (2 Peter 3:10-11)!? Why was Numbers 16-17 written? “Now all these things happened unto them for ensamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come” (1 Cor. 10:11). Therefore let it be understood by us that these things were written “to be a memorial unto the children of Israel, that no stranger, which is not of the seed of [Christ], **come near to offer incense before the LORD**; that he be not as Korah, and as his company: as the LORD said to him by the hand of Moses” (Num. 16:40)!

“And I heard another voice from Heaven, saying, **COME OUT of HER**, My people, **that ye be not partakers of Her sins**, and **that ye receive not of Her plagues**.” – Revelation 18:4